

## Power of FLT

If You Got the Power of Flight, Invisibility, and Teleportation, What Would You Do?

Sora wo Tobu Nouryoku to Toumei ni Naru Nouryoku to Shunkan Idou Suru Nouryouku wo Morattara Nani wo Shimasu ka?

空を飛ぶ能力と透明になる能力と瞬間移動する能力を貰ったらなにをしますか？

Author : Tanabeyaki - <http://xmypage.syosetu.com/x5631j/>

### Synopsis :

Obtaining the power of flight, invisibility, and teleportation—— Kirishima Ren was sent to another world.

It was a world of swords and magic. I was able to survive in the seedy underworld using my supernatural powers.

One day, while stalking..... er I mean, protecting stealthily from the shadows, I ended up raping the princess. While treating my princess as a sex toy, I became involved with cute girls one after the other.

From manipulating a tomboyish witch, to taking care of a troublesome cat girl while entrapping two elf sisters. Little by little, I had reached my hand to the center of the country.

Incidentally, I was able to take hold of the King's weakness and tried to do anything as I pleased. And now, I'm going to invade the love hotel... I mean, the castle.

---

### Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/if-you-got-the-power-of-flight-invisibility-and-teleportation-what-would-you-do/>

Raws :

<http://novel18.syosetu.com/n7708cz/>

Translator :

<http://machineslicedbread.xyz/fit/>



Table of Contents:

# - mild sex

## - Hot sex

Arc 1: Kirishima Ren

Chapter 1: If you would have a supernatural power, which of the three do you want?

Chapter 2: Guilty of being a partner of the Princess ##

## Chapter 3: ESP

Chapter 4: National Idol – Princess Seria Chapter 5: Dark Elf Assistant  
Cathy ##

Chapter 6: Royal Palace's first sneak Chapter 7: Princess Seria's panties  
disappearance case Chapter 8: Unexpected Travel Stopover

# Chapter 9: Princesss Seria Assault Incident

Chapter 10: Crumbling reason #

Chapter 11: Princess Seria's chastity ##

Chapter 12: Princess Seria's first service #

Chapter 13: Princess Seria's cumming game #

Chapter 14: Rampaging Lust ##

Chapter 15: Thus, the shadow began to move

Arc 2: Matifa Lau Ell Pito

Chapter 16: Matifa Prologue

# Chapter 17: Chibi Pharmacist Capo

Chapter 18: Royal Palace's conspiracy plot tour Chapter 19: Seria and her night at the royal castle ##

Chapter 20: The night attack in the royal castle

# Chapter 21: First Slave

Chapter 22: Witch girl Matifa's semen exploiting lesson #

Chapter 23: Witch Girl and Cat Girl 3p ##

Chapter 24: Witch girl and Cat girl 3p part 2 ##

Chapter 25: Girl's promise Chapter 26: Tiny breasts vs Tiny breasts

Chapter 27: Lululie's massage #

Chapter 28: Princess Seria's Solo play #

Chapter 29: Princess Seria becomes a bit aggressive #

Chapter 30: Princess' excuse ##

Chapter 31: Princess knew

# Chapter 32: The witch knew too

Chapter 33: The witch plays ##

Chapter 34: Withered Day



# Chapter 35: Lululie found out

Chapter 36: Morning Recovery ##

Chapter 37: Lilith's first time #

Chapter 38: Lilith and Misha 3P ##

Chapter 39: Matifa's betrayal Chapter 40: New Commission Chapter 41: Worry

## Chapter 42: Farewell

Chapter 43: Misha's feelings Chapter 44: Misha's anal experience ##

Chapter 45: vs Matifa – 1

Chapter 46: vs Matifa – 2

Chapter 47: vs Matifa – 3

Chapter 48: The lowermost worst winner #

Chapter 49: Feast ##

# Chapter 50: Matifa Epilogue

Arc 3: Lululie Luluera

Chapter 51: Lululie saw

Chapter 52: Nursing

# Chapter 53: Meeting

Chapter 1: If you would have a supernatural power, which of the three do you want?

If you would have a supernatural power, which of the three do you want?

1. The ability to fly in the sky
2. To become an invisible man

### **3. Teleportation Ability**

Please remember the ability you wished for. The journey you wished for will begin.



On my way back from school, I was alone in the bus stop, looking at the reception of my smartphone

It was a spam from unknown sender who drifted in SNS

No, I'm not sure if it's a spam.

It was an message which is sent by an unknown account who claims to be God, It says that I should choose one out of the three supernatural powers. I can't find any click and spread message in here.

Did they forget to write it? If so, then this is a foolish subject. They probably feel nostalgia lapses, I'm sure that the sender who called himself God is just a middle aged man who's not used to SNS He probably sent this to make acquaintance with me. Is it our bald father?

I don't understand their purpose, but I recalled that I'm free. I intend to

trick the old man on the other side of the screen.

I imagined it casually. Me doing it.

I imagine me flying in the sky, becoming invisible, and teleporting.

If you have this ability in Japan, it would be a lot of problem. It would be good in another world.

If anything, how about fantasy world? Some swords and magic world just like in anime and games.

But if that's the case, won't this ability be inadequate?

I don't understand what kind of danger is there. I might be attacked by a ferocious monster or a stupidly strong human. However, I'm just a high school student who can't fight such dangerous people. There's the option of running away by teleportation.

However, I don't want that running away life.

To begin with, these three are not suitable for fighting. Assuming I have all of them I'm still uneasy. I want a stronger cheat.

I want to fly in the sky, be invisible, and teleport. If I can do that— I can do erotic things too.

I would peep in a cute girl's bathroom, sneak in to her bed and rape her, then escape using teleportation the moment I'm caught. It's perfect. It's Perfect. That's right. Let's do that. I will throw away my comfortable life in Japan, and go to the fantastic other world filled with pure beautiful girls to rape.

「N? What's this?」

The moment I thought of that, I, Kirishima Ren was wrapped in Light, and was sent to Other World

## Chapter 2: Guilty of being a partner of the Princess ##

「Aa...Naa...N...yaa...aaa!」

Along with the sound of the rain on the roof, there was also the sound of meat banging and a lewd voice of a woman echoed.

I did an irreversible thing just now

I'm naked on my lower body, and I'm poking this country's first princess Seria on her back by force.

That's right, It was rape.

My angry and brutal penis is forcing itself on the small woman's vaginal hole, I'm attacking her to my heart's content.

「Nn! Ahn! aa...aaaahn」

It seems that Seria is desperately trying to endure, but her voice is timing my thrusts on her inside Furthermore, her vaginal hole is tightening, it brings a pleasant stimulation on my cock.

Seria's vaginal hole is first class. Her small hole tightens firmly, it's stick fast and doesn't want to separate. Just putting it in, countless folds entangle, trying to squeeze out my semen.

「Haa,haa」

Enduring the boiling urge to ejaculate, I raise the pace of the piston.

My penis thrusts to the root, I roughly push up her uterus.

「Aah! There, don't. Aahn! Stop...Nnnn!

Seria felt it deeper inside and reacted. A faint light causes her silver hair to shine as she shakes her head in refusal.

Despite ejaculating twice already, the figure of her disliking it still arouses me. It's wonderful (TN: SUBARASHII!)

「Ah...It got bigger again...」

It's worth bullying if they resist. My son is suddenly showing motivation. Then, I have no choice but do my best too.

I extend my hand on her small clitoris and stimulated it. At the same time, my left hand is rubbing her big breast in spite of her age.

「Naaaa, There, don't tease it! I'm cumming again! Cumming! Cumming!」

She's completely drunk on it, I also don't know how many times Seria had climaxed today.

「Cumiiiiing!」

The moment I pinched her nipple and clitoris, Seria bent her back on a grand scale and reached climax *bikun bikun* her body was convulsing, and her vagina was tightening my cock.

I'm also about to reach my limit. Not minding Seria who reached climax, I continued my piston.



「Aaaah, wait. I say, I'm telling you! Stop! Please! Stop! My head is going crazy!」

Seria's body convulsed continuously after she came back from her climax

I surround my arm on Seria's chest and waist, then hold her upper body from behind. When I brought my face close to her nape, Seria faced me and there were tears on her eyes.

「Nmu!!」

I stole her lip away immediately, then invaded her mouth with my tongue. Saliva was poured, and the tongues coil around by force. I violated Seria's mouth without her resisting.

I hammer my waist on that posture. I've already reached my limit.

I strongly pushed my cock in and held both of her hands to restraint.

「I'll cum inside your vagina!」

「Don't! Inside is no good!」

I thrust my penis into the depths of her vagina and *Splurt Splurt* ejaculated forcefully I don't know how many times I ejaculated inside the beautiful princess' deepest part— I forced to cum inside her womb.

「Aaaaaaaa!!! It's coming again! Inside! Your hot stuff!」

*Doku Doku* it pulsed repeatedly, Seria herself can't believe the amount

that has been poured inside her womb. I put it out a little after I ejaculated, then I pinned down the body of the prince that was convulsing desperately.

「Aaah...again, you let it out again...」

Seria who's relaxing by leaning her body muttered. Did she finally give up resisting at last from the continuous ejaculating on her waist?

I pulled out my penis and hugged her from the back, I confirmed that Seria's body was dropped on the bed.

Her beautiful silver hair extends to her waist, having a sweet looking blue pupil is the maiden of the Rasuhairu Kingdom Her age isn't 14 years old yet. Her petite figure reaches 150 cm, but her boobs are huge, it doesn't fit her age. (TN: Ginpatsu Kyonyuu petite) Her elegant small pointed nipple self asserts her.

「Ahn」

Her breasts are sensitive, and whenever I massage it, soft elasticity and a sweet voice is returned. It's the breast I want to rub forever.

My hand extended to her bottom, but her ass isn't that big.

White and red body fluid dripped from her small pussy.

Of course, it was my sperm and Seria's love nectar, mixed with the proof that she was a virgin.

「Nnn~」

It overflowed sideways when I poked my finger in. Her vagina's hole is so small that you won't my penis was inside that up until now. I just put a finger in, and it's tightening already.

「Uhm, please...let me go already. I can't move anymore」

Seria pleads me to stop with shiny tears on her eyes. But, that only brings the opposite effect. I'm a human that continues after if I'm told to stop.

This girl hits the bulls-eye. My penis who just calmed down regained its spirit once again.

「Ah...It got big again」

Seria faced down as she noticed it poking her ass. Are you telling me to violate you more?

I took a seat and changed Seria's position to face me. Seria really lost her power as she doesn't resist at all.

When I carried her legs, her well shaped breasts shook greatly

「Please. Please stop this! I'll be pregnant with with your child. Really, please don't」

I ignored her words, and I rubbed Seria's belly with our body fluids using my penis. You like your clitoris to be included? Your body trembles slightly.

「Having a child doesn't sound bad at all. Another round!」

「Wai—Yaaaaaaaaaaaaa!」

I grasped the ass of the reluctant Seria, I adjusted it's location then my glans expands her pussy. *Zuru* I inserted it up to the base.

Though I just raped her a while ago, the tightness of Seria's vagina didn't change much

「Aaaaaa, again, you put it innnnn...」

Unable to withstand the stimulation, Seria embraced my back tightly. It's seems it was an unconscious behavior.

Her soft breasts are being pressed against me.

Seria shakes slowly while I feel the peasant elasticity.

A different gentle pleasure dominates my brain. Though I'm raping her, it's strangely calming.

That's bad. I have thought carelessly.

Why have I turned this way?

## Chapter 3: ESP

That time, I received a strange message that made me think of other world harem, when I noticed I was thrown of to a totally unfamiliar place.

I was just checking my smartphone on the bus station while I'm on my way home, my surroundings turned to a foreign style city that's seen on games. It's a plaza in some respects, where stalls sell food and accessories, a lot of people are going back and forth.

The people going back and forth is filled with people with beast ears, or growing scales, this feels like a strange place. There's even a lizard walking with two legs, no matter how you look at it, they're not humans but mixed creature.

「What's this...? Just what the hell happened?」

When I checked my smartphone, a no signal symbol can be seen on the upper right, It's still displaying the SNS message on the center. The change in the last sentence caught my attention.

『You'll be starting your journey on the world you desired. 』

Could it be that I really travelled?

——That's the only answer I can think of

It's too realistic to be a dream, though I've heard about virtual reality, it's still an empty dream with our current technology

「Just what the hell should I do?」

The method to return home is unknown. If I want to continue living here, I need to secure money for food, clothing and shelter. I don't have a choice but to work to get money. There's the other option of receiving charity or stealing.

I don't even know if what I mentioned earlier goes along with the common practice. What can I, who's an ordinary high school student do?

I looked at at the smartphone once again dumbfounded

It was written in the message of the self proclaimed that I have to choose between the ability to fly, to be invisible, or to teleport. In the end, I never picked any, If this is true, then which one I should be able to use?

Let me try it, I should be able to know this considering my future.

Because the plaza is an open place, I would stand out, thus I came to a back alley that doesn't have people.

I confirmed that there was no person around, then I imagined myself flying. I imagined jumping lightly, then staying on the air.

「Ooo, I really floated」

It succeeded easily. It's around 10 cm, but I was certainly flying.

It feels like I'm mysteriously floating in water. Even if I move my hands, I don't advance from behind. Somehow, It seems like I would be blown away if the wind blows.

I imagined myself to continue flying to the sky. Then, my body was lifted slowly. I'm rising softly like a soap bubble.

Oooh~ While I was impressed looking at the far ground, my arm hit the roof.

That moment, my body feel like it recalled gravity.

「It hurts...」

I managed to land on my foot just in time, but the impact made my whole body numb. Fortunately, I don't have any fracture.

The ability seems to be removed by having the roof touched. There must be a conditions for using this. I'm doubting that the condition is I shouldn't touch the ground. I have no choice but to test it multiple times.

「Another round!」

When my feet recovered, I kicked the ground and flew once again. This time, I touched the wall after floating a short distance. I fell.

Next, I picked up a stick and threw it up. I flew and caught it, but I didn't fall. I touched the wall with the stick. I fell.

So the condition is I mustn't touch the ground directly or Indirectly? But there's no problem if it's in the air. Water...would it be fine?

When I was flying around the city, I pay attention not to touch buildings, but I fell suddenly.

I want to test it out a bit more, but I have to test the other abilities.

「Next is the invisibility. Can I do it?」

Since it was written on the message, there should only be one. But, I did

imagine having the three. If I have it then I can use it, I imagined myself becoming invisible.

「Ooh, I'm transparent」

I can use it easily too. Furthermore, it's not just my body, my clothes and my bag are transparent too. It's convenient because I don't need to be naked.

「But, this makes me uneasy...」

I totally can't feel my body at all. I became one with the air, it feels ambiguous. It seems to be difficult to maintain it all the time.

I released the ability once. Then, my body appeared from nothing, and I got a slight headache.

「Kuh, It's necessary to practice this」

I mainly need to do mental training.

Now then, the last would be the teleportation. This is the most convenient but also the most dangerous ability. Attention is required if you don't want to be inside a stone. (TN: DORARARARARARARA)

I must determine the destination carefully. First, let's test on short distance. I'd like a wide space so I won't be buried in stuff.

I found a vacated land immediately when I searched for a good place. I checked that there's no one who can see, then imagined myself to teleport on the middle of the vacant land.



「Teleport!」

I thought my vision blurred for a moment, but on the next moment, I found myself standing in the middle of the land. This is a success to .

「This is somehow too smooth...」

I continued twice, then thrice continuously while increasing the distance, it was successful without any problems. Then, on the fourth time, I said teleportation just like before, but nothing happened.

That was strange, but when I tried to return on the distance like the first time, but it failed again.

This seems to have a limit on the frequency. Unlimited teleportation seems to be too far as a cheat. The problem is how long it would be unavailable, but I somehow felt that it would be around a few days.

Talking about possibilities, it seems to be possible to return if you imagine yourself teleporting back.

But, deep inside, I don't want to go home. It's not logic, but rather I don't have the instinctive urge to go home. I don't even understand why, but I was somehow convinced.

I suddenly became uneasy when I think so. I have to live in this world. If I can't go home. I don't have any acquaintance, I don't know their culture nor custom, I also don't have money or power. I somehow obtained a mysterious power, but it's necessary to practice to master it.

Also, what happened to my former world? Am I spirited away? I wonder if my parents and friends worried. Or, was I not there in the first place?

—It was a question no one answered. Thus, I stopped thinking.

Since people already live here, I should be able to live too, but I still feel uneasy somehow.

Then, while I was deep in my thoughts, before I noticed, people had gathered on the vacant lot.

「Oi, Who are you? What are you doing here?」

A fat man who's physique is bad called me out. He suddenly grabbed my collar like the attitude of a hoodlum.

「I-I was looking for a place where I can think calmly. If I'm in the way, I'll go out.」

It seems that this is a hangout place for the thugs. I'm unlucky today.

I want to run away immediately, but I can't move because I'm gripped with tremendous force. There's something like an aura standing up in front of the hooligan or something. (TN: BE CAREFUL JOTARO!) What's that?

「Is that true? I've never seen your face before, where did you come from, bastard?」

「Where? Even if you ask me that...I'm just an ordinary person that doesn't belong anywhere. That's true. Hey, Can you overlook me?」

This is bad. They speak the same language, but they don't seem to believe me. The hooligan's face was distorted in irritation.

「I've never seen this clothes. The quality seems good...are you some son of a noble? Then give me your money. Leave it like that. Then I'll overlook you」

My money would suddenly be 0 if that happen

However, since I'm being underestimated, I'm troubled. I only have Japanese yen From the beginning, the money from this world I carry is 0  
But to overlook me for free, what a kind hoodlum.

「Got it. I got it already so please release me」

When I said that, I took out my purse from the pocket. Japanese yen has no use here anyway. I might be able to sell it to a dilettante, but I haven't found a random dilettante. I'll give it in exchange for my life here.

I just hand the purse to the hoodlum without checking the contents in particular.

「What's this? An unknown coin. Furthermore, this isn't gold or silver, this coins aren't useable!」

A common in fantasy worlds, they seem to use gold, silver, and copper in this world too.

For people of this world, Japanese Yen is just trash Perhaps the 10 yen ball, which is copper has the most value in this world's standards. They would definitely use the ten thousand bill as substitute for handkerchief.

「I don't have anything other than that. That's because we don't spend

silver nor gold in our country」

「Bastard, are you underestimating me? Then leave all your possessions. I'll forgive you if you do. Do it!」

「Eh, wait, this isn't what we agree...」

The chibi and giants surrounded me in unison. Is this their hobby!?

It's impossible for me to avoid all the hoodlums trying to grab my collar from all directions.

Teleportation— I still can't use it at the moment.

Invisibility has no use since they hold me.

I can't even take off to escape through flight.

I can't run away!!

I didn't have time to resist, the hoodlums already got me. Even if I struggle, I don't have the power.

I got naked in no time and they discarded me on the back alley. But, my butthole is safe. I'm glad. I'm really glad (TN: Don't drop the soap!)

「Don't ever come here kid!」

I was lucky to be freed with just those words. They didn't beat me up.

However, they were curious on the eraser, it troubles me that they took even my pants. (TN: だけどゴムが珍しいとか言ってパンツまで持っていくのはどうかと思う)

They insist I expose my penis. In this situation, far from entering a shop, I can't enter the street like this.

It can't be helped, so let's go to the prison. I hope they have three meals and a nap.

## Chapter 4: National Idol— Princess Seria

Haa...it's the worst.

I still don't know how to live in this world. Even if it has a three meals with a nap, I don't want to go to the jail.

I walked until the hoodlums can't see me, used invisibility, then wandered around the town.

I'm attacked by a sense that I will disappear.

My hand's weigh disappeared,  
My foot disappeared from the earth,  
The head disappeared from my body,  
The beating of my heart disappears

My consciousness is fading immediately. I don't even know where I am.  
Am I alive or dead? I feel like I no longer exist.

Where is this?

Was the school time over?

Did the bus come yet?

When will I arrive at my house?

Huh? Where's my house?

As I absentmindedly stand up, a silver light came into my view.  
A silver light was flickering.

--What's this? Should I go closer?

My scattering consciousness concentrated on the silver. An outline became clearer.

Is this...a human?

Human, probably a girl.

Silver hair...still innocent...a superior Bishoujo!!

I woke up suddenly at the moment

「Kyaa!」

At the same time, the bishoujo was surprised then screamed. Her feet got tangled, and was going to collapse

「Oops, that was dangerous」

I caught her midair. A girl not yet on her fifth grade. There's no way I won't catch her.

My hand casually touched her chest, then rubbed her swelling breast.

Yup, this child is the type that's thinner in clothes. It's considerably big on her age.

This one has a promising future...No, she already has one?

「U-uhm, uhm, Awawawa...」

The bisoujo tries to say something, her face was bright red Her eyes was fixed on one point. It's my free crotch. (TN: reminder that he's still naked)

While I was enjoying the unexpectedly big chest of hers, my crotch was expanding gradually, it was in attack mode. It's around half-size right now.

Yup, What am I doing?

「S-s-s-s-sorry!—guh」

I finally woke up. I released my hand from the silver haired bishoujo, then proceed to kneel on the ground immediately. At the same time, a strong headache attacked me. I was somehow able to keep my consciousness and was able to speak words.

「I didn't mean harm! The thing is, hoodlums stripped me off, I'm at loss, that a while ago...that is, I become engrossed in it...I'm really sorry!!」

I speak an explanation too fast that that doesn't sound as an excuse.

The idea wasn't unified due to my confusion and headache, but when they they thought that I'm a suspicious person and caught, I realized that my life would really end. Even if I get caught, it's possible for me to run with my super powers, but I don't want to be a criminal suddenly.

My top priority is to ask for this girl's forgiveness.



As I rub my forehead on the ground, I heard a voice from above.

「Uhm, I'm also sorry. I was just surprised all of a sudden. You even helped me when I was about to fall down」

Ah, this child is easy.

「No, it's my fault for wandering around like this. You didn't do anything wrong. Please blame me somehow. And if you do, please forgive me!」

「That's, you were troubled because you were attacked right? If so, then you're not bad. Please look up」

What a good child. All of my possessions were stripped off, but I didn't think that she would believe a naked man easily. I even fondled her breasts. I'm worried that this child would be tricked by a bad guy.

「Thank you very much. I'm really sorry for having such an appearance」

While saying so, I looked up and saw the appearance of the girl.

She has blue eyes and sparkling silver hair. Her features still has some innocence, but I'm sure that she will be a beauty if she grew up. She wore a lovely robe, the fabrics from the gap are likely to be expensive— I see some frills or something.

She's certainly a young lady. She might even be called princess by the people.

「You don't have clothes right? I may have women's but please wait and put this on. I will have it prepared」

The girl took of her robe and put it over my shoulders. Then, she run with her expensive dress fluttering.

「...It worked somehow」

It is said that when one door shuts, another opens. It seems like the god that sent me on the other world abandoned me, but my luck wasn't done yet. A bishoujo picked me up from misery, I'm not thrown away!

Still, the headache was terrible. If I'm alone, even if I don't use my ability, my consciousness is fading again.

Is this headache the recoil of the invisibility? My consciousness began to fly, it's quite a dangerous ability.

I sat down while taking the robe to my hand. The warmth of the girl that stayed can be felt, I can feel my body coming back.

Then, I remembered the feel of the breast I massaged earlier. It was certainly filed with firm elasticity. Her size was B, no, it was C. I think that she's still in the middle of growth, just how enjoyable it would be in the future?

Would she continue to grow and become a graceful beautiful woman? I think she didn't want to grow so much, but with that chest, she should give up on the possibility.

As I was imagining her future figure while sniffing her robe, My son was rising up, it regained it's vigor.

I grasped the hem of her robe, then rubbed it on my standing dick. The feeling of the fabric was smooth, and the sweet fragrance tickles my brain. The image of that girl in my arms, breathing rough in agony

floated in my head. And I reached it immediately.

「!!...What am I doing?」

My sanity returned with headache. It's strange, my mental state isn't normal. The proof is the white liquid sticking on the hem of her robe.

「It's bad... This is bad」

First, let's remove the evidence. I rubbed my semen on the edge of the wall. Not all of the sperm came off, what should I do?

The girl came back with a big cloth.

「I'm sorry, I was late because I didn't know your size. Please wear this」

「T-thanks」

She passed me a gray robe, and I returned her robe in exchange.

The new robe that has been passed to me was of the perfect size that my whole body was hidden.

When I put it on, the girl's eyes were sparkling, but I decided to not notice for her honor. My cheeks dyed red on her secret service. Are you in the age of curiosity?

The girl put on her robe too. She touched and noticed the dirt on the hem, but she ignored it. I'm relieved.

「You're okay for the time being. Then, could you tell me what happened

in detail?」

「Err, Okay. From where should I start talking...?」

From where should I really start talking? Should I start from coming to an unknown world? I think I should keep silent about my abilities. I don't remember the location of the hoodlum, I can't tell her much. Probably. this is the most important.

「You can start anywhere you like. If you're in trouble, I will help you!」

For some reason, it seems that I've fired up her sense of justice. It's as if she picked up a kitten that has been abandoned. Though, it's a naked male high school student.

I don't want to be spoiled so much, but let's rely on her. After all, I'm just an ordinary flasher.

「First, my name is...」

After that, I spoke what happened in detail. However, I hid about my ability. Since this is a trump card, I can't talk about it carelessly.

The girl was nodding as she listens on my story with great interest.

「Other world is it?... That's the first time I've heard of it. But, certainly I can't feel any magical power from you...it's most likely」

「Magical power? There's magic here?」

「Yes, it's magic. You never saw it before?」

Saying so, the girl turned her palm to top. Then, a silver colored aura

went to her palm, then a fire ball was born from nothingness.

「Oh, seriously?...」(TN: he said Oh in romanji)

「Seriously」

It seems that I've really come to a swords and magic fantasy world.

「However, I can't feel any magical power from you, you probably can't use it. That's why I was interested...」

「Eh? What do you mean?」

「That's—」

To summarize the story of the girl, all of the residents of this world seems to have innate magical power. Strong or weak, there's no one with zero.

However, apparently it seems that I have perfect zero magical power using the girl's sense.

Body can become strong because of magic, I heard that magic is a supernatural phenomenon that can manipulate the mysterious energy.

An otherworlder may believe those immediately, thinking that there's a lot of abnormality everywhere, magic should be likely possible.

However, I'm weak in this world as I have no magic, living would be difficult. It would be strange if I can live for a month.

As expected, I was abandoned by the gods. I guess it was bad to be greedy and ask for the three superpower...

I get depressed when it was proclaimed that I will only have a month to

live, but the girl took my hand and gave me words of encouragement.

「Rest assured. We can address to that」

「Really!? You're really a lifesaver!」

「That's exaggerating. But, I'm glad I'm able to help you」

When I looked up, the girl smiled. She's really happy. I see her smiling broadly.

「That's right, can you tell me your name? I don't know when, but I want to express my gratitude.」

「That reminds me, I didn't tell you yet. I'm the first princess of Rasuhairu Kingdom, Seria. Your words of gratitude is fine already. It's my duty as a royalty to help those who are in trouble」

This was the event when I came in this world three years ago. And, that was my first encounter with princess Seria.



After that, Seria introduced me to a teacher, then I have obtained the way to live in this world through hell training.

I'm hopeless when it comes to magic, but I'm able to oppose to some degree as I forged my physical strength. Then, I polished my three super power, learned various combat techniques, I established my own fighting style.

And now, under my master's guidance, and me performing my super power secretly, I can now live in this world. Other than that, since Humans

with no magic power can't live on the surface of this world, I inevitably went out of sight.

Since I don't have any magic power, it becomes a tremendous handicap.

My body is weaker compared to ordinary people, just a slight incident would injure me, and my body is weak against diseases. In this world, even virus and bacteria are strengthened by magic. (TN: Holy shit, fire attribute ebola!)

Therefore I can't accept any normal work, I'm struggling to find a job.

I can now understand why the hoodlums at that time were gentle with me. He's really a nice guy. To not injure me, he dropped me on a place that's well ordered.

Currently, my work is to sneak in the houses of aristocrats and gather information, Sometimes I take dangerous contracts such as assassination, or raiding a VIP.

During practice I was close to death a lot of times, my daily life is close to death again, my heart that was rough grew rougher.

This world is filled with enemies. There's no trustworthy humans here.

They can say anything with their mouth, but no one knows what they think deep inside.

Because I have half-hearted strange abilities, I can use it to make up for comrades. Since I can use it to kill, there are a lot of those guys.

Whenever I got conscious that I'm receding from normalcy, I pray to return to Japan a lot. However, even if I struggle, the way to return isn't found.

But, there's still one method I haven't tried.

『You can travel the world as you like. 』

That one sentence that was the trigger to come to this world. If I read this coercively, it would read as: if I do as I wish I'll be able to return. The contents of the letter was so forcibly broad in interpretation that there's no definite promise, but I reached out my hand wanting to rely on it.

What I wished that time was to go to different world and violate pure and innocent beauties.

I imagined the wide smile of princess Seria. It's a smile that I can't forget for this three years. She's a one of my few benefactors in this other world, she's truly a realizable person.

She was the oasis on this rough world.

I've come across the city several times before, but it grew even more beautiful and much more refined than before.

She's like an angel that smiles to everybody, roaming around the city wanting to help something.

She often plays with the young children, then helping those handicapped old people and they thank her for it.

The crooks can't reach their hands on princess Seria as she finished the laws in the town. At most, they can't run away if they start a fight.

That girl is the Idol of the town.

I'm also one of her fan. You could say I'm a enthusiastic fan.

I'm willing to throw my life for her. It's cheap as long as I can defend her smile.

If I violate someone like her that smiles like an angel recklessly and mate with her—no, it's different.



「It's no god, me. Aren't you grateful of princess Seria?」

「Is that so? If so, I have the right job」

Someone responded to my soliloquy. This was my work room. Unknown people can't enter.

In other words, the one who answered is someone I permitted to enter.

「Cathy? You have a new job?」

Suddenly, a tall beautiful woman with black hair and black suit gushed out from the shadow. Her brown skin and her sharp ears are the proof that she's a dark elf. A sharp glint in eye can be seen on the darkness.

The visitor were my Ane's apprentice, My senpai in life, and currently my assistant, she's the dark elf Cathy.

## Chapter 5: Dark Elf Assistant Cathy ##

Cathy who appeared in my room nonchalantly, explained the request uninterested.

「This is a personal request from Master to Ren. As for the content. Guard Seria-sama. But, you will protect her from the shadows without anyone knowing」

「Duration and reward?」

「Start as soon as possible, the end is not decided and is ordered separately. Therefore as the reward at piecework payment would be 10 gold coins in advance. It's a special condition」

「Ten gold coins!?!」

With ten gold coins, you can live in a average household comfortably for a year. Assassination requests isn't as prosperous. If this is the advance alone, this is a job that I might probably die. So they're saying that I should play before dying.

「What would you do? Are you going to accept it?」

Cathy picks up a rolled parchment. When I skimmed through it, there were no important points written. That's how great the confidentiality and danger if this work is, at the same time, princess Seria herself is at danger.

「Yeah, tell them I accept」

There's no room for a choice. After signing the parchment and rounding it, I returned it to Cathy. However, Cathy didn't take it.

「Ren, are you really going to accept it? You're going to die you know?」

「I wonder. I might unexpectedly survive using master's influence? Also, it's possible for me to escape」

「In spite of you not running away no matter what... I'd be troubled if you die」

She told me some words she spit out somewhere. Are you worrying at me as your sister's disciple?

Seeing her, Cathy was rubbing her long legs together fidgety.

——What? So it's that?

It seems that Cathy's bad habit came out. I was stupid for expecting that she was worried.

I made a big sigh and looked at Cathy's damp eyes.

「You just want to be bullied right? After all, you don't care what happens to me, you're worried that the one who bullies you might disappear, right? While pretending to worry about me, on the inside you were imagining yourself being violated and you can't endure it anymore. You perverted girl」

As I shower her with rude remarks, Cathy had an ecstatic expression on her face.

「Aaa...yes. More, abuse me more!」

Where had the cool beauty from a while ago gone? Cathy is now clinging on my waist disregarding her appearance. She took my belt immediately.

「You're driven mad by a penis, you Masochist woman. Someone younger than you, even the race is different, and your own pupil, still, you became his assistant just for his penis, you lewd woman. You're lower than livestock you female pig! Don't be slow and serve your master quickly!」

「Oh! I'm just a horny masochist! I'm a female pig that loves Master's penis! Please ravish my pussy with your splendid cock!!」

Crap, that was a bit attractive.

A while ago, I just thought of calming my own delusions of raping princess Seria before I begin my work, but today's Cathy is much more dangerous than I thought. I've come to wonder if that was a dangerous quest in the end

While I was in deep thought, my pants were took off and my penis was exposed. Cathy extends her face on my penis with a dreamy face.

「Great penis-sama. I'll make you energetic」

The delicate fingers of Cathy began to stroke service my rod. The blood gathered in my half erect penis then it gradually raised an angle. Cathy is telling her desires on my dick.

「This grotesque and brutal form is wonderful. The smell is amazing. My

horny pussy is itching. Please let out your sperm quickly. Squirt your sperm and splash it over my face!」

「Cathy, open your mouth.」

Her sloppy work was getting annoying, so I hold down Cathy's head and plunged inside her mouth. Cathy looking joyous opened her charming mouth, then sucks my dark brown dick.

「Move your head, entwine your tongue. Use your throat properly!」

The perverted Cathy was happy on the dom's words. It can't be helped that Cathy can't speak because I'm doing her mouth violently. Actually, it was good even without my order.

With the wet sucking sounds, Cathy frantically sucks the cock. The bold cock was attacking her throat's interior using a big stroke. My penis is wet with great amounts of saliva and pre-cum, the back of my penis was licked over, and the tip is being constricted by the throat. She squeezed her mouth trying to suck like vacuum out of my rod. My hand is moved to my waist, it's fixed firmly, not letting me go.

She seem to be sloppy, I reckon that she would give utmost pleasure constantly with fellatio.

Cathy who threw the word shame isn't going easy. If I got careless, I would cum in no time.

When I turn my eyes down on Cathy while enduring the pleasant sensation, a deep valley was peeping out from her loose neck.

「Show me your useless big breast」

Cathy extend her hand on her dress then tear it away, then it came into view. The breast meat that was forced to squeeze under her shirt found an exit and jumped out forcefully. Her bending big ripe fruit was *burun burun* shaking greatly.

Her beautiful pink nipples was running around under my eyes, you wouldn't think of it as perverted. It's throbbing erect that it was eagerly waiting to be touched. I tried to pinched it with my nail, then Cathy's face sprung up.

「Aaaa! That's amazing!!! More!! More, harder!! Please!!」

「Who said I'll stop? I'll do it more so just move」

I separate my hand from her nipples and forcefully plugged my penis on Cathy's mouth.

The feeling of ejaculation was rising as I move my waist violently.

「Obo! Juba! Jiruru! Gubo!! Jubobobo!! Mashteeer!! Futofuhyahai!!」

Even though I was piercing her throat roughly and disturbing her breathing, Cathy was asking for more. Even if it's painful and unpleasant, for Cathy it's only but pleasure. That's why I move my hips and bang the back of her throat as I like

「Hey, I'll let it out. It's your favorite semen. Receive it with your mouth」

「Gobo!! Yesh!! pleash lhet eet ouut!!!」

Her face seems to be telling me to give her.

Cathy's vacuum strengthened, encouraging me to ejaculate. Besides, my penis was forcibly pulled in her mouth.

「Uoo, Amazing!」

That final push was enough as the stimulation.

While I pulled out my penis, a huge amount of semen was discharged.

Cathy's face is dirtied with the syrupy white liquid. It entangled on her glossy black hair, coated her tanned skin, it's even flowing on the bridge of her nose and her open mouth.

Cathy extended her tongue from her mouth and licked the semen off her face.

「Master's semen stinks and is delicious」

Cathy tastes the semen messily, then swallowed it. She then licked the semen in between her fingers and on her hair.

「I'll clean up great penis-sama」

Cathy stick on my penis once again, then sucked on the remaining semen on the tube. She didn't forget to stimulate the glans with her tongue shrewdly to make it erect once again.

When Cathy separated her mouth, my penis had is completely back to attack mode.

「Master, Please plunge your big penis on this female pig's pussy!! I can't endure it anymore!!」

When I gazed down, a big stain had formed on Cathy's tight pants. You're really a slutty female pig.

「Put your hand on the desk and point your ass on me」

「Yes!」

Cathy put her hand on the desk joyfully and stick out her butt.

I gently took Cathy's pants and her underwear was dragged along.

A ping pussy showed itself under her plump ass.

「Aren't you already wet? You felt so much from the fellatio a while ago?」

I already know even if I didn't ask her, Cathy's pussy was already messy with her love nectar. Her insides had properly ripened too. Rather it was like there was a toy inside.

Cathy doesn't need foreplay. It would be troublesome if I do authentic foreplay.

After all, it's a body that's endlessly desiring pain. Moreover, if her vagina loosen and the pain decreased, it would be the opposite, she would feel it less and we would fall to a vicious cycle. She can't cum normally, she seem to prefer to be hurt herself.

Therefore when it comes to Cathy, it's only limited to thrust it quickly

「Please punish this meat toilet who can't enduuuuuuure!! It's enteriiiiing!!」



Not even replying to Cathy, I inserted my penis on her drooling pussy meat. Cathy's vaginal flesh was sticky and it was wrapping up my penis.

「This is what you wanted right!? Then enjoy this to your hearts content!」

「Aaaaaaa!! This, master's penis!! Penis, it feels good!! This shape!! This hardness!! This heat!! This, this is!!」

*panpan*, I moved my hips violently. I pull out my penis out till the last moment, then struck it to the base quickly after. Cathy moves her waist lewdly to match with my movement. We understand our rhythms. Cathy prefers violent play anyway. That's why I stir up Cathy's pussy roughly, violently.

「Aaaaa, your great penis, is inside me~ It's going wild!! It feels so! Gooooood!!」

Cathy's pussy is my exclusive meat toilet, naturally it remembered the shape completely that when I move it sticks to me and doesn't let go. It's squeezing every drop of semen from my penis.

「Aaaahn~!! Penis!! Ren's penis!! Hiiiiii!!」

I shake the ass of Cathy below me. The feeling of the drilled muscle's elastic and soft wrapped meat ass is good. The shape of her brown ass changes to my hand, it's making me excited. I spread her butt, then looked at the anus that's opening itself and was twitching, it's greedy. I screwed my thumb in without lotion.

「Higiiiiiii! My ass! Please be more violent!!!」

Cathy reacted intensely. She raised her heel and thrusts her ass further, then moved her waist left and right as if asking for it.

「What do you want to do? If you don't tell it clearly I won't know」

「Beat me up!! This female pig's disgraceful ass!! Slap it!! With all your strength」

The unexpected response was surprising, but I'll answer her request. I pulled out my finger, then raised my hand.

「Is this good enough?」

*Paaan* there was a loud bang inside the room.

「Aaaaaaaaaahn!! thhaat!! More!!」

Her vagina shuts tightly as I slap her. The impact goes together with the surge of her vagina, my penis was getting numb from pleasure.

「Look! Another one」

I continued to make more slapping sounds. Every time I slap her my cock is numbing. I felt my sperm welling up inside gradually.

「Hiiiiii!!!! Good!! itsh good!! More More More More!!!!!!」

I continued spanking just like she said, Cathy's ass was gradually discoloring to red. To match it, the more I get violent with Cathy, the more her vagina tightens and it feels good. I'm about to cum soon.

Cathy's play is troublesome but her body is the best. Her plump ass meat is tightening hard, no one else can replicate this eager sexual feeling.

I just inserted it and moved my waist, but I feel that I would cum suddenly. Furthermore, with the beauty like Cathy returns an reaction as I do as I please, all the more I want to do her.

「Ora! I'm about to cum! Where do you want it to be put?」

「Hiiiiin! Inside my vagina!! Inside please!! Pweash splash your semen on this meat toilet's womb!!!!」

We already shared a lot, that's my relationship with Cathy. I will let it out without any mercy nor restrain.

As I near ejaculation, *PanpanPanpan* I hammered my waist with raising speed, I and Cathy reached the limit at once.

「Ahiiii!! A, a, aaaaaaaa!! gumming!! Poke my pussy master!! Hit my ass!! gumming!! cummmiiing!!」

「Kuh, I'll let it out!!」

I hit Cathy's ass with my palm at full power on the final moment. *Paaaan* It was the best slapping sound that echoed today, I then thrust my penis on the innermost of Cathy and ejaculated. *Splurt Splurt* my semen was flowing into Cathy's womb.

「A,a,a,aaaaaaaaaa!!」

Cathy raised her face and screamed. It seems like we both reached it somehow, and *gush* a transparent liquid was flowing out. The workroom was wet with a small pool of water.

「...good~. Now, it was amazingly painful. It was extreme, but pleasant

Cathy spoke like a fool with her face enchanted with her red welling ass. With the exception of her troublesome fetish, this woman is a perfectly good woman.

While I was thinking of that, my withering penis is pulled out.

「Ah, Ren's done?」

「That's the end. We still have work to do」

Unfortunately, Seria's guarding duty is an urgent work. I'd really want to enjoy it to my heart's content, but I should better hurry.

「This might already be our last you know? Even if we enjoy it to our hearts content master won't complain you know?」

Cathy crouches down before me and tempts me while doing a clean-up fellatio. So, I didn't get erect from her cleaning.

「I know. That's why go with me. Work ends after this」

I cut off Cathy's temptations, then put on my pants.

Cathy's face that was filled with desire switched to work face already.

「...That's right. If so, then I have to support you well. ——What should I do?」

Cathy with the assistant appearance was seeing to support.

She's trying to show off even with her breast smeared with semen, as expected from Cathy, the woman with three faces.

First is the professional cool beauty— the adult lady. Second is the reliable elder sister. And the third is a lewd masochistic female pig. The last one ruins the disappointing 226 years old single dark elf.

「First, let's summarize the information until tonight. Then collect information in the town. Since princess Seria frequently goes outside the castle, I should supervise her constantly. Meanwhile, if you see a strange movement in the town, tell me」

「On the proper place isn't it? Roger that. Bless you」

「Be careful too.」

Then, I left the room. I left the cleaning up of the room to Cathy. Even though I'm the one who said 'okay', the one who invited me was Cathy.

## Chapter 6: Royal Palace's first sneak

I went out to the town to look for princess Seria after I prepared my spy equipments.

The town I live in is the imperial capital of Rasuhairu Kingdom. On the northern part, there's the magnificent Royal castle, then on the east and west are the noble district. The noble district is my main workplace.

On the south of the royal castle is the commoner area, which makes up 70% of the population and is surrounded in an outer wall. The farming area is beyond the outer wall, I don't know to what scale it is. It seems that they keep enlarging the cultivation land.

The problem is Princess Seria often sneaks out the castle and goes to the commoner district. Her reason was to help people as royalty. Its words that I want some corrupt noble should follow, Only this time, it's inconvenient.

Anyway, princess Seria's scope of action is wide. She seems to have a quite strong magical power, thus her physical strength is higher than adults. Especially, her leg speed is outstanding, even a trained knight would be too slow.

Sometimes, princess Seria shows up on master's place, unfortunately I was desperately training so I can't meet her. I'm being beaten to pulp everyday, so I'm okay with it.

Anyway, I searched the whole town and I finally found her just when the sun was about to go down.

Her blue eyes and shining silver hair didn't change. She grew a bit

taller, but still lower than the norm. But, her breast had grown splendidly. It's not like Cathy's, but I can see that it's big from the top of the robe. If I didn't do Cathy just a while ago, I might be driven by the urge to push her down.

Princess Seria was bidding farewell on this children in the orphanage she frequently visits.

I invoked invisibility then tried to eavesdrop nearby.

「Sorry. I have to finish a business tomorrow, so I won't be coming for a while. But after I finished my business I will definitely come, so don't worry and please wait for me」

The children reaction were various, some were lonely, tries to not let her go in frustration, or making a tantrum. However, it was certain that everyone likes princess Seria.

I saw the children's facial expressions getting cloudy while princess Seria was making an apologetic face.

Among them, there was a girl with a wide visor replied cheerfully.

「Seria-sama, please send us a lots of souvenirs!」

Her bright voice blows away the gloomy atmosphere. Princess Seria returned a friendly smile naturally.

「Fufu, please wait patiently and expect a lot of it」

The children's faces brightened up when they heard souvenirs. 'I want

this' 'I want that', they were speaking their own wishes. There were children who were asking for cash.

While they laughed at each other, princess Seria began to turn back and walk.

I was interested on the business princess Seria mentioned. Is she going to leave the castle and go somewhere?

But, princess Seria shouldn't be engaging in official business yet.

Even if I dig on my memories, I don't have any idea in particular. Is this what master want me to be cautious of?

I cancelled my invisibility and continued to tail her, nothing happened until we arrived in the castle. Princess Seria entered castle walls from the side gate.

I still hadn't entered the royal castle yet as expected. But, I've grasped some information in their security. This might be impossible for anyone else, but in my case, it's expected that I would be able to intrude.

I was at loss, but for now, I want information. And, that information exists only in the castle.

I readied myself and invoked teleportation

There's a limit in use for teleportation. I'm able to use it up to three times. And it takes 3 days to recover one use.

When I used it once, there's still 2 remaining. After three days, the three uses are recovered. If I used it three times, the remaining will be zero. It recovers one per three days, so it recovers all three in nine days.

Considering I used it twice to go in and out of the castle, there will be



six days where I can only use it once. I can't use it that frequently.

By the way, the distance where I can teleport doesn't matter, but I can't go back to my world as expected.

The castle has a composite barrier of physical and magical barrier. In addition, to protect from intruders it's also covered in detection barrier, they would be warned if someone entered without using normal means.

The barrier seems to be made of high quality, but the shield can do nothing with my teleportation, and since I don't have any magic power, the magical power sensor doesn't respond. My teleportation ability, is basically a different magic that doesn't use magic power, so I don't have to worry about detection.

Other than this, I don't know how many layers of security systems I was stepping on, fortunately, I was able to successfully invade the castle without getting caught.

When I entered, I first checked the movement of the guards. Nobody was approaching this place.

The inside of the castle was dotted with strong magic that they would understand it even if it's away. There's a monster in there. I stopped approaching.

Princess Seria entered the castle through the main entrance. She's surrounded by a large number of guards. I used my superpower so I won't be found out. I tailed princess Seria as I switch my invisibility as I fly and evading. I arrived at one room in the castle before long.

She opened the luxurious door idly, then Princess Seria goes inside. This is her room. I activated invisibility and entered the room together.

This invisibility didn't just make me invisible. This is the ability where I can become a spirit body,

While I'm in this state, the sound, smell and heat is also invisible. Furthermore, since I originally don't have any magical power, they won't sense me through magic. Even if I'm in front of someone, they won't notice me at all.

It's an excellent stealth ability, but it also had a big flaw. It wears down my spirit. Continuous use wears my spirit away, and my ego is gradually fading. I'd disappear like haze in the end.

I was like that when I met princess Seria for the first time. If I didn't meet her that time, It would've been game over for me.

The continuous usable time where my mental state is still in control has a roughly 30 minute limit. Any more use means death, even if you can return, your consciousness isn't certain for a while and your spirit would become unstable. It's fatal in the battlefield.

It's such a risky ability, but if it's just a short time use, there's nothing as convenient as this ability. Thus, I successfully invaded princess Seria's bedroom.

The room was spacious, there's a big canopy on top of the bed, a gorgeous dresser, and then a sofa and table for the visitors. Furthermore there are two doors other than the hallway. It's a room filled with royal-like luxury.

Princess Seria took off her robe, hmmm, a big thing stretched out.

The dress she wore is comparatively plain in design, but that's why the beauty of her body stands out.

The bare line from her armpits to her breasts is very sexy. Her big and well shaped breasts sticks out defenselessly, it has an incredible destructive power.

Unfortunately, bra doesn't exist in this world. There's a sarashi like tube top, but only people who's employed in combat movement is using that 1

A princess can't possibly wear that kind of stuff, her big breasts is only supported by the cloth of her dress. The size are sewn to fit her size, but her dangerous growing speed causes it to spill for a short while. My eyes are glued to it instinctively.

However, I can't just be engrossed forever. My invisibility has a risk, so I have to move to a blind spot in the corner of the room to remove this ability. From here, it's a game of patience. I will observe princess Seria carefully so she won't realize that I'm here.

Princess Seria headed towards the next room. When she opened the door, dress that were hanging on the door can be seen. Apparently, it's the closet.

She intend to change the soiled dress from her outing.

Changing, CHANGING, C-H-A-N-G-I-N-G! 2

Oh shit. What's in danger? My reason is in danger.

What do you mean by game of patience?! This is a game of reason and desire! If I new this would happen, I should've taken Cathy's temptation and did her for two or three times. My sexual desire is originally strong that I masturbate for five times a day. My son is still cheerful even I already did it twice. If I kept peeping at princess Seria changing, the guard would become the wolf. The princess might be stronger than me, but.

In addition for her not wearing anything but underwear, since she's alone she's struggling on choosing her dress. Her soft fair skin is exposed before my eyes, and she's struggling slowly on the dress. You want me to watch without doing anything?

—There's no way I can. You bet I sure want to push her down on that seemingly soft bed the moment she took off her clothes off.

But it's indeed bad as the other company is a royalty. It's really bad.

Furthermore, she's my benefactor. I mustn't return favor with harm. Because I'm on a shady business of dirty work, the more I have to cherish her. That's the line I must not cross.

In the first place, she's younger. No matter how beautiful and cheeky her body is, I won't dirty her easily. The gap of the incorruptible princess' and her Loli big breast cheeky body is wonderful, if she became a bitch, her value would go down sharply.

Imagine princess Seria becoming like Cathy. 'Princess loves penises!' saying that while sucking, it's really, really wonder—

### *Gatcha*

I came back to my senses as the door sounded. Wait, just what was I imagining? Me imagining Seria to become like Cathy you say!? I had some blasphemous idea. All is vanity, emptiness is form, calm down me

I was somehow able to send away my erotic delusion. The number of Cathy must not increase. My spirit won't last long if there's such a thing.

Apart from that, the problem is the current situation. When I peeked out, princess Seria brought a dress from the closet and casually put it on the bed. Then, she moved on the room on the left.

There was the bathroom.

In short, she's thinking of removing the sweat before changing her

clothes right? Yes, I understand. I understand it well.

That means to say that she's stark naked from now on? We're separated with just one door only. Full nude!

I fixed my ears patiently, then I heard the sound of rustling clothes. Then she put the clothes quickly. A paradise spreads beyond this door!

—Dangerous, my consciousness was flying away again.

Worldly desires disappear Worldly desires disappear.

In the first place, why is this establishment have a personal bathroom attached? Aren't they motivated?

This work is quite a bad idea if the royalty leaves it for their heir. What am I saying bad? My crotch is bad! It can't go back from the war mode since a while ago. Since I'm wearing a spy tight leather pants, it's quite painful.

I want to adjust it's position, but when I set it free, my desire would also be freed just as is. My son has no choice but to give up If I release him now, I will never be able to go back.

If it's my life, I'm still good. But the life of my benefactor, princess Seria's life depends on this duty too. I wouldn't ruin myself in this place.

「Haa, haa...」

I managed to calm down my rage somehow. What would a spy do if he can't control himself? A high tension spy is a failure as a spy.

Meanwhile, the sound of water had began on the other side of the door.

She really did take shower. She's likes cleanliness just like ShizuOchan. Speaking of ShiOka, there was a bath scene, how about princess Seria? It's fine if it's just the Shower Scene right?

The smooth skin of princess Seria gets wet with water and is shining. Then the water running on her collarbone is being branched by the two abundant hills, then falls down. One passed through the deep valley then passing through her cutely small navel, and through her forbidden delta zone. The other traces a line on the outside, on the side, to her hipbone, then goes along small ass, then stretching through her beautiful legs...

*Kon Kon*

My body started jumping. The door to the hallway was knocked suddenly.

1. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Breast\\_binding](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Breast_binding) ↩

2. 着がえ、キガエ、K・I・G・A・E ! ↩

## Chapter 7: Princess Seria's panties disappearance case.

「Princess, It's Lululie. I'm coming in」

Without waiting for it's lord to answer the knock, the door was opened. I hastily activated invisibility before I get noticed.

Coming in through the door was a maid called Lululie with spring colored hair Long ears and pale beautiful skin, she's definitely an elf.

Lululie goes to toward the bathroom naturally. When she's in front of the door, she knocked twice and said the same thing she said earlier.

「Princess, It's Lululie I'm coming in」

She muttered the exact same lines, but still opened the door without waiting for the reply.

That's right, it opened.

Across the door, the image of princess Seria taking a shower is...not seen.

As expected, there's a device stationed so you wont see it from outside. That's unnecessary!

While I was frustrated, I heard a voice from the bathroom.

「You came Lululie. I'm going out soon so wait for me」

「Understood. Please take your time」

Lululie's manner is something like the servant of the mirror. 1 However, for her to open the door easily, they probably have a deep relationship.

As Lululie made a polite bow, She entered the dressing room. I also entered.

Then, I saw. I shut my eyes comfortably, it's the princess Seria in whole taking a shower! 2

Her wet silver hair sticking on her back brings on sex appeal.

The first thing that caught my attention is her large twin hills. The balance of her body line is barely collapsing, growing up like that is foul play. Her small bud points out of her small areola. It's colored beautiful pink.

When I looked down, her constricted waist and ass and her vagina can be seen. I'd like to touch her small soft ass by all means. Then, her beautiful slender legs stretch there. It's probably because she's always walking. It's a good firm calf.

Princess Seria turned around when she noticed Lululie came in. Water droplets flick out of her chest that moment.

「Lululie, how's the preparations for tomorrow?」

Princess Seria asks Lululie while taking a shower. It's probably the business that she spoke about in the orphanage.

「It's ready for departure. If you have something you need in hurry you can tell me」

「Then it's okay, I trust you after all」

「Thank you very much. Please enjoy your travel princess」



Lululie speaks in a joyous tone. The relationship of this two must be intimate.

I stretched my hand to feel the chest, but I don't have sense of touch. As expected, doing sexual harassment while invisible is impossible. 3 It's this biggest drawback. It's no exaggeration to say it's fatal.

Feeling disappointed, I tried looking around the bathroom to shift my mood.

The inside was spacious, the bathtub and built-in shower is enough for you to extend your legs, there's also an dressing area and a toilet installed. Talking about a private room, it's made quite luxurious.

Lululie closed off the door, then began to fold the dress that was thrown.

「You're right. I'm the only royalty traveling this time, the journey is with Lululie and two other. Somehow, it's said that the escort knight changes from Lion too」

「It's been decided that he has to remain as there might be some that might move to inflict domestic unrest」

Lion, you mean that Lion? That youngest knight, the genius knight, that Ikemen? 4

I've also seen him several times. I who thinks that Ikemen should die, but I don't hate him for some reason. 5 He's a guy with a mysterious charm that pulls people on him.

That genius is one of the few guards that can escort Princess Seria. Whenever he's available, he's the exclusive escort of Princess Seria, and so

I often see him with Princess Seria.

The citizens think highly of the two to the extent that they call them as next king, but Princess Seria has two elder brothers so her succession in throne isn't high as she was the third. Rasahairu kingdom isn't a complete male lineage, but the possibility of men to be the successor is high, so the chance of princess to be the next King is hardly possible. That's why the rivalry for the throne is relatively free.

So it's quite suspicious for Lion to be separated to princess Seria.

「That's right... There's certainly some bar rumors recently. Have you asked who's the replacement escort」

「No, but it would be one of the Imperial Guard Knight」

「Then it's surely an unknown person. The itinerary for one way is 16 days...My buttocks would be in pain」

Her ass? It's small, but it's roundish, and I like the splendid ass of Seria. Where's the best angle? Lower? No a bit on the right?

If this ass gets hurt, I will pat it gently.

「Please do not worry. There's a special cushion prepared by elves for the princess」

「...By the way, what kind of design is it?」

「The motif is a forest cradle and it's called randara flower. It will wrap up the princess' cute ass」

「I-Is that so? Err, as expected of elves. Thanks」

「No don't be, there's no need for thanks. It's my work after all.」

That's unnecessary.

「True. Also, I can't show an ungraceful appearance over there」

「Yes, if you said that your buttocks hurt, McClane-sama would come to touch it. Please be careful. Princess is still forbidden for those kind of things」

「What kind of person is McClane-sama」

Oh, mole found. 6

「Did you forget it already princess? We met him on the 300th year foundation anniversary three years ago. He's the second prince of the Misumunto kingdom. Weren't you aware of that he was ogling at you?」

「Eh, sorry. I don't really recall him...」

「Please have an interest in politics a bit, princess」

「Uu...Okay...」

The princess' disheartened voice is heard. The relationship of these two, isn't Lululie the stronger one?

Now then, speaking frankly, this situation is a bit dangerous.

Not my crotch, but the talk about life.

Lululie had finished folding the clothes, and she's waiting for princess Seria to finish her bath while holding a bath towel.

In other words, I'm trapped in the bathroom

I was caught in the princess Seria shower scene bait, I completely became a pervert. It's called self-destruct.

It's impossible to move things when I'm invisible. It's necessary to remove invisibility to open the door, when I released it, there's a problem of being unable to use it again until the recoil subsides. It's difficult to slip out without being found.

In other words, I have no choice but to stay until princess Seria leave.

I can say that Lululie didn't take 30 minutes on waiting her take the shower, but when the time is prolonged, the recoil would also be prolonged.

When that happens, the location and the timing for cancel would be difficult. I will wait for the timing to go out and find a safe place somehow. It's a difficult mission.

However, that chance will certainly come. I merely have to endure now.

It's too late to appreciate the naked princess Seria while I was exhausting to keep myself calm, it's becoming hard. 7 I don't know how long will my invisibility weaken my desire. 8

But then, without it, I would have already attacked the princess.

Princess Seria, please come out immediately before I run out of energy. Ooh, but I want to look more at her naked body...

I don't know how my prayer was heard, but Seria stopped the shower and received the towel from Lululie. Her cleavage, underboobs, armpits, and the most important place for a woman is being carefully wiped up from moisture. Then, she reached out on her panties.

At that time I saw.

Princess Seria widened the panties, then lifted one leg. I was trying so

hard to see that place myself, then it exhibited itself finally.

The most important place doesn't have a hair growing, and the slit is small, I burned the image to my memory. That's already deliberate.

Before I noticed, princess Seria has left the shower room.

She left me frozen.

And, the door is closed.

——I failed!

「Lululie, do it like always」

「Yes, Princess」

I heard the conversation from the outside. Surely the two beautiful girls are giggling and chuckling and flirting outside.

「Princess' hair is beautiful as always」

「That's because Lululie is always taking care of it. Also, Lululie's green hair is so calming, I like it」

It seems that they're taking care of the hair outside.

Is it my chance?

Princess Seria's hair is long, I guess it would take time for them to groom it. Furthermore, she's a royalty. They can't be negligent.

There's no room for hesitation. I released my invisibility.

———Guaa!

The recoil breaks my head in pain. I almost screamed unintentionally, but I grit my teeth and bear with it.

The elf in particular has good ears. I might be noticed if I make a noise. I have no choice but to endure it without making a move.

When my body returned and my head calm down, I remembered the conversation of Princess Seria and Lululie earlier.

The last words can't be allowed to pass.

Misumunto Kingdom. It's the neighboring country of Rasahairu Kingdom and is a nation with often territorial dispute, and they frequently fight. A large scale war happened two years ago.

Originally Misumunto Kingdom was a small scale kingdom, but with the previous king's excellency they swallowed small countries one by one and they were one step before reaching the summit.

The Rasahairu Kingdom had put a stop on it.

They were one step before they can be called the largest country when they chose the Rasahairu Kingdom as the next target. At this point of time, Misumunto Kingdom is already at the top for national power, they believed that they had the advantage.

But, Rasahairu Kingdom frequently displayed that they can repel the invasion of the Misumunto Kingdom.

Furthermore, with the agreement of the other surrounding nations, they began to restrain the Misumunto Kingdom, and because they're surrounded in every direction, Misumunto can't continue the aggressive war.

Since then, these two countries snarl at each other.

After the death of the previous king of Misumunto Kingdom 10 years ago, I heard that they began to have exchanges with each other, but it does not change the fact that they still have a dangerous relationship.

They're sending a royalty along in such a place, it's like they're telling them to attack. Or to take her as hostage, or otherwise they intend her as sacrifice.

In any case, in the worst case, using princess Seria's body, there's no doubt that these two countries will rush to war again.

I wonder if the true meaning of Master's request is to prevent this. In that case, that exceptional award is also convincing.

While I was thinking of that, My headache finally draw back.

First of all, let's asses the situation. I mustn't stay in the bathroom. Lululie would immediately come and collect the dress and panties that princess Seria took off. Her dress and underwear... Underwear?

The time of demon temptation hasn't ended yet. In front of me is the politely folded dress and g-string of princess Seria. Furthermore, freshly undressed.

My hand extends on it's own, ignoring my intention. I lift it carefully like a fragile object then opened it.

It's definitely panties. Furthermore, it's a panties that had been dyed and fermented for a whole day.

I probably worked hard just for this time of the day. I cut off Cathy's temptations, then hold down my desire to press down princess Seria, I risked my life to hide from two people, and then, it finally arrived. This G-string panties.

I looked left, I looked right, I looked down, I looked in my front, I looked at my back, I confirmed that no one was around, then I brought the G-string panties close to my face.

—A sweet and stimulating fragrance.

It's a dangerous smell that's like a drug that rules the brain.  
I must not lose this. I must keep and protect this with my life.

While doing a perverted behavior, I heard the happy voices of the two girls from the other side of the door.

「Okay, I've finished, princess. That dress looks good on you」

「Fufufu, I'm glad at your flattery」

「Then, please proceed to the dining room. The master chef is waiting. I will come after I collect the dress」

「Yes, thanks as always」

oh shit. The footsteps of Lululie is approaching.

It's not the time to be sniffing panties!

1. 従者の鏡のように慎重深い態度のLululie ←
2. 気持ちよさそうに目を閉じて、頭からシャワーを浴びているSeria姫を！ ←
3. NOooooooooooooooooo ←
4. Good Looking Guy ←
5. Oh no, he's gay ←
5. KyoAni finds the mole ←



7. すでにSeria姫の裸を鑑賞しながらどうでもいい事をグダグダと考えていなければ自分を保てない程にはきつくなってきている ←
8. それだって透明化状態では欲求が薄まるためいつまで持つか分からない ←

## Chapter 8: Unexpected Travel Stopover 1

I'm cornered in the bathroom, my last resort was the teleportation which made the princess Seria's panties disappearance case unsolved. The recoil from a while ago was still remaining, so I can't use invisibility. I have one more use of teleportation before it becomes unusable for a while. I really have to leave this one on life or death situations.

I finished the preparations for travel immediately, then I returned the workroom to share information with Cathy after that.

「I'll be going there. I will be absent for a while starting tomorrow」

I told Cathy that I will stick to Seria and will go to Misumunto Kingdom.

Meanwhile Cathy will stay in the imperial capital and undertake information gathering. I thought of bringing her because she's my assistant, but if by any chance I have to run away, I decided to do it alone because it's easier.

「Roger. I'll be gathering useful information on this side. There's no change in market research that would make worry about war. However, I've heard that there's a slave dealer that bought all the beast slaves. What's left are just baseless rumors The prince's having trouble on the next king's seat. The church had placed an order for a new stained glass. Will Gantt and Mark Newt house were quarreling. The beheader appeared again. The color of princess Seria's panties were light blue today」

「The slave dealer doesn't discriminate on his replenishment of his

merchandise. The problem on the king is just he's indecisive and doesn't try to announce it, his tentative decision is supposed to be the first prince, Radom. The church prefer a holy woman as the stain glass, and the quarrel of the two big marquises didn't just start now. The beheader is unrelated. Therefore there's no decisive problem that can be found」

I have no comment on the panties of princess Seria.

「Yes, I agree with that, in relation to the two big marquises there's actual death of people coming out. There were several people who seem related to to both families dying in the slum recently」

「Did you examine it there already?」

You wouldn't expect them to investigate it in just half a day. It's very different from the peeping and underwear thief that I have just done.

Still, fatalities?...

「When they start a genuine fight it's troublesome. But it doesn't lead to princess Seria's danger...I can't make a connection」

「True. She's cut off from the power struggle after all. If a civil war developed it would be different」2

「When it comes to it, the suspicious is the Misumunto Kingdom. The reason for princess Seria's visit is unknown. If this country is steady, then did the other side set it?」

「I wonder. When it comes to national power, the other side is on top. In fact it would be this side who will want to posses interaction instead of Misumunto Kingdom. Considering princess Seria's age, that might be the case」

What do you mean by 'that might be the case' Cathy-san? No, it's not that I didn't consider that possibility.

In short they will make the princess that's useless in domestic function as a diplomatic card of the country?

Misumunto Kingdom will avoid waging a war if they married her, and if things go well after marriage, there will also be a military alliance, something like that?

There's the risk of the other side taking her as hostage, but conversely, the countries behind would dominate them. Furthermore, princess Seria has two elder brothers, and they're intelligent, you would expect princess Seria to do something good for her country.

About this upcoming visit, it can be expected to be a personal meeting due to the absence of other royalty and the small number of people to accompany her. When it comes to it, the implication of this meeting is powerful.

The age of marriage in this world is 15 as the earliest. If the social position is high, then commonly around 20 years old. Princess Seria is currently 14 years old. It's just perfect for starting laying the groundwork.

The most like possible candidate is the strongest knight, Lion, it's unfavorably low in comparison to the royalty of Misumunto Kingdom. Even if a Misumunto Kingdom's prince surfaced as a candidate, it's not strange.

But the person who drew this scenario made a fatal mistake. Princess Seria's character can't be dirtied. Even if you say it's for the country, it's not done to entrap the other country. It's likely that the other side became popular, hoping to increase the other party's prince's value.

Her body is the meal for the nation at the day, and in night, devoting herself for the prince. What kind of girl is that?

Oh, somehow, I got angry just by thinking about it.

「Okay, let's make this visit fail no matter what. I'll even cut off the dick of the partner」

「That's sudden. However, I think it's okay. If they can't make a child, Misumunto Kingdom will end. What next is the division of power and they will disappear. If it's Ren, it's possible that no one finds out」

「That's right! It's fine! Wait for me! Misumunto Kingdom!」



Although I came out in that kind of mood, the travel to Misumunto Kingdom itself is boring. The tension is falling.

It's been two days since they left the imperial capital. Lululie and the princess shut themselves in the wagon so I can't see their face, most of the guards are men so it's boring. There were women other than the two, but compared to the two inside the carriage they're quite unfavorable.

Furthermore, these guys are Imperial Guard Knights, but their skill level is low. Even I was tailing them without using my abilities, nobody noticed my in particular. If it's an excellent guard, he would use his ability and fly through the sky, I'm completely disappointed as I was determined to overwork myself in the forest.

I've also cut down demons. I tormented a goblin for enjoyment purpose.

We still hadn't reached out of the territory of Rasuhairu kingdom yet. The demons infesting are weak so there's hardly any attention required, considering the merit of these guards, there's no good reason to lose focus.

Besides, that's not all. They believe that they're being followed by a spy colleague, surprisingly those were eaten by a demon.

Late at night where they're the weakest, a poisonous snake blew poison on them, since they can't move, its friends in the forest devoured them. There's a limit on being useless. If you're lurking in the forest you'll want to make countermeasures.

It was such a dull trip, but right now, I'm very excited.

The cause is pee.

Not my urine of course. It's princess Seria's pee.

Surprisingly, flush toilet exists in this world. There's no way but to use a magic tool to make water but, since it's running water, it's no doubt that it's a flush toilet.

However, you won't expect for a toilet to be attached in the carriage, basically peeing must be endured on the roadway until they reach a village. On the first day, it's close to the imperial capital, I was glad that there's relatively frequent towns and villages. However, on the second day, it finally came at last.

Thin trees are growing along the way, when she confirmed it's safe around the bushes, princess Seria crouched on the dug hollow dent.

Right now, she's trying *notion* 3

*notion* is revealing the most shameful part for a human being, which is the lower body and exposing it to the nature, it's a noble ceremony which unifies nature with excrement.

Right now, princess Seria is tackling that ceremony.

She probably endured it well. It looked like princess Seria came out of the carriage like she was in a desperate situation. Her face is distorted in pain while she holds her skirt with one hand, the princess Seria who's

waist is closed and her feet shaky is erotic. Surely she can't endure it and unable to stand it, then she told Lululie 「It's going to leak...」then the carriage stopped.

The knights immediately selected a location to ensure the safety of the surroundings, then were driven out by Lululie after. Only two female knights remained and are accompanying her as guard. The knights that were sent away desperately try to listen with their ears attentively, they tried to restrain each other trying to approach the downwind as much as possible. There's a person with bloodshot eyes too. I understand that feeling, but have some self-restraint.

However. The knights can't approach, but I'm different. I was given a power by God to become invisible. I slip through the knights, and approaching princess Seria is like a mere child's play.

Thus, it came.

My positioning is perfect. I brought my face close and rubbed it against the ground, rather I thrust my face on the dent with vigor and peeped inside her skirt.

The important place of princess Seria who's squatting is completely exposed. The white string panties hanging on her knee is stained faintly, but I guess it's just my imagination. She expanded her her legs that her thighs and her slippery pussy is exposed defenselessly. Her small slit has a slightly pink color peeking out and it trembled.

「U...n...」

The next moment, a golden colored fired out. Princess Seria draws a beautiful parabola from her impure hole and it's flying to the ground. The

holy water that fell into the hallow with her aim accumulates in the bottom and gives off a mellow fragrance. The water sprays straight into my face, but I don't mind getting soiled as I was invisible. In face, even if I remove invisibility and bathe on it directly, I don't mind!

「Ha, a...」

The expression of princess Seria was relaxing happily. It's a completely off guard face. If she knew that I was looking she would be surprised.

「Fuu...」

The princess Seria who let out everything exhaled with a refreshing face. She tasted the feeling of freedom and becoming one with the nature. With this, princess Seria is now a part of the wonderful clan of *notion*

「Princess, please」

「Okay, thanks」

She received the towel from Lululie, wiped her most important place then stood up. She pulled back her g-string panties, and the service time today ended.

「Then, I will be going too」

When I thought it already ended, it seems it was just my imagination. They switched places and Lululie put her panties down while crouching.



In addition, afterwards the two knights urinated too.

Lululie can be said that there's a white lace sprouting out of her. That was a supreme thing too.

They filled out the dent after then resumed the journey. I released my invisibility and waited for my headache to settle. The time it took for my invisibility was too long. I'm almost fainting. I put the tranquilizer I got on the castle yesterday on my mouth and I took a deep breath 4 When I thought that this was taken from that hole that let it out, my consciousness was refreshed.



Despite of this and that, the journey advanced smoothly.

But the incident has occurred faster than expected.

It's just past noon on the seventh day of travel, we're in the middle of crossing the last mountain of Rasuhairu Kingdom.

It began to rain when the carriage where princess Seria rode crossed the line. The rained strengthened instantly, and it became heavy rain.

If they go on for a while longer, the fort of the border in the mountain comes into view. It's possible to shelter if you go there.

The troupe made the horse hurry in order to arrive at the fort rather early. I cut down the distance to not lose sight of them.

That moment, a hint of magic rose from a direction of movement suddenly. I'm sure that someone used strong magic. Something happened somewhere far away.

The knights doesn't look like they noticed it.

I was worried so I went ahead to check it.

I soar to the stormy sky using my flight ability. The training was worth as I can now fly faster than birds now. While being shot by intense raindrops, I passed through the troupe of princess Seria and moved to the place where I felt the magical power a while ago.

The surface of the mountain was deformed because of the landslide there and the road was buried in sand. The carriage can't go through this.

I examined where the landslide happened just to make sure, but there was no particular evidence. They probably used magic of the soil system. I tried to look for signs of people, but I didn't feel anyone around. The culprit seems to have escaped already.

Is their purpose to keep them out? If it's a bandit they would be putting a trap here. However, there was no one in the area. Then it would be an act of those who don't want princess Seria to go to the Misumunto Kingdom?

I extend my investigation to the fort of the border. What's there was an awfully gorgeous cavalry, and there was a young tall man in there. His face is familiar with the VIP list.

Misumunto Kingdom's second prince, McClane. The blond eloquent lineage Ikemen.

The knight platoon were taken as attendant.

I approached them unnoticed, then I heard a voice.

「Is princess Seria not there yet?」

「Yes, if things go as scheduled, it should be tonight」

「I came to meet you, but to make me wait, aren't you a bad girl Seria? I need to punish you in bed tonight. Whatever happens, never let anyone through my room」

「Certainly」

「Hey, what kind of voice would Seria cry?」

「A woman who isn't glad to be embraced by McClane」

「Haha, true. Ah, I wonder if they're coming yet?」

It's settled. This man is my and mankind's enemy. 5 I can kill him right now but I endured it. It's not yet time. I'll seize him the moment he showed his true character in front of them. Furthermore, it's impossible to resurrect a man that's minced in to pieces with magic, If I'm not a man I would do it 6

I continued eavesdropping but they didn't talk anything big. Enumerating the unpleasant words of McClane that gave me goosebumps, it doesn't seem that they noticed the landslide a while ago.

They wouldn't be able to leave the entrance of the country while leading knight troupes, even if they entered, the road is divided by the sediment. It seems that they're unrelated to the landslide.

In the end, there's nothing else notable so I didn't get any results. After I confirmed that nothing else while I was flying along the way, but there's something I don't understand. If he's unrelated, the narcissist pervert would think of it as waste of time and would decide to go back.

While flying over the mountain, I saw the troupe of princess Seria. There's no particular accident that can be seen.

But further ahead, I saw a group coming towards here.

The number was around 20 people, and their equipment looks like from

some noble's private army. All members were riding a horse and is running at tops speed in this rain. It doesn't look ordinary.

When they catch up with the troupe of princess Seria, they will attack the knights with no questions asked

1. "(Pee)" —I didn't add this on the title because it's fun if you don't see it  
↩
2. "Ren is my sex friend", "So am I" CIVIL WAR ↩
3. 野シヨン if you have suggestions, please tell me ↩
4. Yes, it's the panties. ↩
5. Yes, Kill that man! Don't let this become NTR! ↩
5. 男じゃなくしてやろう ↩

## Chapter 9: Princesss Seria Assault Incident

The first knight was attacked by a sword in arm and fell off the horse, the following were skewered. The red blood flows along with the rainwater. They can't be saved.

「It's an attack! Never let it pass through! Protect the princess at all cost!」

The knight commander gave instructions and began to counterattack. They pulled the swords then made a formation to block the way.

The sounds of metal clashing resounded and sparks fly. For the individual skill, the knight is above but, the number of the assailants is nearly double them, the knights are in a disadvantageous situation.

It's good if they escape to the fort, but unfortunately the road is closed. Was that done for this purpose?

It would be troublesome if the knights lose, I'll support them to the degree where I won't be found out. A throne is thrown under the rain to disrupt the assailants. I'd like to throw a knife but, it's troublesome if they searched it's source so I have to bear with just stones. The knight's sword entered the enemy who lost it's attention.

However, the situation won't change at this degree. As much as possible, I need to decrease their numbers before they were completely wiped out, so I throw the next stone.

Looking at the movements of the assailants, there's only two people who can use magic decently. Others have some magic power, but the

control isn't decent.

With just this much of enemies, I would be able to handle them alone. When it comes to worst, I'd take princess Seria and fly to the sky.

The troupes of princess Seria was able to run away somehow, but they finally arrived at the landslide.

「Shit, why is the road blocked at the time like this!? Just a bit more and...!!」

The carriage stoped moving. Although they were cursing, the knights lined up so they can be a shield.

Inside the carriage, princess Seria and Lululie can be seen hugging each other, frightened. The fighting scene seems to be too intense for the princess.

The assailants surrounds the knights.

Both had been reduced by numbers, but the assailants are still 16 and the remaining knights are just 5. The match has been decided.

The assailants gradually narrows the circle. The color of despair can be seen on the knights.

One of the assailants invoked a magic. That's a low-class wind magic. The freshly severed head of the coachman who was hit directly had rolled down in front of the knights.

Seeing that, the commander knight raised its voice.

「Wait! What's your purpose?」

Are they going to say and beg for their lives this late? Well, if they can settle with negotiation it's fine.

「Hand over princess Seria.」

As expected, their purpose is to kidnap princess Seria. This might be some noble's move. But, what do you think will happen when they make that kind of request?

「Got it. We'll comply on your demands. If you'd like we'd retreat. That's why please! Please overlook us!」

———HA!?

I can't believe my ears hearing the knight's betrayal.

What are you saying?

Do you have no pride as a knight?

Are you selling the princess of your country?

Are you kidding me?

The questions and anger stirs up my head.

Soon enough, the commander's hand was reaching on the door of the carriage. He dragged Lululie who decided to protect princess Seria from within. Princess Seria holds Lululie's arms tightly and was resisting.

「Let go of Lululie!」

「Hihi, The princess came out! Hey, help me here!」

Hands were put on princess Seria continuously. Furthermore, the neighboring knights helped, thus the two were dragged outside the carriage completely. The 2 female knights mixed in, I do not feel hesitation from them at all. They only think of their own that they don't mind sacrificing someone else.

「Stop this! What are you doing to the princess!」

「Shut up!!」

The moment I was going to jump in, a magic power swirled the surroundings of Lululie and the wind blew violently. It's the spirit magic that elves can use. But before that magic was activated, the knight hit Lululie to shut her up.

The hit Lululie lies in the ground of muddy water.

「Lululie!」

「.....」

Was she hit quite strong? Lululie lost her motion. Even princess Seria was calling her but she doesn't move an inch lying on the mud.

「Let me go!! Lululie is! Lululie get your self together!」

「Don't struggle!」



Princess Seria tries to shake off the knights restriction, but they outnumbered her. She's been restricted in no time.

I and the assailants were surprised with their swift work.

「Hahahahaahaha, Knights? What a laugh. Is your life much more important than your lord? It's fine. I'll let you live. Be grateful.」

The assailants accepted the deed of the knights in good mood.

The betrayers laughed like mad men.

Princess Seria who was left alone was trembling in fear that it can be seen from her looking at a distance?

What's this?

What are these guys?

Every one of them are rotten.

There's no proper human being anywhere.

——Decided. Slaughter.

I jumped from the shade of the tree using flight ability. The enemies hadn't noticed me yet.

The enemies are more than I expect. I'd like to reduce the number a bit in the start.

I can't use poison nor explosives on the guard target.

I took out 5 throwing knives. My aim are those five knights that betrayed. The enemy thinks that the battle is over so they let their guard down. I'll kill all the strongest knights in the start.

If their body isn't reinforced by magical power consciously, the throwing knives can cause fatal injuries. I aimed from the sky and threw the knife. The high speed knife pierced and sticks accurately in the necks of the target

The knights fell down unable to raise a cry. They didn't even understand what happened and how they died.

「What!? Enemy? Where!」

The assailant noticed the abnormal event. But they can't grasp my position?

I took out a smoke ball from my pouch and scattered it on my surroundings. It exploded when it hit the ground and the surroundings was filled with smoke.

It's the type usable in rain, but some fell in the puddle of water and doesn't seem to have exploded. Still, it will be enough this time.

Of course, the enemy location can't be seen in the smoke. However, I know where the enemy is.

Since I have no magical power, I'm unusually sensitive to other people's magic power. Even if I close my eyes, there's no problem locating my enemies. Furthermore, I'm someone who can easily distinguish the magical power's trait easily.

On the contrary, it's difficult for the other side to sense me because I don't have magical power. They were caught in the trap of someone who's used to fighting.

I remember the magical power of princess Seria and Lululie. What's next is for me to kill those with unknown magical power's owner one by one.

I hold two daggers, then entered the smoke. I pierced my sword on the men near princess Seria in order.

I run around while taking care not to make a footstep as much as possible, in addition, I threw knives on the places on the presence. There were cries all over the place, yet the enemies can't pinpoint my location. I approached the confused enemies and cut off the heads of one, two people.

When they're strengthened with magic, it's not possible to cut them with sword as expected. But as long as I give them a fatal wound, there's no problem. The dagger I have cuts off their arteries, their nerves and reliably cuts the trachea.

I pay attention so I won't be bathed in the blood of the victim as much as possible. If I showered in it, with this body that has no resistance will be polluted with magic.

「What's happening!？」

I want to reduce their number before the assailants calm down from the mayhem.

*Zaku Zaku* [1] I had no problems until the fourth person. The fifth person noticed me immediately as he was next to the fourth.

[tl: [1] = cut cut ]

「I saw him! The enemy!」

The moment he uttered a cry, I aimed at his left eye and stick out the dagger from my left hand. The man shook his head to avoid just as expected. At the same time, I brandished my left hand to pierce his neck.

Before another comes over, I moved. I flew to the sky and sneak around the back of the group.

I'm behind the the guys who gathered in the voice a while ago, further more I killed three more. With this, I got half. 8 people remaining.

Then, enemy magic was invoked, the wind blew the smoke away.

When the smoke cleared up, the assailants began to understand the situation.

The man called leader is already dead

With the situation where there's no command, each of them began to look for the criminal who created this terrible sights. Then, they found me.

They threw a knife instead of a greeting, which I avoided easily. After all, I'm no match from someone with magical power and abilities.

「That guy! I don't know what you did. But we'll beat you up!」

「Wait! There may be someone else here. Don't let your guard off!」

The enemy closing up ran back. They were being vigilant of the enemy from the far surroundings.

The trap I set while moving a while ago showed it's effect.

「Damn! Wires were set up!」

When the battle started, I put on my knife and flew around while scattering wires. The wire barrier was completed before the smoke

cleared up.

The wire set up weakened the feet of the assailants.

Because the wire I used was a durable anti-demon material, so it won't be cut easily.

I avoid the wire casually, then killed the stupid persons that were caught on it in one by one.

My first target was the guy whose feet was caught up in the wire and was struggling to untie it. I sit down where the the dagger pierced. I can use one hand to fight, but the posture is bad. I changed the trajectory to horizontal lull, then I stabbed the arm with another dagger. I dropped the sword first to remove the cut off the defenseless head.

A man who was near passed through a wire. He waved his sword but the location is bad. When caught by the wire their movement became dull. I had plenty of room to avoid, and hit him. My aim was the gap in the sides of the leather armor.

Though it looks like average, but there's a awfully serious response returned. Is the difference in the presence of magical power great as expected? It was shallow, but the attack entered.

When his movement became visibly dull, I passed and moved away the second person.

The third is the isolated bald man. Judging from the quantity of magical power I feel, it's probably the rearguard magician. There's nothing better than crushing him immediately through melee.

The man has thrown magic while avoiding a wire. The one he used is a low level magic wind blade air slash. The flying wind tear up the rain but it seems that it doesn't have enough power to cut the wire. Twice, thrice, every time he uses it his power weakens. Thanks to the rain, I can

understand it's track so it's easy to manage. I matched the timing and jumped then somersault.

While on it, I threw knives to jam his second incantation. The knife hit his shoulder, it's far from fatal.

But, it was enough as restraint. While he was flinched, I closed the distance instantly and stuffed a dagger in his eye.

What's left were the duo and trio that was separated.

The next target is the trio. The enemy's strategy was to wait without moving badly, but that judgement was a fatal mistake.

I approached the trio, just before entering the suitable distance I made a sudden stop. And then, I pulled the red wire with all my strength.

This wire was the wire that was connected to the knife I threw to the knight. Several wires were tangled to this and they were drawn together when I pulled in.

The result, the trio became a single limp as the wire became like a casting net.

「You're a nuisance!」

「Don't come here! I can't move!」

「Be quiet! It's sharp!」

The trio that was entangled in the wire began to quarrel violently. With this, I can't swing my sword well. After destroying their limbs so they won't be able to move, I finished them off.

With this, there's only two left. The reaction of the two was opposites. One headed here, and the other started escaping.

Let's keep company of the one coming here first. It's a man with well trained muscles.

「You did well. I'm a D-class adventurer Zaire Rustin. You who has no magical power NO MAGIC, what's your name」

Does this man have a chivalry spirit? There's no way a human would turn back after declaring it's name.

I approached him ignoring the self introductions, the man prepared a two handed sword. A battle style that emphasize power, or so I call.

The man run straight then he swung his huge sword. I found his magical power rising and concentrates on the blade. The sword that's swinging downwards is a sword that can't be defended against. For example using this two short sword to defend, these daggers would be cut into half. But, It's meaningless if it didn't hit.

I throw one of my dagger right before the enemy entered a suitable distance. Evasion is impossible at this distance. Since he concentrates his magical power on the sword, his guard is weak. Therefore, the man has no choice but to intercept. He raised the sword against the dagger flying to him.

The dagger cuts into two. Some of the surrounding knives were also cut. The ground was split open and water flowed to the ground. But, that's it.

The blade didn't reach me. I didn't miss the opportunity where the opponent missed and invaded his suitable distance, he immediately raised his sword. He didn't put the magical power to the sword but relied on his muscle strength on using an ordinary sword. In other words, I succeeded.

As expected he can't bend his body to evade the dagger thrown as he draws the sword. I picked up the broken dagger at the same time and cut the tendon of his foot deep. I heard a certain response after I took a

suitable distance.

「Kuh, you did it. That's the movement of a assassin. But, don't think I'll lose to something this level!」

When I looked, the man was dragging his right leg. It's not possible to hold out with this. I can torture him to death afterwards, but I can't take my time because of the one who ran away. I decided to run a risk once again.

I approached just like before. The man ignored his foot injury, took his sword and made a backswing. Since he's just a D-class he doesn't have talent.

「OooooooooOO!!」

The man gave a roar. But, no matter how much you raise your voice, your movement won't change, it's still the same.

I turned before he reached the suitable distance. When I sneaked around the back of the man, he tried to change his direction, but his injured foot doesn't follow. I intruded his suitable distance now that he lost his balance— I feign back step and withdraw.

The man swung his sword from an impossible posture, then fell down. I'm thankful that this muscle brain fell for the feint easily. On his final moment he was silent for no reason, so I finished him off without hesitation.

Last one.

I won't permit escape.

The request was to guard unknown by everyone. I've been seen by



princess Seria with this, but if we get the story straight, it's fine. Master will overlook that much. But the enemy must be slaughtered.

The man who ran away just got out of the wire and rode a horse. It's impossible to catch him on foot. Nevertheless, I have no intention of showing off my flight ability.

Then, what should I do?

The answer is easy. I use the supernatural ability not to understand that it is supernatural ability.

I boost every time I kick the ground using my flight ability.

The flight capacity releases every time I land, what I lose is the floating power. My horizontal speed doesn't change.

I combine my leg power and my ability, I seem to run normally, but my speed rises rapidly.

「D-don't come you monster! Why is someone who has no magic is—」

I caught up immediately and penetrated his neck with force.

The battle ended with this. Damage is one dagger and several wires. It's my total victory.

## Chapter 10: Crumbling reason#

The battle has ended, I returned my thoughts to normal mode.

My heart was screaming *bakun bakun*<sup>1</sup> and the shivering of my body doesn't stop. Sweat gushed out in one go.

The feeling of stabbing a person using my hand is recalled. The weight of cutting flesh comes back to me.

The fear of killing people is attacking me...

——Not yet. It's not over yet.

I hurried back to the restrained princess Seria and Lululie while enduring nausea.

In addition to being tied up, princess Seria is also gagged up. It stared at my face surprised. It can't be helped to be surprised since the one in front of her just slaughtered around 20 people.

Lululie rolled in the ground while unconscious.

And, both of their clothes are disordered and it was unladylike.

Seria wasn't undressed, but her dress was taken down to shoulders and her voluptuous chest spilled. The tip is barely hidden but the rain makes it wet and transparent. Since she ran wild, her skirt has been rolled up and her thighs and panties are completely exposed. To be honest, I want to attack right now and forget a lot of things.

Lululie's maid uniform was torn off, so her beautiful white skin and her cute tits are exposed. The skirt is also torn apart, her white panties and garter are exposed in the rain. And, the bruise hit by the knight. Her face

had a terrible bruise.

They didn't have the time to rape, but I think she did well.

「You...How dare you...」

I heard a groan from my feet. When I looked, the knight commander was still breathing. The knife that run to his neck seems to be shallow to be fatal. I failed to kill, it seems I still have a lot to go. I pushed the knife with the back of my shoes to finish him off.

「—!!」

Princess Seria raised a voiceless scream. I removed her binds immediately.

My eyes are glued on the breasts spilling from her dress, but I have to control myself here. 2 Presence of mind, presence of mind, I persuade myself.

When the bind removed, princess Seria was startled, but immediately got close to Lululie.

「Lululie, get yourself together! I'll use healing magic right now!」

Princess Seria forgot to fix her clothes and casted magic on Lululie. Princess Seria muttered something, then a faint light wraps Lululie then her wound was healed. And, it returned to it's original beautiful face immediately.

I took my glove off to check her pulse and breathing.

「Is Lululie okay?」

Princess Seria asked anxiously.

「Both her pulse and breathing are stable. She will wake up soon」

「Is that so? Because I used magic while she's sleeping, I think it would take several hours for her to wake up. But, I'm glad she's okay」

Princess Seria's speech is broken and it's seen in her face that's she frightened. Are you really scared of me? Is that so?

「T-thank you for helping us」

「No, don't mind it」

I helped since it's work. And I came late to help because it was somewhat dangerous.

It's bad to leave Lululie as is, so I hold her and carried her to the carriage.

When I lifted her up, the torn clothes slipped off and her body is now fully exposed. Small chest, small body. Her ribs stands out. I'm worried that she's not eating much since she's light. But she still has the softness peculiar to girl, it's luring me to molest her.

「Please don't look so much」

「Oh, sorry. I just」

The stare from the back is warning me.

When I stood up, there was a fragrance of the forest in her leaf colored hair.

I took a deep breath, then I felt that my battle excitement feeling slightly calming down. Just for a bit.

I had a hunch that I only think of erotic things about these two recently. I peeked at the shower, I stole her panties, I peeked at her peeing. My reason is about to collapse. Just one more push and I'm confident that I will rampage already.

Furthermore, I'm desperately struggling now. Death is always next to me when I work, but there's no sort of it this time. I did against more than 20 people, including some Imperial Guard's Knight. Usually I don't cross such dangerous bridge. It was good that it did all according to plan, but with just one mistake I would be dead.

My fighting style is Owata fighting art. 3

Paper armor and poor offensive ability is cheated with technology.

As I fight, the fight makes me feel very close to death enough to make me unstable. I want to somehow diverge the fear of death.

I board the carriage while holding Lululie. Inside was simple design sofa facing each other. I mobilized my reason and let Lululie down the sofa. The cushion is made up of disgusting multiple rafflesia as pillow, yet this was the carriage that princess Seria boarded.

「Uhhh, thank you for everything」

Princess Seria bowed once again while giving thanks. Her big breasts shakes boldly.

But, more than that, I was more worried in her wet hair that was stained with mud.

Surprisingly I extend my hand.

「Then, I want to give you something as thanks, Hyau!」

A lovely scream leaked out from princess Seria's mouth. The blame is my hand on her hair.

「Ah, it became dirty isn't it? Errr, the towel was...」

— I touched it. Though I thought of just looking, I can't endure it anymore, I finally touched her. I've held her silver hair at that time.

「Err, I'm sorry. It would help me if you release your hand...」

Release my hand?

I can't do that.

If I let my hand go, you'd surely go somewhere. Would it be the strongest knight Lion? or would it be the Misumunto Kingdom's prince McClane? Or is it someone different.

It's not me at least. It's someone other than me. There's also the possibility that it could be the scums who will snatch her.

I can't let you do that.

It's no use.

I can't stand it any longer.

Looking at princess Seria's face, our eyes met. Since I was touching her hair, I see her afraid through her upturned eyes.

It's impossible.

I held princess Seria's shoulders with both of my hands, then attacked her as is, I stole her lips.

A sweet soft feeling was transmitted.

Princess Seria opened her eyes wide, and her surprised body turned stiff.

「!! N—! N—!」

What princess Seria is trying to say doesn't matter. I will do what I want.

I pushed my tongue on her lips invading her mouth. I poked princess Seria's tongue, sucked it up, and entangled it.

We're cold because we were hit by the rain. Princess Seria's lips are cold. But the inside of her mouth is so hot that I'm melting. The heat is melting my reason and turned me to a man.

I was absorbed in sucking that even our breathing became hard, so I separated our mouth once.

「A, a,a,a,」

Princess Seria opens her mouth wide like a goldfish. More than fear and bewilderment, her face shows surprise.

Once again, I kissed her beautifully pink colored lips. This time I entangle her tongue from the beginning and tease it stickily.

Princess Seria's hands move around as we Kiss. Her hand was stroking my back, confirming that there's no resistance, I put my hand on her ass.

When I stroke her from the top of her dress, princess Seria's head finally caught up and began to flail her hand.

It's troublesome if you resist. I separated our mouths, grasped her hand and pushed her down the sofa. I took her hands above her head, then tied it up with a wire to the degree that it doesn't become painful. She can't use her hands with this.

「W-what...」

What? Isn't that obvious?

「I'm going to rape you. I'll take everything from you and make you mine」

I reached her breasts while speaking. It's quite big as expected. The tension is moderate, it's elastic, and massaging it feels soft.

「Hyaaa! S-stop this. I beg of you」

Princess Seria shakes her head while speaking words of refusal. But, that



response is wrong.

The correct response is to shout out with a loud voice and escape with all your power when you're attacked by a man. With such a weak response, it's like you're telling them to attack you.

I buried my face on the nape of her neck and crawled my tongue on the skin wet with rain, it tasted like sweat. I did not forget to caress her chest at the same time.

「Nuu...Stop, I beg of you. This is bad. I want to thank you properly so please think of a different way」

Do you think you'll make my reason come back with such words?

I separate my face, I also separate my right hand that was rubbing her chest. For a moment, there was a face of relief showing from princess Seria.

I lowered my right hand, then caressed her lewd body.

From the abdomen to the navel, and further lower.

The complexion of princess Seria changes at once.

「That's no good! It's an important place, You shouldn't touch that place!!」

「That's true」

Princess Seria shouted.

I know. This is an important place. That's why I will save the fun to the last minute.

I evaded her important place and moved to her waist and thighs.

Princess Seria relaxed as her guard as she was relieved once again, but she noticed that it was a mistake.

「My skirt, wawawa, please wait! You'll see my underwear!」4

I ran my fingers on her thighs to tease her, then I rolled her skirt up little by little. Her beautiful legs become bare.

I pulled the hem of her skirt, then her pink panties were exposed.

Princess Seria wiggles her waist to cover it desperately, but I only see it as inviting.

If you do it like that, it can't be helped.

I silenced princess Seria's mouth once again and moved my hand on her thighs. I run my fingers over her sticky thigh and move it little by little to the top.

「N—N—!!」

When my hand came to touch her panties, her resistance become violent.

On physical build, I'm easily the top, but princess Seria has the upper hand thanks to her magical power. But, oh well, since I restricted her tightly, there's no problem. I naturally know the art of pinning down people without using power.

Since I blocked her mouth, her breathing became rough, princess Seria's face become dyed red.

「Puhaa, haa, haa... Please stop this already...」

When I separate my mouth, she said that with teary eyes. My answer is obvious.

「I won't stop」

I want to enjoy her breasts more, but the dress is obstructing. Her arms are bound...let's cut it.

I pulled out a dagger from my waist and pressed it on her cleavage.

The blood of the men whom I murdered a while ago was sticking on the dagger.

「Hiii!」

The scared princess Seria makes me feel good. Should I threaten her incidentally?

「If you don't want to be in pain, don't resist so much. Behave yourself」

When I said that, I ripped her dress cloth from top to bottom. Finally, I showed the tip of the dagger with the blood.

Well, I don't have to hurt her anyway. I'm doing it by force, but it's not my hobby to beat up. 5 The only pain I engrave is the pain of deflowering.

But the effect seems to be too outstanding that princess Seria shrank completely.

This is bad. I must loosen her.

I began to caress her again. Since she became quiet, her arms that were bound in the carriage were freed by my left hand.

The outset exposed breasts were felt with both of my hands. The skin I stick to are soft and elastic breasts. It's the best massage feeling.

While I was massaging, her small pink colored nipple changed it's color faintly. I flicked it with my finger lightly.

「Hyaau!」

The body of princess Seria trembled. It seems that she's weak on her nipples. As I knead, her small nipples became stiff.

「N, not there. Hau, I feel strange...」

A sweet voice was leaked. She seems to be feeling it. My right hand moved to her pussy and stroked it gently on top of her panties. While that happens, I also stroke her nipples slowly.

「Ahn, don't tease my breasts. ...Hey, please forgive me already. Any further than this is no good」

Even if you say no, princess Seria's resistance is weak. At least she closes her legs to prevent my hand from invading. But that doesn't mean anything.

When I rolled my tongue on her nipples, a trembling reaction is returned. Princess Seria's eyes are glazed.

I removed her panties, and I caressed her small pussy directly. With no

hair, it has a slippery feel. I slid my finger and stroked her gently.

「Fuaaa...My important place is, Nn, being touched...」

Her slit is wet with love nectar. After stroking it for a while, the love nectar increased a little.

With this, we should be able to go to the next stage, I feel for the entrance.

I found it immediately, then I put a single finger slowly.

「Hyaaa, W-what are you doing—Nuuuuuuu!!」

It's just one finger, yet it's squeezing so hard. Princess Seria closed her eyes and is trying to endure the stimulation. I haven't put the first joint yet. I wonder if I can't do it myself? 6

I fiddled around her entrance. After caressing it, it loosened little by little.

「Ah, Ah, Don't, What's this? My voice is leaking out! Ah, Ah, Aah!」

「What's wrong? Does it feel good?」

「I-I don't know. Hyaa!」

It seems she never masturbated. I stopped the simultaneous attack on to her breast but, it would take time before she get used to it.

Because I was bored, I decided to check other places and play with it. This entire body is mine. I must examine every corner.

From her shoulder to her arm, from her arm to her finger, I taste and enjoyed every corner of her young skin. After the arm, her body. The gap from her underarm to her breasts, her navel, her side...

I removed her hand restraints and loosened her upper clothes, I caressed her whole body.

「Nn, aah, I'm being licked, Ahn, I'm dirty」

「I'm marking you as my thing」

「Yaan~ That's」

Her vagina became loose, and the finger buried deep. I put the second joint and her vaginal wall combs back. I looked for a place with good reaction while paying mind to her hymen.

「Hyaa!」

「Here?」

「Ah, inside, finger, moving, I told you not to! Ah, there, hyaa!」

While feeling her vagina closing tightly on my finger, I searched another good place for reaction Her love nectar is overflowing inside endlessly.

I finished capturing her upper body with my tongue, I moved to her lower body. I lifted one of her legs and made my tongue crawl. There was some mud sticking, but I didn't mind it.

「Nnnn...aa! Haa...N, Ah, Ah, Hyaaau!!」

Princess Seria's panting voice echoes in the carriage. Princess Seria became quite docile and is accepting my caress.

Meanwhile, the base of my finger came to enter. I brought my face close to her wet private part thinking that it's about time.

「What a beautiful pussy」

「Noo, Don't look at that place...」

Princess Seria is embarrassed and tries to close her legs, but she doesn't have the power to shut it.

Her pink g-string panties were wet with the dripping love nectar. And her smooth slippery pink meat genitalia can be seen from the other side. This small hole has my finger going in and out.

It's a new pussy that's never been used. I will love it firmly.

I pulled my finger and opened her genital area, I confirmed her hymen properly.

「As expected, you're a virgin」

「Nu, I haven't done it yet」

It seems she's forbidden. I brought my mouth close to it and tasted her immature labia politely.

「Hyaaaaa, don't lick that place!」

Her innocent reaction is irresistible. As I make kissing noise, I continued cunnilingus.

「Aaaaaah, Don't, that, don't! It feels good but please don't!」

It seems that she can feel it.

My tongue invaded her small hole. It's pushed back to the entrance, but I pushed it and licked the insides. Her insides is overflowing with love nectar so I drank it.

「Ah, Ah, Don't, Don't!」

Princess Seria kept speaking some useless ramblings "don't don't" Is she educated that she shouldn't do this until marriage? It's possible in royalty.

Princess Seria's vagina kept on twitching since a while ago. She's finally feeling good. I separate my mouth and caressed her with my hand again.

「Look, You're about to cum」

「Ahn, cumming7... Cumming8?」

Princess Seria tilted her head.

「What, you don't know? Then I'll teach you」

I inserted my finger in her vagina and moved it deeply. I rubbed the points where she had a reaction a while ago. At the same time, my left hand grabbed her breasts and I knead her solid nipples.

「Aaaaaaah, this is amazing, this is amazing! It feels so good, my body, is going crazy! Ah, Aaah, aah!」



Princess Seria is ascending towards climax. Her vagina shuts so hard not letting my finger go, and she's leaking a voice that's not a word from her mouth.

「Look, you're close. Don't endure it」

「Noo, What's this, no, no. Aaaaahn! it feels goood, this, I don't know! This is cumming!？」

「It's close. Surrender yourself to pleasure. When you're cumming say it」

「Ah, cumming!」

My right thumb presses her clitoris that is hidden in her skin then stimulated it.

「Fuaaaa! Not there! I'm feeling numb, Hyaaaa, ah, ah, don't, doooont」

Her words can't be understood. In addition, I sucked her nipples.

「aaaaaaaaaaaaah! Not my breaaast!! Something's coming, my head is going blank」

「That's cumming. Hey, cum!」

I pinched her clitoris tightly.

「Ah, This is, cumming, Cummmiiiiiiing!」

Her body bent greatly and she was convulsing. Her vagina is tightening

and is pressing my finger hard.

Apparently she reached it. Princess Seria breathed heavily for a while, and she was looking above absentmindedly. Her big chest moves up and down matching her breath.

「Haahaa...So this is cumming... Somehow, it feels amazingly good...」

The cutest princess, was muttering that as she was half-naked and discharging love nectar.

1. Trembling ←
2. Just how long will it be before you lose control ←
3. 俺の戦闘はオワタ式戦闘術なのだ。 ←
4. Princess Seria is too pure for this world ←
5. Poor Cathy, she'll be missed, MC found his best partner now ←
5. 自分でしたことはないのだろうか？ ←
7. Ikasete ←
3. Iku ←

## Chapter 11: Princess Seria's Chastity ##

You may be completely immersed in the aftertaste of the climax, but sorry, that's just the preparation phase. Her vagina got pretty loose, I want to do her soon—, while I was thinking of that, princess Seria said something outrageous.

「That's the end right? Could you untie the wire in my arm soon? Uhm... It's embarrassing...」

Princess Seria's head seems to start working again, she blushed at her own unsightly appearance.

However, it's too early to end.

「That's not true. The real thing starts now」

「Eh...?」

I unfastened my belt and took out my cock from the trousers. The cock that has been released from prohibition rose like a tower.

「Kyaa! W-what are you taking out?」

Princess Seria bent backward a little to her surprise.

「Is this your first time seeing one?」

「Err, when I was small my father's... Then, once—. But, it's too big...」

「That's probably true. Someone who gets aroused to their own

daughter is just a pervert」1

「No, it got erect, but not to this...」

Hey, what do you mean by that? Aren't you just a great pervert father? 2  
King, I despise you.

「\*sigh\*, we'll it's fine. Then do you understand what will happen?」

「!! Don't!! Don't!! That's absolutely no good!」

Princess Seria curled herself on the corner of the carriage with her legs closed tightly. With both her arms bound, 3 I put up a knee and separated her from the edge of the sofa.

Apparently she has the proper knowledge. If she wasn't taught and made a child it would be a big problem, it's not that strange.

「It would hurt at first. But I will violate you, so give it up」

I put both of my hands on princess Seria's knees and forcefully opened it.

「Nooooo! Please stop!! Stoop!!」

「Be quiet!」

Pressing down the rampaging princess Seria, I applied my erect cock on her pussy. I removed her panties, then her drenched genital glans was rubbed blending with the love nectar. The feeling of her squishy mons veneris 4

Seeing that scene, princess Seria's face distorted in fear.

「No, please stop it! Impossible, that's impossible. It won't enter!」

「It's not impossible. It would only hurt in the start」

「Noo! That's really impossible. You aren't supposed to do that. I'd do anything else so please stop!!」

「I don't care about that. Also, you may have felt good but I still haven't. So you'll go along with me until I'm satisfied」

Princess Seria screams that she seriously dislike it.

That reaction is fun and makes me want to tease her a lot.

Especially her face dyed in fear when my penis touching her vaginal hole is irresistible. It's a face as if she saw the world ending, her facial expression loosened for a moment when my penis slips over her pussy. Then, when I placed it on her vaginal hole again, she was in fear.

I repeated it several times, then her clitoris got hard. Even she's afraid she can still feel it, wonderful.

The moment I thought that it was the good moment push my waist, I felt a rise in magical power.

「I-I'll use magic! You might die—」

「Do you think I'll let you?」

「Hyaaaaa!!」

I buried my penis with the force of my waist. I stopped once I felt some resistance.

「...Eh? No way, you inserted...」

Her concentration was cut off and her magical power having no shape disperses. She can't use magic in this kind of situation.

「I'll be taking your virginity right now. It's a once in a lifetime moment. Remember this well」

「Eh? Uhm, Eh, Eeeh?」

Princess seria turns her eyes down to her belly as she was confused. What's there is my penis' tip spreading out and was being accepted by her own vaginal hole.

It's the moment where we celebrate her loss of virginity. Look properly.

The erect penis mercilessly pokes and inserts to her small virgin pussy. As I push my penis I felt that I was breaking her hymen. Her intravaginal walls are so hot and sticky. Without hesitation, I pushed it up to the base.

「It hurts!! It hurts!! Wait, it hurts! It huuuuuurts!!!」

「Kuh!」

The part connecting us had red blood flowing. It's the proof that she was a virgin a while ago.

Her vagina just had it's virginity taken away, she's tightening my cock painfully. The vagina's wavy folds entangles my penis, it feels so good that I might ejaculate even if I don't move.

「It hurts... Please stop, it hurts... This is...just cruel...Uuu, hiku5」

Princess Seria cries as I pierced her with my cock. The tears falls down from her cheeks.

I finally did it. I did it. At last, I became one with princess Seria. She's the cutest, her breasts are big, A kind beautiful girl, I thrust my brutal cock and took her virginity. It's the best feeling.

I can feel that my penis is delighted as it's pulsating. 'Hurry up and rampage', it was insisting to smear the insides of princess Seria.

「Uuuu, you're...the worst... This, doing it forcefully, hiku」

「I'm fine being the worst. I'm the lowest among the worst, and I live on the bottom of the ground」

I licked the tears running on her cheeks, it was a bit salty. 6

Princess Seria had calm down when I stopped moving. I can feel her vagina getting used to it. It should be fine now.

「I'll move」

「Fuee? It hurts, it hurts. Don't move, Aaaa!」

I pulled my penis out slowly. Her vagina is sucking up my penis like it's begging for more.

I stopped when I took out half, then slowly inserted it again. Every time I push my penis inside, my glans is rubbed and my waist trembles.

「Aaa! You inserted it again, nnnn, take it out, Please take it out!」

「What are you saying? It's just the beginning. Hey, you move too」

Even though princess Seria is in pain, the sweet appearance mixes with her voice. I attacked her vagina with a monotonous slow movement.

「Nn! ...Haa...Nn!! ...Fuuhaaan! ...N, it hurts...」

Her small vagina tightens around my cock. If I get careless, I might ejaculate immediately.

Princess Seria is enduring the pain with a desperate face. I want to move more intensely, but I'd be a bit more patient.

I kissed princess Seria as I move slowly.

「Nnn!」

Surprised, her vagina tightened for a moment. Incidentally, I stretch my hand on her breasts.,

As expected, the feeling of rubbing this chest feels good. My hand sticks on it and doesn't want to leave the softness.

I knead, and rub it stickily.

「Fuaa, not my breasts. I'll feel good」

When I separate my mouth, that's what she said. Her chest seems sensitive. Did you massage it yourself? If this was natural then it's likely to grow more. 7

Love nectar also increased inside her vagina, so it became easier to move.

「I'll be increasing my pace」



The pace I move my waist was raised gradually.

「Ah, Ah, Ah! Wait, Hyaa! More Slowly」8

Princess Seria desperately trying to endure the stimulation. I sometimes hit a good place then she returns an interesting reaction. It doesn't seem painful to her anymore.

「Ah, there, good! Hyaa! Ah, Ah, Fuaaa!!」

When I changed my angle, her body started trembling. I focused on the same place and rubbed my glans.

「Ah! There, it's amazing there, it's making me tremble, this, this is... sex?」

Why are you asking? It might be another form of sex, but rape is different. The implications are very different.

「Yeah, that's right. Right now you're having sex」

「Ahn! Don't. If I have sex I'll be pregnant with a child, aah! that's no good!」

「Do you hate children?」

「That's not it. Naah! I love children, but right now!」

Even though princess Seria is saying no, but whenever I thrust her vagina heavy breathing leaks out.

「But it feels good isn't it? An unknown man penis' thrust, you can feel it right?」

「I don't know! It hurts, but strangely, I feel good! But, I shouldn't feel good, not unless it's a special person, I don't know!」

She's quite confused. It's understandable.

She was attacked on her journey, betrayed by the knights that were supposed to protect her, a stranger slaughtered them to help her, and right now she's being raped. Even I would say that it's the worst.

「Even if you say no you can feel it right? What a lewd princess」

I further accelerated my piston. Her vagina became slippery that my penis feels good whenever I stroke.

「Yaaa! That's wrong, It's not like that! I'm telling you no but you're not stopping!」

「Even if you say that, but isn't your vagina excreting love nectar as if wanting my penis?」

「Don't say it. It's no good that I feel good! Even though I don't want it. I'm going crazy!」

「Then go crazy. Look, you're going to cum again right? Your pussy is trembling」

「Cum? yes, cum, I'm about to cum. What's this?」

Princess Seria shakes her head saying no.

Did she notice that she's moving her own waist? Even though she

pleads, her waist is moving lewdly.

「I told you that you'll feel good right? I'm about to cum soon too. I'll be releasing it inside your small vagina so accept it all」

I gripped princess Seria's waist and strike my waist with all my strength. I finally piston seriously. My erect penis rampages inside princess Seria's vagina.

「Releasing it inside...? Naaaah! Too intense! Inside, my insides feels amazing!」

「I'll pour my lots of semen inside your womb」

I stuck my cock deep and knock the cervix with my glans.

「Aaaaah! Naa! Aa! Ah, Se-semen?」

「That's right, Semen. Sperm, Semen, seed, 9 It's the seed of a child」

「Semen...!! Don't!! Don't do that! I'll get pregnant!!」

It seems that she knows how child are made. However, her body can't resist. The interior of her vagina is attacked mercilessly.

「That's right, you'll get pregnant. Look, I'm cumming!」

I nailed my waist with all my power. Being squeezed nicely tight by her vagina, the feeling of ejaculation rose up quickly.

「Aaaaa! Don't! Don't poke me so much! Amazing! It's taking me away!!  
Aaah, no, I'm cumming again, Cumming! Cumiiiiiiiing!!!」

Princess Seria's back jumped up with great force. Then, her whole body began to spasm.

The vagina that reached it's second climax, princess Seria squeezes my penis tight. And my glans were pushing against the mouth of her womb.

「I'm going to ejaculate!」

At the same time, sperm runs out my urethra.

*SplurtSplurtSplurt!!* I magnificently threw it inside princess Seria's womb.

「Aaaaaaaa!! Something's coming in!! Somthing hot is coming out!!」

「That's semen. Enjoy it」

I thrust it once again while ejaculating.

「Hyaau!! Dooon't! Semen, I told you not to release it inside!! Yet you came!!」

*dokun dokun* my semen was injected inside and princess Seria's body was trembling.

The princess is finally my thing. I defiled her with my own hands, the indescribable sense of achievement and euphoria is rushing into me.

My semen is overflowing endlessly. My ejaculation lasted very long.

Princess Seria's body is shaking as she was taking it all in her vagina.

For a while until princess Seria settle down, I soaked myself from the aftertaste while connected.

It's a dreamlike event, but the heat that's being transmitted to from my penis tells me that it's not a dream.

The color of sanity returned to princess Seria's eyes eventually.

「Haahaaa, a...What was I...」

「Did you calm down? How was your first time? You didn't look in pain, did my penis feel that good?」

「Eh, Ah...No way I was—」

Princess Seria's face turned pale. It seems like she recalled her own foolishness.

When I pulled out my penis from her vagina, mixed blood, love nectar, and semen flows out.

Princess Seria can't believe the spectacle she's seeing.

「No way...Did you release it inside? Was I pregnant?」

It might be.

「No way, why did this...」

It's because I want to, there's nothing else to say.

「Why am I, that thing...」

I really wonder why. Isn't it because you're easy to drown in pleasure? Or you might be weak against advances. The conclusion, because you're an easy woman.

Princess Seria repeatedly mutters to herself. Despair and and bewilderment appears on her face. Despair for being violated and defiled, the pleasure that she can't control. The complex feelings mixed together that her mind was tortured. Unable to bear it, tears flowed from her eyes.

But, it's still too early to be in despair.

「It's not over yet」

That's right, it's not over yet. My son is still energetic. There might be no more second chance. It's impossible to end it with just one round.

「No! Stay away!」

Princess Seria exclaimed. It's not like a sweet talk like earlier, it was a serious rejection.

「Do not touch me! Don't do strange things to me!!」

It seems I got hated seriously. The beautiful girl who's dress is broken is trembling in fear. I wonder how good it feels if I do her by force.

Since princess Seria's arms are tied up in the carriage, she can't run away easily. But, that's as long as she doesn't use magic.

Princess Seria was in standby, waiting to be able to fire up her magic. If she attacked, it would end already, but I have a countermeasure.

「Go out! Don't approach me anymore!!」

The enraged princess Seria. She's pretending to be tough, but I can see her body trembling. It looks like a small animal before being eaten by a savage beast. Originally, the difference in power is reverse.

「I refuse. I'm not satisfied yet.」

「Please stop this! It should be enough already. I'm grateful that you helped us, but this...is too much...」

Princess Seria speaks in a shaking voice.

「I know that I did a cruel thing. But, I don't intend to stop」

「Why!?!」

「It's not possible to return anymore. I'll only do what I want to do」

「...By all means, can't you hear me out?」

「Yeah」

「Then...I'll attack you. 10 You won't be able to prevent this」

Princess Seria's magical power swell up. Even without your easy to understand threat, I know that I'm no match against you. But――.

「Even with this?」

I pose my dagger. Not to princess Seria, but on the one sleeping on the other side of the sofa, Lululie.

「Wha! Stop that! Lululie has nothing to do with this!」

「I haven't received her gratitude after all. If I get killed as a result of helping you, I tell you that I only helped you for myself」

I only intend to threaten her, I don't plan to really kill you. Also, I helped you because of work, and there was a reward. But, the effect was outstanding.

「Don't do that! Lululie is my friend. Don't kill her!」

「Then subdue your magical power. Then we'll resolve it all」

Princess Seria suppressed her magical power reluctantly while grinding her teeth. Then, she scowled at me.

「You're the worst as expected」

「I know」

Let's continue then if we already reached to an agreement.

1. Hentai ↩

2. Dosukebe ↩

3. I really don't know why was she still tied up, I may have made a mistake on translating the previous chapter ↩



1. The "Mound of Venus" or vulva. ↩
2. Crying sounds ↩
3. It was the taste of a liar ↩
4. "Massaging Chest helps it grow" stuff I guess ↩
5. Motto Yukkuri, can also be interpreted as slower ↩
6. 精子 -Seishi、精液-Seiki、ザーメン-Zamen」 ↩
7. Not in a sexual manner ↩

## Chapter 12: Princess Seria's first time service #

I removed the restraint on princess Seria's hands. Then, she looked at me suspiciously.

「Why did you remove it?」

「You can't move if you're bound right?」

「Didn't you think that I might resist?」

「If you looked at the result outside you know what will happen」

There's more than 20 corpses rolling outside the carriage. She had seen me do that terrible sight, she knows that I'm a sort of person that can kill easily.

Now that I have Lululie as hostage, she has no choice but to obey.

「!! I Under...stand」

Assuming that she's now obedient, we'll continue then. First—

「Strip」

「Eh?」

「I'm telling you to strip. Your panties too of course」

Her dress was torn earlier, the clothed play was exiting, but I want to enjoy every corner of her bare body.

Since I got the rights to order her around, it's a waste if I didn't use it.

「...Yes」

Princess Seria stood up, then her torn dress fell straight down.

Damn! I expected her face to be distorted in humiliation while taking it off.

Suddenly, it's just her pink panties and white stocking remaining. Princess Seria moved her panties, then stopped.

「Hurry up」

「Uu...」

She slowly removed her panties. She pulled the white thread from the crotch, then pulled it out from her legs in order.

「I took it off」

Princess Seria seems embarrassed as she hides both her chest and crotch with her hands. Even though you let me see more than that, what are you getting embarrassed for?

However, no matter how many times I look at it, it's beautiful.

Her wet silver hair is sparkling and the texture becoming transparent. Her petite body and innocent face, no matter how you look, it's of a child, but her big swelling breasts and her firm waist already bringing out her adult charm. Her ass is a bit humble, but when I thought that my fat penis screwed in there, there's no odd sense of immorality.

「What are you getting embarrassed for? Since you were born a beautiful woman, flaunt it more」

「Nu...yes...」

Princess Seria removed her hands, then the ripe bust and lewd legs were exposed. Her pink nipples turned red and was standing erect. Her crotch where I let it out a while ago has something overflowing.

Her figure that exceeds something that is called a work of art is being ogled at, princess Seria's face was dyed red.

I also took off my clothes.

Weapons, armor, dark device, medicine, traps, and other various stuffs, the total weight of the equipment mountain was over 20kg, were prepared in the entrance of the carriage.

Finally, I put the dagger on the top of the hill to screen princess Seria.

When I turned around after finishing preparations, the princess was pulling slightly.

「Good, come here and squat down」

I extend my leg while sitting on the couch. Then, I made princess Seria squat in between my legs. Exactly in front of the princess' eyes is my cock.

Princess Seria is glued to the cock gleaming with various liquids.

「Service it」

「Err...What should I do?」

If I told you to service on this pose, there's only one thing to do. It's either do a handjob, or hold it on your mouth, or sandwich it in your breast...huh? There's a lot. Should I let her do it in order.

「First, stroke it with your hand.」

Princess Seria timidly poked my glans. I grabbed her hand and made it hold my erect penis. Princess Seria holds my penis with both of her hands then strokes it gently back and forth.

「Like this?」

「Yeah, grasp it harder...Yes, that's right」

She's rubbing my penis clumsily. Her soft touch feels good, but honestly, it's not enough. Well, let's think of this as practice.

She sometimes get surprised with my cock twitching, but princess Seria moves her hand back and forth with all her might.

「Uu...It's sticky. and there's something coming out from the tip... Pee?」

The remaining semen and pre-cum was coming out from the glans. The quantity is small, but it fell on princess Seria's hands.

「That's not pee. It comes out when I feel good. That's right...lick it」

「Eh?」

Her eyes widened as if she saw something unbelievable. Was the hurdle too high for the princess?

「I'm telling you to lick it with your tongue. What's wrong? You can't do it?」

「That's because...this is where you pee right?」

「So what? I'm telling you to do it. If you don't like it then I'll plunge it inside your mouth down there」

I stimulate her crotch with my foot, then her waist became loosened. Since she got it already, I return my foot.

「.....Understood」

She reluctantly brought her face close, then closed her eyes tight, then extended her small tongue with all her best, then licked up my glans.

An electric current run up through my spine. It feels so good.

「The smell is terrible...Is this fine?」

「More. Lick the back of the head and up to the base of my penis carefully」

「...Yes」

Princess Seria seems to hate it deep inside but she began to lick. Since she doesn't understand which is the glans and the penis, I taught her one by one.

Princess Seria began to lick the penis that was mixed with blood, love nectar, and sperm carefully.

「Yeah, that's good. It now feels good」

「\*Lick\*...Like this...Is this fine?」

「Yeah, men are pleased if you do it that way. Remember that.」

「...Yes」

She doesn't seem convinced, but she'll remember it. She felt good from the cunnilingus after all.

「Hey, move your hands」

She licks the glans and squeeze to the base like a candy. She looks like she's used to it, she doesn't resist from licking anymore.

Still, the combination of the neat beautiful girl and my penis is dangerous. It makes me excited.

「Next. Put the tip inside your mouth」

「Like...this?」

The frightened princess Seria asked.

「Don't bite it. Move your tongue while sucking it with your mouth. —— You can do it right?」

When I showed her that I was looking at Lululie, the flustered princess Seria nodded.

She resolved herself, then put my penis in her mouth. The swollen glans

was wrapped in heat as it was swallowed by her beautiful pink lips.

「Ok, Good girl. Move your tongue just like that. Keep doing it until you're used to it」

I combed princess Seria's beautiful silver hair. It feels like I'm patting a good child. That girl is naked and is sucking my penis right now. It's really a good child.

Princess Seria sticks to my glans, and moves her tongue awkwardly. My glans' center is licked equally.

She seems to be in pain and is breathing heavily, but she doesn't separate her mouth.

When she do it this way, somehow I feel that she's greatly improving. Actually, the princess stubbornly sucks my penis, she doesn't think of me as somebody1, but that's it.

Then, when I pat her head, princess Seria's rough breathing calm down.

「Then, next. Move your mouth back and forth. Make sure that your lips tighten my rod as you suck. Okay?」

Princess Seria nodded while having the cock inside her mouth.

She held my rod with both of her hands, then held the tip with her mouth, then moved back and forth.

*Chupa Chupa* she's making a small noise, but she's sucking the penis with all her might. She's stimulating the glans gently, it feels good.

It's still clumsy and very unrefined, but it's surely a fellatio.

In fact, this child suits elegance.



「Oh, it feels good. Continue just like that」

「\*Chyuru\*...\*Chu\*...\*Chupa」

Princess Seria follows my directions obediently. Her jaw must be tired by now, but she continued her fella without complaints.

I want to do it violently a bit, but since she's obedient, I'll let her do it till the end.

To be honest, the stimulation isn't quite satisfactory, but the pleasure of training a gentle beautiful girl makes me happy that my sense of ejaculation is rising up.

However, I want another push.

「Good, you can take it out」

When I said so, princess Seria separated her mouth and she was breathing heavily. She's tired as expected.

「It's...not the end isn't it?」

「Yeah, I haven't cum yet after all.」

「What should I do next?」

She finally began to ask herself. She's really a devoted princess.

「Next is paizuri...sandwich my penis in your breasts and move like earlier」

「With my breasts?」

「With you breasts. Since it's big. It's a waste if you don't use it」

「Err...I'll try」

Princess Seria lifted her nice breasts with both of her hands, then my penis is placed in the alluring gap.

It has a different feeling from her mouth, my penis is being wrapped up with a soft feeling.

「Yeah, amazing. This child is doing a paizuri...」

「N, My breasts are rubbing...」

The combination of her childlike face and big breasts is more fiendish than I imagined.

While clumsily shivering, princess Seria began to slowly move it up and down

Matching her movements, her breasts shakes greatly.

On the skin colored valley, my grotesque penis is appearing and disappearing.

An absurd destructive power.

「Is this fine?」

Princess Seria asked with her cheeks blushing. My answer is obvious.

「Yeah, it's perfect」

「Got it」

When She said that, princess Seria began to move her breasts wholeheartedly. She puts force from her hand to her breasts sandwich little by little. The pressure of her breasts strengthened, it feels quite good.

「N, N, How is it?」

「It feels good. You seem to be having fun」

「N, that's not, true. It's an order, it can't be helped so I'm doing it」

「It's an order? Considering all of that, you're doing pretty well」

「I'm not getting enthusiastic. Ahn!」

The behavior of princess Seria is odd.

She leaked a voice when her nipples hit my abdomen a while ago.

And now, she's actively rubbing her nipples.

No matter how you look at it, this princess feels it through her breasts.

You think I won't notice?

Do you want to say that you're not feeling it even your nipples are standing up?

Your body must be burning hot. Your skin is flushed, and you're breathing feverishly.

However, your pride doesn't allow you to admit. Is that it?

「Haa, haa, haa, is it not done yet?」

「N, I wonder. combine it with fella I'll cum with that」

「Fella」

「Fellatio. When you hold my penis in your mouth. That one.」

「Nn, got it」

She stuck on my glans without hesitation this time.

My rod is being wrapped up in her breasts, and the head is being sucked up by her mouth. Her movements is even bolder than just a while ago.

Sense of talent isn't it?

「\*churu\*...\*jyuu\*...\*jyuru\*...\*jyururu\*」

「Ah, good. You're good. I'm about to cum soon」

When I pat her head telling her she did well, she seemed to be bashful as she was embarrassed.

My sense of ejaculation rises quickly.

「I'll cum. Take it in your mouth」

I stopped patting her, then held her head and forced my penis in. Princess Seria's tongue keeps licking the tip of my penis.

「Ejaculating!」

I ejaculated inside her mouth as is.

*Splurt Splurt* my semen dashed out and filled the mouth of princess Seria.

「N—!」

Princess Seria raised her voice in surprise, but I didn't separate her face.

I kept holding her head until the last drop.

「Fuu... You did well. Don't spill it」

I made her face up and pulled my penis. Some of the semen spilled from her lips like drool. Princess Seria doesn't move as she doesn't know what to do.

「Open your mouth and show the semen」

I grasped her lower jaw to open her mouth. A thick, white liquid fills the inside of her mouth. It's filled with the smell of semen.

「I let out a lot again. Good. Drink it all. If it's hard to drink, mix it with saliva and drink it」

「N—!？」

As soon as she hear my order, princess Seria opened her eyes wide and shook her head.

「You don't want it? Let' see...Then pour it on Lululie. Her mouth and breasts would be fine. Oh, that's right. If you put it in her pussy, she might get pregnant」

As soon as she heard that, princess Seria put both her hands against her mouth and closed her eyes. Then, just as ordered, *gulp, gulp* was the sound of her throat.

「*cough, cough*...I drank it all...Uu...」

Princess Seria opened her mouth to let me check inside. The semen from a while ago disappeared.

For the time being, I pat her head and told her that she did well.

I. お前何様だと思わなくもないが

## Chapter 13: Princess Seria's cumming game #

「How was it? Your first taste of semen?」

「Err, Uhm...」

「Tell me honestly. If you like it, then I'll let you drink to your heart's content」

「Hii! It's bitter, it stinks, it's syrupy...It's really difficult to drink」

「I see, is that so? Was it bad? By the way, you felt it from your breast a while ago right?」

Saying so, I raised her breasts.

「Ahn!...That's not...True」

Princess Seria averted her eyes while denying.

「Is that so? I can see your nipples standing though」

「You're, mistaken. ...Please don't touch it」

This time, I pushed her nipples with my finger. I grind and fiddled it, then her reaction gradually changed.

「Nnnn...There, don't touch it so much」

「Where is 'there'?」

「Uhm...my, nipples」

「Why I can't touch it?」

「That is...It's embarrassing...」

Princess Seria almost cried on my sadistic questions.

— I want to bully her more.

「N, What are you...?」

I lifted princess Seria's lap and hold her legs open. I hugged her from behind and extend my hand on her chest.

「Prove it to me that you're not feeling it from your breasts. If you can endure this, then I'll believe you」

I began to slowly and carefully rub her breasts.

「Hyaau! That's, nnn!」

I adjust the power of my palm so I can play with her to the degree that it doesn't hurt

Other than the touching feeling, it's interesting to see her make a reaction easily.

「What's wrong? Since you can't feel it there's no problem right?」

「That's, ahn, besides, how long?」

「I'll stop if I get satisfied」

「That's impossible!」

「Then do you admit? You're a lewd girl that feels good when you



serviced my cock earlier」

「That's not...true」

It seems that there's still pride. She denies it with a vexing voice. Well, Cathy would be joyous for this shameful title.

「Then, let's do this. I will only attack your chest from now on. I don't care what you do, but make me cum. The first who makes the other cum wins. If you beat me, then I will end this」

If it was other women, it's a condition that they can't win. But this child may be able to do anything.

Princess Seria was lost in thought. She was able to make me cum a while ago. Based on the criteria, can she endure it? She's probably simulating if there's a winning chance.

That's right, she's imagining herself servicing me to make me cum or she herself would cum. Surely, her body starts to ache. She doesn't know that she already fell for my trick.

「Hauuu... I understand. I will accept that challenge」

It seems that she was able to win in her delusion. Her red cheeks becomes redder than before.

「Is that so? Then, let's start. Do your best」

It was the signal of the game.

I gently massaged the chest of princess Seria. I didn't touch her nipples yet. I'll wait till her sexual excitement rise.

Princess Seria bent her body a little and extends her hand on the cock on my crotch. My son who's docile as he just released a while ago is rubbed by her fingertips

「You can go stronger」

「Nm, composure」

「Rather than composure, I want more stimulation」

There's still some modesty on princess Seria's manner of hand. It's by no means bad. But, speaking frankly, it's no match.

She doesn't seem to want to change her way. Do you plan to make me cum with your hand? Paizuri is out of the question, do you think you would win by sealing off fellatio? 1

「But, n, it became big」

「It's expected. You can suck it again, if you'd like, you can use your pussy too」

「!! I don't know such a thing!」

While exchanging a few words, both of us were slowly raising each other.

I moved my fingers, then I felt a point from her soft breasts. Even though it's big, it's sensitive, it's worth the work.

「Nnn, your hand moves lewdly...」

「But, it feels good right? Your pussy is drooling again」

Princess Seria's pussy where I put it in had it overflowing again. It entangles in my penis on the bottom and becomes a lubricant.

Princess Seria's hand became stickily polluted, then she stroke my penis.

However, she seems to be paying attention to something else, so her power is weak

「That's, Hyauu, your fault. You, let out a lot after all」

「that's because it felt good. It was the best so far so I was glad. Have more confidence」

I didn't think that she would squeeze me twice so far. I would run out of ammo after the next one ends.

「NN...just how many did you do so far? Hau, you're the worst as expected. You.」

Was it a slip of tongue? princess Seria's voice had anger in it. She implies it with the power of her hands that's grasping my penis.

Huh? Even though she's angry it feels better than earlier. What does it mean?

「Even though you're shaking your head and calling me the worst, you're beginning to do it without consent」

「Still, you can just, nnn, go out with them. Don't you think it's bad?」

「I'm not going out with anyone. But, well, I think it's bad. You may have someone you like too. Even so, I have no intention to stop.」

Cathy isn't a girlfriend but a sex friend. My heart is devoted to princess Seria. Although my lower body isn't devoted at all.

「Then why? Why are you doing this to me?」

「Didn't you said it already? It's because I'm the worst」

「That's not it, what I want to hear is your reason! Aaahn!」

Since she's too persistent, I rubbed her chest strongly. The main point is understood already, so I'll let her know her standpoint.

「My breast, suddenly, nnn, stronger... That's, my nipples, don't touch it...」

「My reason is. because I can't endure it anymore, nothing else」

That's just it. I came here because of work. I intended to repay the favor, I had no intention to attack.

However, my reason was cut completely. And the result is this current situation.

「Y-you're, Hau, saying that you can't endure it and attacked a woman」

「That's it」

There's no room for excuse, the wrong one is me. However, I as a human that's living in the underworld isn't bound by law have no path to return to.

For me, returning means death. If I can apologize even for a moment, I would befall on all the sins I've committed until now. If so, there's only

one place I will arrive at.

「Why, nnn! Even though you did wrong, if you say that」

「That's the nature of men. I don't intend to make excuses. Also, I'm not an innocent human. Once I commit a sin, I'll carry it to the end」

That's why I decided to make princess Seria mine. I will do everything for that sake.

「That's absurd. aaah!」

「I know what's logical and not. Incidentally, I know what's moral. But that's just it. It doesn't matter to me. Are you okay with that? If this continues, I would win」

From the outer circumference to the top, I squeezed her breasts. When I peeked at the top, there's a point that's seemingly rising from desires. But, I didn't touch it yet. I won't touch it. It might end if I touch it.

「Naaaa! Why's my breasts, why can it feel it so much?」

Princess Seria curled her back, grasping my penis while enduring it desperately. Oh, this might be nice.

「What's wrong? You're giving up already? If you're giving up then tell it immediately. If you do, I'll insert it again」

「Not yet, nn, not...yet」

When princess Seria said that, a slight magic power rose up. I was

cautious for an instant, but I realized that it's not an offensive magic. If anything, it's the reverse. It's a wave that heals her body.

I was hesitating whether I'd stop it, but I was interested on what she intends to do so I weakened my caress to see how things are.

The magic accumulated on princess Seria's hands and heat flowed into my penis. At the same time, a terribly pleasant feeling attack my waist without my permission.

「Uoooooooo! What's this! Feels great!」

I raised my voice instinctively. The stimulation exceeds Cathy's fella, her small hand is stimulating my pulsating son.

I never knew this magic!?

It can cause me to ejaculate in an instant. Because I knew she's about to do something I was barely able to endure it, but If I was careless I would've ejaculated. All of my composure was blown away with just one move.

I won't lose here, I kept rubbing her breasts then pinched her nipples.

「Fuaaaaaaaa! My nipples, amazi, aaaaaa!」

Princess Seria's magic scattered. However, my son doesn't have the room to spare. I'll finish this quickly.

I turned my face from the side then sucked on her breast. I rolled my tongue on her small erect nipples while sucking.

「Aaaaaa, don't suck my breast! It's coming, not yet!」

She said that she can still go on, but the moment I attacked her nipples her reaction changed.

As expected, this child is sensitive on her breasts. Among them, her nipples in particular are sensitive. They said that those with small breasts are much more sensitive, but this child is sensitive even with big breasts.

I bit her standing nipples with my teeth.

「Aaaaaaaah, Cumiiiiiiiiing!!」

*gush* her pussy blew a tide even though I didn't touch it. Princess Seria was trembling as she curled on her knees.

She's certainly exhausted.

I won, but it was an unexpectedly close battle. Is it the evidence that I take magic too lightly? It might have been effective if I had no resistance, but I was stronger.

「Haahaa, it's my win」

「A...that's...」

Princess Seria released her hand from my penis before she collapsed.

「Oops」

I supported her by catching the center then slowly let her down. It became the posture where she sticks out her ass.

「Even though I told you no. I have to stop this... Even though I thought I won't lose...

It seems she's crying on her loss. Are you really that shocked that you lost?

That time you want to forgot that you're doing naughty things but, As expected I'm not so insensitive. 2 Let's carry it out.

For the time being, let's rub her back and start a conversation.

「That was close. What was that magic from a while ago?」

That magic earlier made my son rage. Furthermore, that's not all. My balls that's almost out of ammo began to swell again, and my penis got slightly bigger. If such magic was used on a ordinary man, he'll become a savage beast and will attack at random.

「Hiku...It's a kind of healing magic, it's a secret from the royal family. Since I learned that you can use it on men while having sex, I thought I would be able to... But...It was no good」

「Is that so? So you don't know the specific details. Well, it had an awesome effect. But, don't use that anymore. It's too dangerous」

Even if it's a magic that's passed on the successor, if used poorly, the reason of men might be blown away. If used on someone with unique fetish, the result would be disastrous.

「Yes. It's insignificant after all...」

「No that's not it, the effect was too much」

Well, it's fine.



Rather than that, let's hurry up and continue. Hurry up!

1. フェラも封じて勝てるとでも思っているのだろうか？ ←
2. さすがにそれを言うほど無神経ではない

## Chapter 14: Rampaging lust ##

「Now then, you do remember the contents of the game right?」

「...Yes. I lost, my breasts can feel it lewdly, and we'll continue if I admit」

「...did that happen?」

「Yes, I admit that my breasts felt good when I serviced you」

Huh? Err, the princess Seria feeling it from her paizuri is cute, groped her contents1...That's right, we had a game.

So, since she actually came with her breasts, we proved that she's a totally lewd girl.

I won as I wasn't thinking of her pussy.

「Come to think of it, that happened. But do you really have to be that shocked? Anyone can feel it if their boobs are rubbed」

Other than reaching climax, feeling it isn't something to be embarrassed at. It's merely a physiological phenomenon

「I should've stopped you there. Because you can't stop yourself, I have to stop you...2」

Oh, was it for my sake? But that's wrong. I didn't say that I won't stop for today and will tomorrow. To be honest, I still hadn't decided what to do after this, but the option of abducting and confining princess Seria Rises.

But, oh well, I don't have time to worry about others.

「I accept your feelings. However, that's impossible. I'll make you mine. Be obedient and have sex with me」

Let's deal with my raging son first. I never thought that that it would fully recover this time, no, it's awakened.

I pushed my penis on the sticking out ass from the behind of princess Seria. I move it up and down tracing her dripping wet slit.

「Ah...In the end you still won't stop don't you?」

「It can't be helped since you made it difficult with your magic earlier. Since I can still continue, get ready」

「That's...」

Princess Seria's face looked at her rubbed crotch and opened her eyes wide, she looks at my stiff erect penis like a fearful thing.

「It's bigger than before... That's...impossible...」

I don't know if it's the influence of her magic or something, but my son has a bigger size than usual. My glans got big, the rod has visible blood vessels pulsating. What kind of prank made this transformation? Can I turn this back?

While worrying about it, princess Seria flashed something and opened her mouth.

「——That's right! My hand! I'll use my hand.」 If it's no good, then my mouth! My breast! That's why let that one off」

「Nope. I want to go violent inside your vagina right now. And your

magic earlier is to blame. If you don't want it then I'll do Lululie instead. Other than that it's a no」

Isn't that right?

You forcefully made my penis go *bakibaki*<sup>3</sup> and *panpan*<sup>4</sup> after all.

It's on it's best condition. Then, in front of me is the best beautiful girl. Outside choices does not exist.

If such a man exists, I'll respect him from the bottom of my heart.

「Don't lay your hands on Lululie! I'll be your partner...」

Princess Seria spoke in a tearful voice again, She closed her thighs, sandwiched my penis and seduced my cock. She doesn't even know interracial sex, she probably thought of it. Do you really hate me laying my hand on Lululie?

Since Lululie is also a beautiful girl, I want to eat her too but, I dismissed that thought and will overlook it today.

「Then, satisfy me. I'm almost at my limit too. We'll begin」

I gripped princess Seria's ass and aimed at her vaginal entrance. I just came in a while ago, but right now, it's dripping with semen and twitching and wriggling as if longing for a dick.

「Please. Please...be gentle」

「Sorry, that's impossible」

「Hyaaaaa!!」

I pierced her in one go. I can't endure it any longer. Full burst from the beginning.

「Wait! It hurts! It really hurts!」

「...Ha, hahahahahaha, amazing, what's this! What's this!!」

My penis that repeatedly endured earlier became sensitive like never before. The moment I thrust in her tight loli pussy, a pleasure I've never experience before flicks my bounds of reason.

My waist can't stop.

The vagina of princess Seria is so hot that I'm gently melting away. The folds of her vagina sticks to my penis completely, it's packing tightly and squeezing hard.

I'm being attacked by an illusion that my penis is melting. She doesn't even know herself how far it would release<sup>5</sup> Princess Seria feels pain while I feel pleasure, everything's becoming mixed and everything is surging. <sup>6</sup>

I further accelerated my waist.

「It huuuuuurts!! Noooo! Stop! please, Stooooop!」

「hahahahaha, It's amazing! My waist doesn't stop!!」

I might discharge anytime. I want to let out soon, but the feeling of wanting to taste this pleasure more is conflicting.

There's no fragment of worrying about princess Seria remaining.

「It hurts, noooooom stoop! You're ripping it out! You're ripping my crotch apart!! Take it out!! Please take it out<sup>7</sup>」

Princess Seria tries to crawl for escape, but I just grabbed her hips and pulled it back.

Who's going away? I'll thrust until you break. I'll fill your womb with my sperm, even if I can't move nor stand up, I'll continue.

「Hahaha, You can't run. Hey, push out your waist more! Feel more! Feel me!」

「Nooooooo! It hurts! I'm breaking! Save me Lululie! Save me!!」

Princess Seria extends her hand and ask for Lululie's help. However, Lululie doesn't react and is sleeping quietly. She was made to sleep using magic. She won't wake up with a noise of this degree.

*panpanpan* a rhythmic sound echoes in the carriage.

「It huuuuurts! Pleasee! I'll do anything! I'll do anything so please return your sane self!」

「What are you saying? I'm sane. You should enjoy it too!」

*Paan* I thrust and inserted hard. Her ass shakes in wave, and the mixed liquid of red blood was scattered on the connection. The color of blood is thickening, it's probably because she began hemorrhaging. She was a virgin a while ago after all, if I do her this violently, it can't be helped.

「Nooooooo! Stop this already! Forgive me! Lululie open your eyes! Save me! Someone save me!!」

There's no help. The only people here are the two of us. Lululie is asleep,

and the others are just corpses on the outside.

The previous road has been blocked by a landslide, and in the first place there's a heavy rain. There's no one who would whimsically pass through this mountain path. They would stop somewhere and take shelter. Even if someone comes, I know that they will make a noise if they found the corpse. That's right, there's no one here so there's no problem.

「No one's coming. No one will come to help you. Just scream as you're getting violated by the beast of me!」

「Nooooooooo!」

I don't even know if I had endured ejaculating or I already let it out. I just earnestly move my waist asking for pleasure.

I want to hear the screaming voice of princess Seria nearer, so I held her thin arms and raised it.

「Aaaaaaa, Deep, this position is deep! My stomach is being pierced with your penis! It hurts! I'm breaking!! I'm breakiiiiing!」

Princess Seria cries as I forcefully curved her posture. Supporting her small body, I made my knee a bed and penetrated her with my wicked cock. Sweat gushes from the whole body, then they fly around every time I thrust.

「Dooont, don't do thiiiiis!! Your hitting deep inside me! Even though it hurts! My insides feels strange!!」

「Hahaha! Can you feel the lewd thrusts on your pussy and your breasts sticking out?」

「Aaaaahn, I can feel it! My breasts are okay, but my insides are being

turned upside down, my head's going blank! Even though it hurts, I'm about to cum!!」

「Then cum. Cum on my penis that you love!」

「Nooooooooo!!!!!!」

When she made a considerably huge scream, her vagina is trembling and convulsing. It was squeezing so hard that it began to pulse wanting to take semen.

「Aaah, it's here! It's coming! It's coming!!」

I finally reached my limit too. A never before experienced feeling of extra-large ejaculation has welled up. My penis ejaculated and is rampaging inside her vagina.

Princess Seria's inside, no, I'm delighted that I let it out inside Seria

「Aaaaaaa!! Cumiiiiiiing!!」

「Ooooooooo!! I'll cum, I'm cumming Seria! Inside Seria!!」

I pulled Seria's arms, and thrust my waist in. I'll never let it go. Like he'll you'll escape.

*Byuu, Byuu, byuuuuu* my firehose ejaculation began. 8

「Nooooooooooo!!」

「Amazing, this doesn't stop!!」

「Inside, a hot stuff again, it's still going on!!」



*Byubyu* my semen is being shoot on her womb violently.

「Amazing! It's still coming out!!」

「Naaaaaa, Inside! My insides are already full!! It doesn't stop! Stop it! Stop iiiit!!」

The small 14-year old uterus is satisfied, and the semen that didn't fit flows backward to her vagina. It searched for an exit, then flowed from the connection.

My penis is pushed back by the rising pressure.

「Ooooh! It's overflowing! Look, Seria, Look at this. It's an amazing scene!」

「Nooo. Don't look. Don't look where you cum」

「It's too late. The place where you cum and the place where you felt good is revealed. Look, Look!」

「Noooo! Don't move! It hyuursh! I can't anymore, It's impossible already! aaaaaaaa!」

After Seria's body jumped remarkably when my penis gave the final thrust, she already lost movement in exhaustion. It seems she fainted.

My penis finally stopped discharging sperm.

I slowly lay down Seria and removed my penis. Then, my semen gushed out vigorously.

Semen mixed with blood flowed out from her open vagina.

The quantity is abnormal. Even if I endured and piled it up, it shouldn't be that much. It exceeded the quality of human's.

But, even with that amount, my son isn't withering yet. It's to the degree that when I shake it finally returned to red zone at most 9

It's not over yet.

I wonder what should I do next, I looked at the fainted Seria that curled up like a baby.

First of all, I removed the semen flowing out, then I wiped Seria's legs with the torn dress. When I pressed on her stomach it made a sudden sound as it overflowed.

Furthermore, I put my finger in to scoop out the excess. Since she fainted, her resistance is weaker now, but her vagina closed shut. There's no broken appearance even I ran wildly earlier. Her bleeding seems to have settled too. As expected, people with high magical power are strong.

When I inserted another finger to expand, when I looked at it, her pink colored insides of her vagina lost its stopper and a syrupy liquid gushed forth. All of this is my sperm. This isn't just an oozing level anymore. It's really an incredible amount.

That was quite painful. Even if more ten men ganged rape her it won't reach this way. Seria's body is still immature, moreover this isn't the play that's done in the first experience.

「...Hiku...Uu...」

When I finished scraping it out of her, I heard a sobbing voice.

When raised my gaze, Seria was crying with hollow eyes. It's a wonderful rape eyes.

「You woke up? Then, I'll continue」

「Hiiii!」

Seria tries to run away, but her body doesn't seem to move as she dictates. She's crawling like a dog, then directed her ass here.

Then, I'll take it without reserve.

「Nooooooooo!」

I inserted it through doggy style just like a while ago. I held her hips so she can't escape, *Panpan* I moved my waist.

Thus, I continued to rape her to my heart's content. After I let it out several times, my reason came back.

1. それをネタにイジっていて ←
2. Seria is really a good girl ←
3. Sound of cracking one's knuckles ←
4. Bulging/bursting ←
5. どこまでが自分でどこからが彼女か分からない。 ←
5. 、何もかもがないまぜになって押し寄せてくるかのようだ ←
7. Well, you brought your own doom princess ←
8. I just thought that firehose would be funny, the real one is 放水する - water discharge ←
9. せいぜい振りきっていたメーターがようやくレッドゾーンまで戻ってきた程度である ←

Chapter 15: Thus, the shadow began to move.

At last, my reason returned.

The heavy rain has stopped already, then the sky starts to darken.

God knows how many shots I did to Seria, the amount, I splashed on her unable to settle down. 1 She's currently on top of my lap turning sideways. It's not inserted.

Although, Seria won't be aware if I have sex with her. I don't know whether she still conscious.

「I did it...」

I ended up doing it. Midway, my nature slept on the bottom and my brutal beast rampaged.

That was what I wished that time. That time I wished for a superpower and rape, looking at the scene, I remembered.

Furthermore, what's that disgraceful sight.

My character clearly changed midway. The old me— is just an ordinary high school student. Super embarrassing.

I said that I was an out of sight human, that looks like a dark character, would they find out that it was just an act? With this, I'm just an embarrassing chuunibyou guy.

A—A—A...Ha.

I had experienced this same failure once in the past.

My partner was Cathy. I lost my sanity from the recoil of the invisibility and ran wild that time. And when I noticed, the Cool Beauty Cathy Senpai

turned to a masochistic hentai. I didn't know what happened.

I took responsibility and she's now my sex friend.

Seria eyes looked like Cathy's. I don't think I have to worry about it for now, but in the future, support will be necessary.

Seria's eyes lost its light, sometimes sobbing leaks and she's trembling. It's natural. She's a girl that just became 14 years old. If she was raped, it's impossible to be not shocked.

No matter how she disliked the feeling, this penis kept thrusting her2, rather, she's a person with strong spirit. She did some counterattacks midway.

But, it's also possible that it carved fear and pain,

Fear is a chain that strongly binds people. Humans who had it engraved in their heart can't defy the other company anymore.

After that is just taking time to dominate them.

I, whose mind came back should think about this.

I accomplished the request of master, then somehow I made Seria mine.

First, let's make today's attack incident clear.

In this case, this was a kidnap for ransom, and the assailants were dressed well. In addition, even an adventurer joined them, I'm certain who's the employers. I can only think of their true purpose isn't money but to detain Seria.

The employer's aim is to interfere the exchange with Misumunto Kingdom.

They dislike to have an exchange with Misumunto Kingdom the most, the one who raises deed of arms using the war is the Will Gantt marquis house. If the war disappears the power of their house weakens. And this is the territory of Will Gantt's house. I hardly have a doubt.

But when that happens, master's request's contradiction would be born. Master's request is to guard Seria. My guess is it would only be on the direct level of risk. I only agreed to keep her secure this time.

Should I think that the enemy this time is a favorite? In fact, I who is guarding is much more dangerous to Seria.

Besides, I'm curious since they used forced methods. Is there a reason for Will Gantt to forcibly secure a single person which is Seria? If so, then there's a possibility that there's another enemy.

No matter how I think I can't reach certainty. Let's resume master's request.

Aside from that, my problem is how do I make Seria my thing?

There are several choices, but I think I'll return Seria as is.

First, surrendering and running away is out of the question. It's obvious that that master would have a hard time than me getting caught and die, but most importantly, Seria would be unobtainable.

Though the idea of kidnapping Seria and keep her as a pet is exciting, we would be found out immediately so that's rejected.

It's possible to send her to the Misumunto Kingdom, but I don't want to entrust Seria to that disgusting prince McClane. Do you think you'll be able to touch even her hair? It's good if you just wait in the fort for eternity.

Therefore, through process of elimination, I decided to adapt the plan where I would forbid her to speak and send her back to the kingdom. I'd have her herself on her own room while I continue my investigation.

「Oi, are you listening?」

「...uu,...yes...What is it?」

Seria was weakened, but she gave a firm reply. Her body doesn't move, but her eyes looked this way. It's fine if it's just a conversation.

「I want to talk about the future, but how much do you understand from the situation?」

「...Err, we're attacked...And you helped me?...But you did horrible things to me. It hurts, but it feels good, but it really hurts...Also I might have a baby...but, no good... Ah, you're going to do it again?」

She's not okay at all. She's calling out to me as if she's speaking to my penis, I'm certain that's how she perceive. In relation to the rape, even though she doesn't like it, her body doesn't seem to move. Royal Family, do your sex education properly.

「That's a charming proposition. But that's not it, did you know anyone else about the dead people outside?」

「Ah...Yes, You're going to hold a funeral? That's bad...」

「I'm talking about them trying to kidnap you. —Well, are you okay with it? Do you even understand why are you being aimed at?」

「I'm sorry, I'm not too familiar with politics...」

「That's your answer as expected. You're famous as a prodigal daughter after all」

「Uu...I'm ashamed」

I think your current appearance that's covered in semen is much more embarrassing.

However, she really don't know.

「What's the purpose of your travel to Misumunto Kingdom?」

「We were invited to a party by the Misumunto Kingdom's second prince McClane. Father said that it is to strengthen the exchange」

This was expected. They intend to give her as bride. Furthermore, it's that disgusting narcissist prince's place? King's eyes must be bad.

「Cancel that. Don't approach McClane. It's an order.」

「...Can I hear out the reason?」

I have to make her stop asking. 3 My answer was obvious.

「I don't like him」

「!!...I understand」

There was a mix of bloodlust for a little while, but she became obedient. It's a good thing.

I'll present rough information with this. Then I'll put it in action after. I lay down Seria on the empty sofa.



「Ah...」

「You can't move right? Sleep for a while」

「What about you?」

「I'll prepare to send you back to the castle」

「Are you going to send me back!?!」

Seria raised her voice surprised. She was like a corpse a while ago, but she lifted her body in surprise.

「It's obvious. What do you think would happen?」

「Err, I thought that you would kidnap me...」

And spend everyday drowning in lust? I want to do it if possible.

「Stop that kind of thinking. Since it's almost night, recover your strength until then. If you can use it, then use healing magic. Your inside still hurts right?」

「...Yes, I understand」

「Don't think of killing yourself because you were raped okay? You're already my mine now. If you do selfish things, the surrounding people would be in rage」

「...Okay」

Since it's common for rape victims to suicide. I gave her a warning just in case.

I collected the knives and wires that was used in the battle outside. I inspected the corpse, but I didn't find any identification.

I was worried that someone would come here, but fortunately, nobody came.

Then, when we were ready for departure, Seria recovered to the extent where she can move.

She changed her torn dress and the appearance of the neat princess returned. Lululie was still sleeping but I changed her torn maid clothes into common maid clothes.

I passed the drinking water and apple that was taken from the luggage to Seria. I thought that it's a good idea to have her stomach filled with semen but, there's not much time this is the only good thing that I found.

「Eat it」

Seria bites the apple around. Such a bold princess.

「When you return to the castle, say 『We were attacked by unknown group and only I and Lululie escaped.』 They might be suspicious about a lot, but it's not necessary to answer any more questions. Leave the contact to Misumunto Kingdom to the king. Don't tell anything about me. Lululie too」

「Okay」

Our talk ended with this. She returned back after eating the apple.

I wrapped the sleeping Luluie with the blanket I borrowed, then secured her body using wire. The wondering face of Seria followed me when I go out.

「Is the carriage unusable?」

「The horse doesn't listen to me, I'm not a good coachman」

Horses in this world are beasts that judge their partner through magic. They don't let people with weaker magic than themselves ride them. Horses with high magical power are remarkably faster, so the person with higher magical power rides a better horse. Horses nor donkeys doesn't allow me to ride them, so these beasts have nothing to do with me.

Finally, destruction of evidence, I made Seria set the carriage on fire using magic.

If the evidence of rape remained, when they conduct an investigation, they would discover that she was raped. The national idol was raped, it would become a rumor in the country fast. She'd be troubled.

The memories in the carriage blazes up and the darkness of the night came.

Seria who looked at the flame is completely wrapped in blanket from the beginning and I'm doing princess-carry on her.

She might be a petite girl, but carrying two people is quite difficult, so I have no choice right now. I concentrated my power on my feet and jumped in full strength.

That moment, the weight of our body disappeared. I can neither feel the weight of Lululie who is carried on my back nor Seria who I carry in front.

This flight ability, is an ability that adapts if I hold something other than myself. If I can take-off, then It's possible for me to fly with other people.

We continued to fly on the night sky.

「Kyaaaaaaaa! Fffffffffffal, falling, we're falling!!」

「You won't fall unless you separate yourself from me. Since it's one of my trump cards, never tell anyone else okay?」

「It's scary! Please let me off!!」

Seria clings to me tightly as she's anxious of her first flight. While I enjoy the soft feeling of her breasts, I continued to advance quickly.

The sight is bad so night flight is dangerous. Furthermore, it's cloudy so there's no light.

If I was alone, I would go above the clouds and rely on the stars, but I can't afford to take the sky, that might freeze the sleeping Lululie.

I reduced my speed and flew in low altitude reluctantly.

Fortunately, the clouds cleared up as we pass over the mountain. Since the visibility was better with starlight, I go above and slightly raised my speed.

「Slow, slow down please. Hyaaa!」

Seria is talking about something under my arm, but I touched her ass to shut her up.

「Keep quiet. What would you do if someone found us? I don't need to seal your mouth to silence you right?」

「Au...Yes, nnn」

We continued the air travel since he became quiet. Usually, fly-traveling is boring, but this time I have a good toy so it's not boring.

Approximately 6 hours, we took a rest on the way, then the flirtatious

voice BGM of the beautiful girl kept returning until we reached the Imperial Capital

The imperial capital is already asleep after the seventh day. Even the light can be seen in the sky, there's no burning light, so they sank into darkness.

I landed on the unpopular back alley, I let down Seria and she collapsed from my shoulder, I made her sit to a wooden box. Seria looked around the surroundings restlessly, it seems she know the area.

「Have we already arrived?」

「It's faster than horses isn't it? Aren't you glad that you can return to the castle?」

「...Yes. Thank you very much」

「When you return to the castle, don't forget what I said. After that, some troupes will come for you. Shut yourself in your room for a while. Don't tell a thing about me. I'll be watching you」

I put some bloodlust on the last reminder. The overwhelmed Seria nodded.

「U-Understood. I'll do as you say...」

「That's good. Later then」

I pushed Lululie and Seria, then left that place.

I turned to a corner then hid myself to monitor the surroundings of Seria.

She held Lululie while crying. In an unknown back alley at night, she clung and cried to Lululie that's wrapped in blanket.

The emotions that she had accumulated so far was released.

Insecurity, Fear, Pain, Humiliation, her heart finally realized that.

Seria stopped crying after a while. She began to use healing magic on herself, stood up, and carried Lululie back to the Royal Palace.

I was hesitating that she would get lost from the complicated back alley, but she found the castle wall immediately.

I turned around the castle wall, then turned my foot on the side gate of the castle. The moment she saw a guard, Seria stopped and her foot began to tremble.

「Ah, Ah, Ah, ...lyaaaaaaaa!」

The scream echoed to the place and extends to the midnight guards.

「Seria-sama!? Luluile-san too!? What happened?」

「Don't come!」

Seria is confused, the guards doesn't know what to do and was flustered. They closed to Seria then she shouted. With that said, they can't just leave her alone, but the male guards can't do anything.

Soon, the guards have gathered and caught her. Several people directed their suspicion, they haven't heard an explanation but they held her down one-sidedly

False charges might be done in a moment. It's terrifying.

After that, Seria was taken by a female knight and went inside the royal palace.

Seria might have developed androphobia. They're sure that it's the knights who betrayed her. I clapped at the result.

There wasn't any rejection on me, but since this situation is special, it doesn't become a good reference at the moment. On our next meeting, I should consider the possibility that it might be the same as that guard I've really done an awful thing.



I was worried and was about to follow Seria, but let's hear the findings of Cathy first.

I don't think Seria will speak to me in that state, it won't be a problem even if I leave her alone for a while.

I transferred to my workroom under the cover of the night.

The workroom didn't change in particular after 7 days. It's the usual plain room.

The report for the 7th day from Cathy was at the desk.

I'll skim through it in order. When I opened the parchment to read, a shocking thing was written there.

『According to the results, you can guess that the two great marquis families will play a central role in the civil war that's about to occur. Furthermore, the chances that they will use the pretext of the struggle of the first prince Radom and the second prince Desire is high. Of course, with this the position of the first princess Seria according to this is completely afloat, so both marquis appears to be moving to ensure that they have the princess as spare.』

「Seriously...?」

When I continued reading, the battle of the two great marquis were more violent in paper than what I imagined. It seems that they're preparing for war behind the scenes. This movement become active especially in this seven days.

The situation of Seria was worse than what I imagined.

I was expecting her as a sacrifice for interaction with the Misumunto Kingdom from the King.

The candidate bride will be the hostage of the Misumunto Kingdom.

The two great Marquis family is a scapegoat of the Rasuhairu Kingdom's prince.

And the two prince of Rasuhairu Kingdom enemies as they were contending on the next seat.

Incidentally, the perverted rapist stalker that attacked is also aimed at. 5

Everything is inconvenient for me 6 And Seria has no worth anymore.

You can say that it's the role of the royalty but, this is something that has no clear solution.

She won't understand this situation at all.

What would happen if I told her?

What would she desire?

She might be willing to be engaged to the role. 7 On the contrary, she might reject it all.



I won't find out If I don't ask her.

However, her response doesn't matter.

I have decided to make Seria mine.

For that reason, I would do everything. Even if I have to challenge the country in this case.

I will handle this situation behind the scenes, then I will move it to the direction I want. And if necessary, I will dominate everything8

What? It's easier from escaping master.

I can't retreat afterwards. If there's no choice but to die, then I'll resolve myself to die.

First, let's start by securing the surroundings of Seria.

1. 、収まりきらない分はぶっかけた ←
2. こんなにされてもちんぽを突っ込めば感じながらも嫌がるのだから ←
3. 何か引っかかるところがあるのかそう尋ねられた ←
4. You're the last person I want to hear that from. Imao ←
5. ついでに変態レイプ魔のストーカーに襲われつけ狙われてもいる ←
5. 不都合である ←
7. もしかしたら喜んで役割に従事するかもしれない ←
3. And you people still think that our MC is morally corrupt? He's fucking devoted to the princess that he will rule the world just for her ←

## Chapter 16 : Matifa Prologue.

I found it. I found it. I found it.

Since when did my heart got this excited? For these past hundred years, it never happened.

I never thought that he would invade my [1] barrier that easily. Furthermore, it's a surprisingly no magic nonetheless.

It's too amazing that my uterus seems to ache.

[tl: [1] = boku ]

「Matifa-sama, what's wrong? You look so happy」

I can't I can't. My beloved kitten noticed me. Can't I do something about my feelings leaking out immediately?

「I found someone interesting. Does Misha want to see him too?」

I projected to Misha's eye what I'm watching. A lone black man flew in the sky, he disappeared, then appeared again.

「Who's this?」

「I wonder who. I just found him a while ago. He suddenly appeared inside the castle's barrier」

「A normal human?」

「He's not normal. That human doesn't have magical power. Originally, it's impossible for a zero to exist. Surely, he's a perfect existence」

「Doesn't have magic? Then weak?」

「That might be. He's surely weaker than anyone」

「Fuun」

Misha doesn't seem to be interested. The proof is that she's minding other things is the nekomimi on the top of her head facing the other way.

Rather than that, the problem is him. He's an existence more than what you see. Even he has no magical power, he flew, he disappeared, just what kind of principle is uses? I need to clarify it's true colors. Especially, when he disappears, his existence can't be sensed anymore. This isn't magic, is it? It's different from a racial trait. I've lived for a long time, but this is the first time I've seen one.

「Matifa-sama is ill?」

「Oops, Sorry Misha. Don't mind me and continue」

「Un, okay」

Misha's rough tongue licks my secret place. Each time I feel the pleasure, I feel numb. I also extend my tongue and licked Misha's secret place too. Normally, that place is a forbidden place to touch as Misha is just 9years old. However, she's just like me. Because this body is just 10 years old.

Even though it's young, it can still feel it. The proof is Misha's childish hole is greedily twitching and trembling. The further I roll my tongue the more her love juice overflows.

「Nyan~ Matifa-sama it feels good. I love it」

「Misha's got obedient. Different from me. Do it Misha. Make me feel it」

「Un~」

Misha licks my genital area. Somehow, it feels better than usual. My head is getting fluffy, and my waist moves naturally.

「Still, Matifa-sama today is weird. Are you really that curious?」

「Sorry Misha. Nnn... When I'm thinking of what should I do about him, I get excited. Nhaa...」

Even now, his appearance is reflected in my eyes. The appearance of the man who lurks in Ms. Seria's bedroom.

Usually, I would try to catch him, but with his abilities it seems he will be able to run away. Rather, I hope that he escapes.

Just what is his origin? I'd also like to try a lot of things on him. What should I try first?

If I throw him in the hellish fires of hell, even he would die. It might be good to seal him in Ice. But before that, I should perform autopsy first, I need to firmly examine him. How would he react if he saw me? He might get embarrassed to the beautiful me. Or would it be fear as expected?

What's next is, hmmm. It's a waste to throw him away, I might want to get some child. What kind of rough breathing he would make? It seems that he has a high sexual desire, he might even attack me.

I can't. My head is getting filled with him. Anyhow, whenever I see him, my womb aches. A man who has no magical power. A perfect man. If it's him, it might be—.

「Ei」

「Aaahn! Misha, that's unfair」

Misha sticks and sucks my clitoris I jumped because of her rough

tongue. My head got blank, I can't think of anything.

「Haaan! It's coming. Ah! I'm about to cum! Coming! Cumiiiing!!」

I lost my control over my body and shivered from pleasure. Misha's attack on my clitoris make me cum. My insides had gone numb, I wasn't satisfied and I'm aching for more.

This is probably because of him.

「Matifa-sama came. She came earlier than Misha」

「That's right. You and he made me cum. ...Good, I've decided. Misha, your new master is that black haired man」

「Why?」

「He's surely an amazing man. I just had a feeling that he is. That's why Misha, you have to confirm it by yourself」

「Okay, but Misha doesn't want to kill」

「I know. I don't intend to kill him so be relieved. Entertain me more」

That's right, entertain me more. Humans break easily after all. For the time being let's make this cute kitten cum.

「Nyan! Matifa-sama!?!」

「My return gift」

I licked Misha's cute clitoris. Since it still hide itself, I bit the clit then sucked it then bit it again—.

The opening of her vagina convulsed after attacking it persistently.

「Myaaaaa! Thash amazhing! Mi-sha's cumming! Cumiiiiing!!」

I continued licking even though Misha bent back and it was easy to understand that she climaxed.

Misha's tail stood straight and is shivering from the pleasure, then she lost her power and collapsed in bed. This child remembers it quite well.

「Myaaaa. Matifa-sama really looks so happy」

「That's true. I might have fallen in love.」

## Chapter 17: Chibi pharmacist Capo

In a windowless dark room. I ran a quill pen on the desk while relying on the candlelight. I'm writing information that that happened and I've obtained in this past seven days.

Of course, I didn't write that I raped Seria. I'll never reveal that.

While struggling on the otherworld letters that I'm not familiar with, I had been writing for more than two hours.

It was already morning. The seven days of travel, fight and the stuff I did to Seria, the fatigue was rushing.

While sipping coffee, I endured a little more writing the parchment.

I'm writing with my brush with sleepy eyes.

I want to finish this as soon as possible so I can investigate the inside of the castle.

I'm the only one who can invade there. But I can only go in and out using teleportation, so I can't do that frequently. I have to do things outside the castle before that.....



*PichaPicha*

A sound of water. Footsteps...No, it's from the upper area?

That reminds me, my crotch are itchy.

「Is here good?」

...Seria?

「Yes, It's your seria. *kiss*」

Ohoho!

「\*Churu, jurururu...Jubobo...\*」

She's awfully active today Did I teach her Irrumatio1?

「I've studied. How is it? *Juru...*」

It's good. Amazingly good.

「Fufu, you can let it out anytime. I'll drink all of it」

Yeah, I'll release it in your throat.

「Yes, Leave everything to me and just rest. *Jururu...*」

Yeah, Amazing.

「*Juru...\*Jubobo\*...*」

It feels good. I'm about to cum soon.



「You can do it anytime. Please release it inside this meat toilet's mouth pussy!」

Yeah, in this meat toilet's mouth pussy...Eh?

「Ren! Ren's penis! Ren's semen! *Jubo...Jubo...Juriyuriyuriyu!!*」

「Hey, isn't it Cathy!!」

When I noticed, Cathy had sneaked under my desk and she's sucking my penis. It's quite lovely.

It seems that I've fallen asleep before I noticed.

「Kuh...!」

「\*Jurururu!\*」

*Dokudoku* I woke up and released at the same time.

Why did I wake up? At least in the dream it was Seria's mouth, I would've been a bit more happy.

「N~Ren, your morning semen is delicious」

Cathy looks pleased about it. Her voice sounds happy under the desk.

「But, today's semen is thinner. Ren, did you attack the princess?」

「What do you mean」

Hey, what criteria did you use? Are you analyzing my sexual life using my semen? Are you my semen manager!?

「Because your penis doesn't taste like you, and the semen is thin, you did someone didn't you? Then, you were guarding Seria-sama. That's the only thing I can think of」

Yup, that's it.

But, why do you know? I haven't entered the bath yet, but I intend to clean myself properly. The thickness isn't much because it's just a half day after I was emptied, it can't be helped.

But, I won't admit it.....

「.....That's not true」

「Also, you called Seria in sleep」

「.....」

I can't retort to that. The words to persuade Cathy does not come out. When I hardened, Cathy showed a tired face and sighed.

「It's not that I care. I won't meddle on who you do, nor I will tell master. If you want me I can even help Ren」

It seems like she forgives me. I thank this generous Cathy.

「...Haa, don't tell anyone」

「Of course. But you have to do me too. If you don't, then I'll tell master」

「If you didn't have to do that you're really a nice woman」

Let's put away my son from Cathy for the time being.

Cathy was unsatisfied. But, right now is impossible. I did Seria too much.

「I'm not saying anything」

「Let's postpone today because I'm tired. Today, Just today」

「Ah, neglect play? It's okay. I'll endure to my limit」

「It's not neglect play. ...Well it's fine. So? What are you doing here so early in the morning?」

The day is just rising, and the people above are just beginning their activities.

「That's because I smell Ren」

「Are you a dog? Then? What's the work?」

「Gosh, you're cold. ——Well, it's okay. It's real that I smelled Ren. It's just the eight day after you departed, what happened?」

Cathy changed back to work mode. She straightened her posture, she changed back to the cool woman

It's good if there's no droll dripping from her mouth...

I coped as my head finally woke up.

「We were attacked by someone. It's probably Will Gantt house. The guards were annihilated. I exterminated the assailants too, but I judged

that it's dangerous to continue the travel so we returned. I silenced her temporarily」

「Will Gantt house is it?」

「Yeah, they intend to make Seria a puppet just as you reported. They'll get power as much as they can. I think that they're also planning to worsen the relationship with the Misumunto Kingdom. For more information, read what I wrote」

I passed the report I've written before I slept;

「I read the report Cathy had gathered. It's the conclusion, but I think you should read it. However, there's too many enemies, I can't squeeze it. That's why I will solidify Seria's foothold first. Then, while buying time I will analyze the weakness of each camps. If there's none I'll make one」

「That's true. In this situation, just protecting her from sides won't help. Would assassinating the prince be too early?」

On the fight of the two great marquis, the two prince play the key role. It's easy to crush. I'll just slip inside the castle while they're sleeping and stab them. I can always do that.

But, what's left?

If I were to kill one of the prince, the killed faction's noble would aim to kill Seria.

If both are killed, then Seria would be the next King. That's the development I hope for.

「Even so, we should consider the means. But, it's a priority to reduce the power of nobles」

「However, if you weaken it too much, Misumunto Kingdom might

attack?」

That's right, that's the problem. If exhausted from civil war then the outside would attack. In addition, if they focus on outside too much, the interior would collapse. Balance is important.

But this field is master's specialty.

「I know. I'll only do what's possible. In case of emergency, master would stand out」

「That's true. Ren has master as a piece<sup>3</sup>」

「That's what it is...<sup>4</sup>」

That's right, I'm sure that master is aware of all that's happening now. With that in mind, I'll just carry things that's convenient for myself

It's even possible that me laying my hand on seria is according to master's plan.

It's also probably accounted that Cathy and I would rack our brains.

「There's no use thinking about that person too much. Let's do what we can」

「True」

I agreed to postpone in this regard.



After the briefing session with Cathy, I went out to the town to take a

nap.

The town's hot topic was the incident that occurred in the gates last night. The town merchants, the gossip ladies, the children playing in the plaza, everyone was talking about it.

And, the accomplice is here.

「I'll never forgive the culprit! I'll hit him if I see him. Hey, aren't you thinking of the same thing too Ren?」

「Hell yeah. I'll even pay to find him」

My favorite pharmacy's old man yelled. He's the storekeeper, and a Hobbit tribe's pharmacist, Capo. His arm compounding is certain and his attitude is also good. He's a good guy that even treats me as guest even though I am a No Magic.

「I'm told that when Seria-chan saw the guards she started to cry. She must have experienced something scary. Seria-chan's smile is everyone's treasure. You hear? Well definitely find and punish the culprit! You'll participate that time too!」

「It's obvious. Whatever happens don't get cold feet old man. That said, this is my share today. I'll ask for the usual medicine」

I hand a bag of medicine materials to Capo. Inside is a dried mushroom with magical power and purification effect called Kakyuia.

It's not possible to take it if you didn't enter the deeps of the deadly poison swamp, local specialized hunter drains it into the market, if an adventurer picked it up by chance, it would be circulated as a treasure.

It's possible for me to take them easily because I can fly. That's why, sometimes I pick it up and collect them casually.

Magical power purification medicine can be made from this Kakuia. It has the effect of removing the impure magic that has accumulated in the body, it's for those with weak magical power.

I have to drink this periodically, someone who has low magical resistance, would easily be eroded with a disease.

In addition, there are other medicine that temporarily increase magic resistance, I'm using those medicines and alike.

Instead of me compounding the medicine, I hand it over to Capo. It's convenient to hand it over Kakyuia to Capo periodically than the market which is price is unstable. This is a give and take relationship

Before invading the castle today, I looked around the town and thought of replenishing my medicine.

「Yeah, you always save me. The circulation of Kakyuia has been reduced recently. The price is too damn high」

「Yeah, I've heard that. That's why I brought some」

It was listed on Cathy's report. The sudden price jump of magical potion and other related products. This is one of the omens of the civil war that will occur.

This kakyuia is said to be a cure-all material that heals all diseases, it would be exhausted if war happens. And it's a fatal problem for someone with no magical power like me.

「Is that so? Still, your body is sure adapted well. Well done」

「There's no monsters there since the poison is too strong. Also, I have a trick」

So we were talking while waiting for the medicine to finish, *Karan Karan* the sound of the door bell ringed as the door opened.

「Oji-san, hello! Onii-san too」

「Yea, welcome」

「Hello」

A girl who's covered with broad brimmed hat came. Her pink hair is twin braids tied on the neck part A cheerful adorable greeting.

She's a frequent on this store too. I saw her on the orphanage the other day.

「Oji-san, do you have the usual medicine?」

「Yeah, wait a moment. That bro over there just gave me the materials」

「Is that so? Onii-san thank you」

「You're welcome」

The girl smiled pleasantly.

I hardly feel any magic from this girl. She definitely has the constitution called magic deficiency just like me. In short, a human oppressed human.

「Aren't you always alone? Are you okay when you go out?」

「Yeah, since it's near, it's okay. Onii-san is the same with me? Can you share me the medicine?」

The girl sat on the chair and *purapura* her feet<sup>5</sup>. I'm worried about her turning to adult.



「Children shouldn't worry. You shorty」

「Wa—don't take my hat—」

When I pressed and stroked her head, the girl was happily squealing.

Since I'm always bloodthirsty, this kind of skinship heals me.<sup>6</sup> This was my ordinary before.

「You guys get along well. Ren is surprisingly a lolicon. I thought that Cathy was your type however」

「Hey, what do you mean by that? I love all beautiful women, Cathy is a bit different」

If you know Cathy's true nature, you'd hesitate to say you like her.

If I had to say then I prefer Lolis.

「What? It's you have no loyalty. Be careful little lady」

「Okaaay. But I'm not a little lady anymore. I'm even taller than oji-san~」

「What!？」

The girl jumped from the chair and puffed her flat chest.

She undauntedly stood up against Capo.

I compared the two people.

「Old man's defeat」

「W...hat...」

「Ahem!」

The girl was taller by a narrow margin even if you removed her hat.

No, should I say that Capo was shorter? They're the same if you compared their height anyway.

「Haa, I was surpassed by a child again」

Capo hang his head and resumed his work.

「It's a racial difference. Don't mind it」

「That's right, Also, I'm able to grow thanks to oji-san's medicine」

「Well, that's true」

He got well after two people cheered him up. Well, it's not that he was depressed.

This and that, we killed some time, then the medicine was completed.

「Look, it's done」

「Thank you. Okay, here's the money」

The girl pay money in exchange for the medicine. Capo checked the amount, then he shook his head.

「Thanks for the purchase」

「Bye-bye, see ya. Onii-san too」

The girl waved energetically.

We sent her off then I talked to Capo.

「Aren't you affectionate?」

I watch the coin put in the tray.

The amount is half the usual pay in the market. He certainly won't be able to give it on half price if I didn't harvest it for him. Also, it's quite a large sum of amount to pay for a commoner.

Capo said while cleaning up the mortar.

「I'm a pharmacist after all. I hand medicine for those who are in need. And since you're giving it to me, I can make it less expensive」

「I see. Then, I'll bring some again」

「Yeah, I'll ask of you」

I also received the medicine and left the shop. Still, that girl from a while ago, I feel like she's familiar but I guess it's my imagination.<sup>7</sup>

1. Fellatio wherein the majority of movement is performed by the felatee ←
2. 焦らしプレイ ←
3. レンという駒を放ったのも師匠ですし ←
4. そこなんだよな ←
5. Dangle ←
5. Watch GochiUsa, Kiniro Mosaic, or Wakaba Girl ←

7. Matifa? Is it matifa? ↩

## Chapter 18: Royal Palace's conspiracy plot tour.

The plaza in front of the royal castle's gate. In daytime, it's packed with people.

Some people are sightseeing, some are waiting to enter a castle inspection, and some just use this as meeting place.

But, it was different today. A lot of people have gathered to ask about the incident that happened last night, or rather protesting.

In short, spectators have gathered.

The knights have come out in response, when asked, they just said that it's still under investigation, but they pointed out that the princess is safe so there's no need to worry.

Well, the mobs didn't respond, they ignored them and advanced.

My objective isn't to hear such an obvious story. I came here to invade the castle for the second time.

Teleportation is my trump card. I don't want to use it frequently.

That's why I will try another method of snaking<sup>1</sup> in.

I used invisibility and went towards the main gate of the castle. There's a baggage wagon carried into there.

The neighboring gate that isn't open unless for time of parade opened its roadway to let the baggage in.

The wagon advances slowly while the guards are strictly guarding it. And I used my invisibility and followed it.

This passage is covered with layers of magic. Things without

permission, poison, curse, they can detect those with magic.

I don't know the stealth performance of my invisibility if it could pass through. Since nothing is perfect, you're not supposed to be overconfident.

I pass through the tunnel that's approximately 10 meters nervously. Somehow, when I felt magical power while passing through, I feel bad, but I can't stop.

When I got outside the tunnel it was snowing and there's a guard, It seems I've passed through safely. That was anticlimactic.

However, the degree of freedom increased with this. Today, we I will properly explore the castle<sup>2</sup> I'm looking forward to see what kind of evil deeds will appear.



I pass through the palace while investigating people's magical power. First of all, let's intrude the same private room as Seria's from the other day.

This time, I peeked from the balcony instead of the entrance.

Seria is sleeping peacefully on the extravagant canopy covered bed.

On her side is Lululie grasping her hand. She seems to have woke up safely.

In addition, the genius knight Lion is standing next to them.

He has a neutral look, his smooth blonde hair is tied from his back. His body is wrapped in luxurious armor, a sword with a divine atmosphere is on his waist, his vigilance of the surroundings and his stance has no gaps. With this, I can't do anything but to give up invading the room.

Lion and Lululie were talking. I listened to the conversation by installing a tool such a glass stethoscope.

「Lululie-dono, Since you've been finally freed from the questioning, how about resting for a moment?」

「No, I'm fine. Taking care of the princess is my job」

「However, your complexion isn't good either. Entrust this to me and take a rest」

「The princess was betrayed by the knights and is shocked, you know I can't do that」

「That's...」

It seems that she's stubbornly not leaving Seria, Lion is worried about Lululie.

However, Lululie refuted quickly and Lion withdraws. Lion is weak.

As for Lululie, she remembers that the knights betrayed her. That betrayal of the knights was splendid. Once you experienced that, you don't seem to want to be beside a knight.

Lion also knows that so he can't insist himself.

Lululie adds insult to Lion's injury.

「I'm being patient here because you were instructed by the king to appear here, in truth, I want you to leave the princess' room immediately. It was your companions that did it aren't they?」

She completely lost her nerve. It can't be helped to say that Lion is to be blamed for this.

「I feel deeply sorry for that. But, I'm different from those knights that lost their pride. I'll never betray Seria-sama」

Lion denied it flatly. But, Lion, that's a bad move.

「I wonder? Since you're strong you didn't experience that, but if you were cornered aren't you going to betray us surprisingly easy?」

「That's not—」

「To begin with, a man like you shouldn't be looking at the princess's sleeping face. If you would guard then isn't it fine to guard the entrance? Isn't it rude to enter the princess' bedroom?」

「...This is because it's a state of emergency」

「This is the royal palace. Outside is different, but the enemy can't invade here. Besides, you can do it outside can't you? Rather, you entering all the way inside is suspicious. Or is there a reason that you have to watch the princess?」

「I'm not thinking of such a thing!」

「Then there's no problem right? Since you're unrelated please get out」

「...Certainly」

Lion left the room depressed. Since there was a presence that the door opened, he guarded outside just as he was told. Rather than guarding, he look like a student made to stand in the hallway.

Lululie definitely won't lay a hand on her so I don't have to do anything here. I should probably leave Seria to Lululie.

I decided to come back at night, then resumed my search at the royal castle.





There's a room located in a remarkably high place in this royal castle. I was able to look around the castle from this room

However, in contrast to the refreshing wind shaking the curtain, there was a heavy atmosphere in the room.

There were three people talking there.

「Is princess Seria still sleeping?」

「Yes, she's sleeping soundly」

The first to open his mouth is the King of this country, Ortiz. His age wasn't at his prime of life, but, fatigue can be seen in his face.

Then the one who answered is the prime minister, Pienta, An gray haired old man that looks tired.

It's not fatigue done overnight. The worries of these two people never ends.

「Is she not injured?」

「Yes. However, the princess can use recovery magic, so it's possible that she used it to heal herself」

「For now, I'm glad that she's safe. However, that's a problem」

「It is so」

The two people sighed deeply.

「A personal letter from Misumunto Kingdom. Let's pretend that she felt ill on the way. Let's see how they move for now」

「That would be fine. If they knew the internal trouble, how will it turn out? The special marriage proposal will be lost」

「That's surely their aim」

「It probably is. Really. People with empty brains can't keep their hand out」

YareYare, Pienta shook his head, Ortiz looks troubled.

「Don't say that. Dealing with it somehow is your job as the prime minister. I understand your feelings, but」

「I'm sorry for being rude.」

「What about the shadows?」

「The communication is cut off. Perhaps they were attacked by the people of Will Gantt」

I want to tell them that those people died without permission. Just how incompetent are the secret agents of this country? They'd be greatly troubled if they knew.

This is because master pulls out the talented people.

「Those guys. They interfered us just to wage war. Those guys would go to war and plunder. What's wrong with being friends with Misumunto kingdom!?!」

*Don* Ortiz hit his desk. The teacup mad a noise by vibrating.

The woman sitting beside him, Queen Angela rebuked it.

「Calm down dear. Also, we hadn't confirmed yet if it was an act of the Will Gantt house」

「But, there's no one else but them!」

「However, we still don't know how Seria returned safely. In the first place, the report from the event had occurred yesterday afternoon. No matter how fast Seria run, it's impossible to come back here in half a day」

Angela explained how the situation is unnatural.

I did that, but they don't know.

My super ability can't be perfectly reproduced with this world's magic.

Because long-distance flight requires an extraordinary amount of magical power, it's basically impossible. The flying dragons are a race that's able to fly in the sky originally, they're a rare race and normally it's not usable. As for teleportation, it's magic theory isn't complete in the first place.

There's no one who can move a long distance in such a short time other than me.

However, that impossible phenomenon might really happen. That's why I have to understand this situation correctly.

The talk continued without reaching conclusion. I've eavesdropped for a while, but I understood that they don't have good information.

I feel uneasy if the top of the country is incompetent.

I'll just leave them alone and move on the next place.



A dark room where curtains is closed even though it's noon. A lone man was shouting in frustration.

「Dammit! Why did Seria come back!? It's impossible!!」

The man hit the wall to vent his anger. A crack appeared on a magic reinforced wall. He had quite the power3

「Radom-sama, please calm down. You'll break it」

A middle aged man dressed as a knight tries to calm him down. I've seen this face somewhere.

「Dammit! What is that Felix doing! He still hadn't contacted me yet!？」

「I sent a messenger, but it would take two to three days...」

「Can't it go faster?!」

「I'm extremely sorry」

The first prince Radom shouts his frustration to the old man.

Felix is the name of the present head of Will Gantt Marquis house. He's the top in the military, and he's an excellent knight. His territory is on the west, adjacent to Misumunto Kingdom, it seems that they have returned to their territory today. It's for the sake of kidnapping Seria.

With this, it's concluded that Radom and Will Gantt marquis house conspired this.

「Just what happened!? Why did she come back after the seventh day? Isn't the scheduled attack yesterday? Even a fast horse would take a day

and a half on that distance, how did she return in half a day? Also, what happened to the attack? Didn't the maid say that they came back safely together? Why did they return safely?」

He began to kick the floor. He's a totally restless man. If this man become the next king, I'd feel uneasy.

「How is Seria? Did she say about anything!?!」

「No, she seems to be asleep」

「Damn! It's making me puke!」

Radom can't wait and began to walk to the door. The old man stopped him.

「Please wait! If you do something right now, Sir Desire would surely take that opportunity. It's necessary to conceal this instead」

「Don't speak that name in front of me! I'm better than that damn brother of mine, why is he talking like he's going to be the next king!!」

Suddenly, Radom began to rage. He seems to have a complex for his brother4. It can't be helped that brothers are always compared, but it's not that easy if you're a royalty. Or he just wants the king's throne.

「That's not all! The people selfishly want Seria and Lion to be the king! Additionally, getting friendly with Misumunto Kingdom? I'll never allow it! The one who will crush them is me! When I become the king, I'll crush all the nuisance」

「Please do not worry, the only one suitable for the throne is Radom-sama」

「Dammit, I got frustrated just because you mentioned his name!」

Aren't you irritated at your roots? I swallowed my tsukkomi5

Radom knocked the man blocking him.

「Guh!」

You won't be let off safe with that incredible strength. Still, he endured it without fighting back.

Ah, I remembered. This old man is Felix's little brother...somehow. If I remember, he has a status as a knight.

「Radom-sama. Please calm down」

「I don't care. Who do you think I am! I'm the next king! I won't forgive what they're doing!」

Radom declared.

Looking at the swelling face of the old man, Radom shooed him and got out of the room.

「I'll be going to the training area. Clean up the room」

The old man muttered in a tired manner, then he used healing magic on himself for a while

「Yareyare, can I have some room to spare?」



「Radom will be ruined」

Daytime is about to end soon. The younger brother drank wine with a woman joyfully.

Second prince Desire is together with the daughter of Mark Newt Marquis, Ophelia. Her loud attitude and evil like ringlet blonde hair bounces.

「Yes, it's a big failure. The one who did that is being talked about. I can't stop laughing as he showed his true colors so fast」

「Really. When I met him and fanned it grandly a while ago, he's already boiling in the head. It looks ungraceful」

「Ohohohoho」6

「Ahahahahah」

Are these guys doing an imitation of bad magistrate?

Apparently, they're laughing at their rival's failure. If you want to thank someone, then thank me.

「Then? How was the attack prevented?」

「Ara? Wasn't it the shadow of this country?」

「I've never received such a report」

「Me neither. ...Father must have done something」

Are these guys really laughing without assessing the information? Are

you really just playing?

「Well it's fine, we'll know it soon. With this, it's possible to advance this time. How is the plan going?」

「It's doing well. Since all the royal court magicians and the overpowered witch is with us, it's just a matter of time before completion.」

「Oh, you won over that witch? But her reputation is quite odd」

「She'll do anything for her research. I'm glad that we have the same interest this time」

「If that the case, it might be in time. The day I become king comes near!」

「Yes, I'm looking forward to it」

「Anticipate it」

What's this farce?

A plot done by two idiotic people? ...It's unlikely. Besides, this guy's plan of using the whole country is annoying.

I can only sigh.

This country might be done already.

「I will be writing the details. Thus I will be going for now」

Saying that, Ophelia presented a sealed letter.

「Oh? Aren't you going to keep me company? My Fiancé」

「I'm sorry. I still have things to do. I'll come back at night」



「Yeah, I'll look forward to it」

「Yes, then, see you soon」

When Ophelia left the room, Desire opened the sealed letter and began to read. I sneaked behind to steal a glance too.

What's written there is human experimentation.

It seems like they're making an army corps using beast people. The performance and estimated completion is written in details.

Beast people with features of animal fused in their body. There's an exception, their superior in physical ability, but they're low in magic fitness.

If you released the abilities of the troops, you'd be able to overwhelm the enemy in infantry warfare.

They seem to intend to use it on the civil war that's going to happen.

In this country, the royalty are humans. Therefore, the thought of human supremacy is widespread. They even have a thought to say that humans should rule the world.

Desire and Ophelia belongs to those.

If he becomes the King, the small sub-races that were ashamed under normal circumstances would be in more trouble. It's not a problem for me, but I'm not so sure about the Dark Elf Cathy, Elf Lululie and the Hobbit Capo. This is quite an issue.

After Desire finished reading, he put the document away on the bookshelf. After that, he immersed himself in thoughts with a wine in one hand. He had a serious face, then he slightly grinned, then turned

expressionless. Is he emotionally unstable?

I searched for the document which Desire put on the bookshelf on his back, then I found some other similar documents. Since it's special, let's borrow it.

30% of theft happens when you're at home Because you're off guard when you're in your own room.

Let's invade when he's absent and look around. Various things would come out.

I've taken some useful information here. When I was satisfied with the result, I left Desire's room

1. "Kept you waiting huh?" that's intentional ↩
2. Since he took his time peeking to Seria last time ↩
3. GET THE POWER ↩
4. Not the complex you're thinking ↩
5. retort ↩
5. Ohohohohohohooohohohoh ↩

## Chapter 19: Seria and her night in the royal castle ##

I entered Seria's room when it was night.

Peeping at the sunset from the window, Seria woke up this time. She straightened her negligee on the upper part on the bed and she was talking with Lululie.

And just like earlier in the morning, I can feel Lion's magical power on the other side of the door.

I wanted to play with Seria if possible, but as expected I have to deal with these two people somehow.

When I thought how to threaten them inside my head, Seria faced the window.

I moved on the position where I'd be seen by Seria.

「Hii...」

Seria made a small scream as if seeing a ghost.

Lululie noticed it and gazed at the window. But, there's no one there.

「Princess, is there something wrong?」

「N-nothing. I was just surprised to see my face reflected in the window. Lululie, I'll be sleeping soon so you can retire today. Look, Lilith must be worried about you so show yourself」

「However...」

「Sorry, I want to think alone for a while. Tell Lion to not let anyone in

until tomorrow morning」

Seria forcibly expelled Lululie out of the room. Then, when there's no one else in the room, I appeared once again.

When I beckoned her, she quietly got out of bed and came to the balcony.

「Hey, you're much more energetic than I thought」

「How...are you here?」

Seria was somehow able to squeeze the words while trembling.

「I have various methods. Snaking<sup>1</sup> inside the castle isn't particularly difficult. I came here when you were asleep earlier

「That's...

Seria's face turned pale then shed tears. She knows that she's not safe even in her room.

「Be quiet. Lion might notice」

Lion stands on the other side of the door. His overwhelming magic power scatters in all directions, it's foolish to fight him.

It's a fight that's impossible to win. The difference level of power isn't just in sword stabbing and swinging. Even if I used poison, it's meaningless against his magical power.

Frankly speaking, I'm no match. It's useless to fight. It's a waste of life.

I don't even know if I would have time to cast teleportation in time.

「Because...you came here...

「Of course I will come. I need to confirm if you kept your promise」

「I kept my promise. I never told anyone so please leave already」

Seria weakly petitioned, that appearance looks erotic that it stimulates my sadistic heart.

「You know I can't leave you alone」

「Kyaa...」

I hugged Seria and stroked her back. Then, Seria had settled down a little.

But, she's mistaken. I'm not soothing her. I let her understand by pressing my groin against her stomach.

「Stop...」

Did she find out my intention? She started to tremble again.

The hand stroking her head is lowered, then caressed her exposed chest. When I rubbed it against her thin negligee, her small nipples stood up immediately. At the same time, I massaged her ass.

「Nnn...haun!」

I remember Seria's pleasure points and I won't go easy on her. When I

attacked her weak points, Seria put her hand on her mouth and desperately endured her voice.

「NN...a,nn! Please stop」

After caressing her for a while, her skin under the negligee blushed and is sweaty.

I gently reached for her crotch and it was wet.

「Na!」

「You seem to be feeling it well」

I go under her panties and touched her pussy directly. I tried insetting a finger in her vagina and it was accepted smoothly. Her insides are wet with love nectar already and she's tightening on my finger.

I start to thrust as it reminded me the feeling from yesterday.

「Because you're touching it, ahn」

「Be quiet. But if you want to be seen by Lion, I don't mind」

「...Don't...」

Seria said in a weak voice. As one would expect she don't want to be seen doing naughty things with a man.

「Are you not going to ask for help from Lion?」

「...Lion, will die. N~」

Seria said something ridiculous.

No matter how you think of it, it's impossible. The existence of Lion is on a level that I envy, he's a subject of respect and awe.

Certainly, I might have killed more than twenty people in front of Seria, but I would be troubled going against someone like Lion.

「That's impossible as expected. If lion found out, I'll run. ...I don't know what he might do after all」

「I have a feeling that you will win against Lion」

It seems that Seria overestimates me.

「Also, if I refuse you, you will do cruel things to someone else?」

「You know it well. It might be Lululie, or maybe someone you don't know at all. However, I won't listen to whatever you say」

「That's why I can't send you away...」

「True」

Seria muttered as she gave up.

I affirm her words. Be obedient to me, be my thing. You'll protect others that way.

Seria looked down as thinking of something. Then, she spoke in a small voice.

「But...」

At that time, the wind blew.

Seria's silver hair waved, it sparkled as it reflect the starlight. Seria looked up, and looked at me while trembling in fear.

Her strong willed eyes is directed at me.

The environment suddenly became quiet. Even the magical power of the fearful Lion is off from my consciousness.

This moment, I was surely charmed by Seria.

「Still...I will say this to you. —Please stop this already」

Seria said it clearly even though her eyes were wet and her voice is thin. Although her words were filled with fear, her will got through.

I stopped my finger in astonishment. I was overwhelmed by this woman for a moment.

Is this the personality of a royalty?

Suddenly, I felt that this girl became an excellent existence.

I became glad at the same time.

Seria is a woman who's not broken in fear.

I don't like an obedient doll. I'm not interested in something broken.

But, I can do her body freely. I want to have my way with a woman who's shaking her head.

Therefore, I laughed and replied.

「I said it yesterday right? I refuse」

This time I'm somehow convinced.



I'll never be able to completely break Seria.

I thought that she was an easy girl before, but she was not like that at all. She's a strong girl to the core.

As I keep violating her by force, Seria keeps refusing me. I thought of how will I violate her each time we meet each other, I thought of how Seria will stop it.

That's the relationship of me and Seria. It has been decided that moment.

「However, I won't give up」

「I know. You're fine as you are」

Any more words are unnecessary. I want to rape her so bad right now.

I put my hands on Seria's panties, then removed it from her legs.

I took out my erect penis.

「Nu...As expected, you don't intend to stop...」

「Isn't that obvious. That's why I came here after all」

「Noo...」

Seria began to weep again. Her personality from a while ago vanished and her face returned to what's suitable for her age.

I sit down as is, then held her ass.

Seria clinged to my neck. Was she afraid that her feet was floating? The feeling of her voluptuous chest forcing on my chest stirs up the excitement.

「It's a bit difficult to insert」

「Please stop this already」

「Don't leak your voice」

I slowly put her ass down. The glans sinks to her vagina, it's crawling inside Seria's vagina. The penis exposed in the cold night is now clamped hot.

「NN—!!」

「You endured your voice well. It doesn't hurt anymore?」

「...It feels really strange」

Seria answered bashfully. She's quite used to insertion already Still, her vagina tightens up my penis, it feels good.

「I'll be moving」

「...Please take it out」

I ignored Seria's words and began to move up and down.

A night on the balcony, we lift and embrace each other under the starry night<sup>2</sup>

「Nn...nn...Don't, move... Ahn, Ah...n...」

A lovely voice leaks out every time I thrust her pussy, even so, Seria desperately tries to hide her voice so Lion won't notice.

I'm the same, however the reason is different. I'll get killed if Lion found me. My chance of running is 50/50. However, the thrill is irresistible.

If Seria raised her voice it would be a problem. However, I want to hear Seria's panting voice. I want to challenge it's limit.

Got caught? Or to not be Caught<sup>3</sup>, life or death?

Only fools bet their lives in sex<sup>4</sup> But it's fine. I'll bet my life to raise the excitement in sex.

「Na...You look happy」

Seria said when she saw my face. It seems my thoughts are leaking out.

「Yeah, this is great. I've never tasted this thrill」

There's no excitement when you fight to death. That's why I rape her for the pleasure.

「Nnaaa!...even you were...nn, fighting?」

「It's different from this」

「Ah! Is that so?」

「Yup, that's how it is」

*Zun Zun*<sup>5</sup> I push up Seria's small vagina. The folds entangles comfortably and draw my penis in.

「Nnn! ...Ah, ah, Ahna!!」

The voice of Seria gradually grows. Lion might hear about it soon, it makes me worried.

The one over that door that has a ridiculous magical power might attack as soon as he see me.

However, I'm a little interested on what reaction Lion would make if he saw this scene.

「Lion will hear you. Or do you want to be seen?」

「No...n...I don't, want to show this to anyone, ahn...」

「Yet you feel unusually pleasant」

「That's not. nnn, it's because you're moving...」

Inside Seria's vagina is overflowing with love nectar, it shows that she's excited. She herself feels that she's accepting a man.

「Do you like getting forcefully pierced by a dick?」

「You wro, nnn!!」

Seria raised her voice so I sealed her mouth with mine. At the same time, the other side of the door was knocked.

「Seria-sama, I heard something, did anything happen?」

It's Lion. He heard it as expected. It seems that he doesn't know the details, but he noticed something unusual.

Seria's body stiffened.

I stopped moving where I and Seria are connected.

「Deceive him」

I ordered on her ears, Seria nodded;

「Seria-sama? Is something wrong? Can I come in?」

「N-nothing happened. I'm...just got outside for a breath of air」

Seria answered somehow while being connected to me. She feigned calm desperately, but her voice is trembling.

「Are you really okay? I heard a voice a while ago. Also, your magical power is in disorder」

「I'm fine, really. Do not worry about me. NN!!」

I moved my waist lightly, then Seria's vagina tightened. A sweet tone mixed in her voice.

「That voice right now!? Is there someone in there?」

「There's, no one, don't. worry!」

When I restarted pumping, a gasping voice was added in the voice of Seria. Her vagina began to twitch finely, I see that she's about to cum.

Seria looked at me with teary eyes. It stirs up my excitement again. I can't resist and pierce my penis deep.

「Aah!」

「Seria-sama., your voice is strange. I'm entering!」

The doorknob is turned. Seria's body jumped up, my penis is being squeezed.

I prepared my teleportation that moment.

「Wait! I remembered something harsh so I'm crying!」

Seria said it in one breath. The door stopped half opened. Our appearance isn't seen yet.

「I don't want this face to be seen. Nn, somehow, please close that door」

Every second feels so long. I know that Lion is hesitant on the other side of the door. Then he answered not long after.

「...Certainly」

*Bam* The door was closed again. I breathed a sigh of relief, but I did not stop moving.

Then, Seria questioned me.

「Why did you move?」

「It's obvious, because it feels good. Aren't you glad? Nice follow-up」

「Ah! Please stop already, nn...nn, haun!」

「I won't stop. Aren't you getting even more wet when you were about

to be seen by Lion? You're about to cum soon right?」

「Don't say that...」

Seria's vagina is twitching as if asking for ejaculation. Trembling different from fear, it was a trembling that coils around my penis. I felt this sign of cumming a lot yesterday.

「Cum without reserve. I'm about to cum soon」

「Ahn, Ah, Ah, ah, Haha, ...nnn—!」

Unable to endure the intense movement of the waist, I stick my tongue to Seria's mouth.

Seria, with a melting expression, entwines her tongue with mine. Her hands and feet are clinging to me, our bodies stick together.

Seria says no in her mouth, but since she's about to cum, she fawned and it was charming. The body moves without her permission and isn't stopping.

In response, I moved faster.

「Nn—!!」

Seria clings harder. She's near her limit. I'm already at my limit too.

I moved my waist stronger, then the waves surged quickly.

「Nn—!!」

*Splurt Spluirt Splurt!!* Semen entered Seria's insides. Seria's body

convulsed greatly at the same time.

Both the top and bottom connections felt pleasant. Seria hides herself so she won't be found by Lion while feeling the body.

After the ejaculation, I separated our mouths.

「Fuua...You came inside again...」

「You're quite used to sex already」

「That's your fault」

Seria arranged the clothes on the floor.

There's no reason to stay here after doing that. Finally, I decided to reveal my true business with her.

「This is a present for you. Take a look」

「A letter?」

「It's not a letter. What happened to you yesterday, what is happening in the castle right now, and what's going to happen in the future, all summarized there. I'm still investigating, but you should be able the situation you're in. After you read them, think over what you would do in the future. If you fail you'll suffer」

Seria doesn't know the current situation. There's one around telling her. She's merely being swayed around.

She can run and escape before, but she can't now.

I also do not want to be swayed by such a worthless plot.

I can't protect all all the time, if possible I'd like her to be able to protect herself. If so, she can overcome situations.



Seria received it timidly.

「Err...I understand. Thank you very much」

「You have more enemies than you think. There's also those from yesterday. Take care」

When I was about to get out of Seria's room, I stopped walking.

I remembered something I was doubting that I wasn't completely convinced.

「That reminds me, when you saw the guards you shouted, but you're calm with me?」

Seria rounded her eyes on the sudden question, then shook her head.

「I'm not calm. When I saw a man, betrayed by the knights...I remember the scene where they were killed. A person might die in front of me again, It's frightening..... But, you're the killer」

Instead of her virginity being taken, the shock of the knights dying seems to be much bigger for Seria. What's that...

「That's a bit disappointing」

My answer leaked out unintentionally, and Seria answered amazed.

「What are you saying? You're even scarier. But you're—...」

1. Yes, this is intentional once again. Thanks MGS ↩
2. It sounds so romantic, if only he's not raping her. Imao ↩
3. That is the question ↩
4. Death by snu-snu bet ↩
5. Touhou pls ↩

## Chapter 20: The night attack in the royal castle

I went out Seria's room, then I moved out to get away from Lion as far as possible.

The other side of the door has a magical power giving off an incredible pressure. Actually, I want to be in the bed, but it was impossible for me to invade the interior because of that magical power.

Therefore, I was quite stubborn in front of Seria, but I was scared in reality. I really thought I would die when the door opened. Can I win against him? Just what is Seria thinking?

I honestly want to do more naughty things with Seria, but it's impossible in front of Lion. It would surpass my body limits. If I kept showering from Lion's magical power, my body would be polluted with magical power, I'd collapse and die. The palpitation hadn't stopped yet, my back is still sweating.

I hide myself for the time being and take the Magical power purification medicine especially made by Capo. After a short rest, the effect appeared.

I stared at the sky while thinking of what I should do next.

Even if I say so, I decided where I would go. However, since I don't want to go there I postponed it.

There are three people I must not defy in this country.

First is my master, Second is Lion, and the third is the Imperial court magician who's called witch of supreme time.

That witch of supreme time is rumored to have lived for more than 300

years. She already exists when this country was found as a nation, she receives money as she is the imperial court magician, but she only does as she please and doesn't take any orders.

There was a time where she caught a powerful fantasy class dragon, it is said that she used it as a sacrifice for an experiment in magic. There's also that time where she didn't like a duke family for some reason and crushed them. When Misumunto Kingdom attacked them for the first time, she was the only person who cut off the state of the war.

Even the royalty can't oppose her. She's an unexploded bomb that's about to explode anytime, I want to leave her without touching as much as possible.

According to the talk of Desire and Ophelia earlier, it seems that this witch us doing human experimentation of fusing beast slaves.

Moreover, according to the material stolen from Desire's place, their first experimental should be completed soon. If they begin their secret maneuvers, I don't know what kind of damage they will cause. That's why I will investigate ahead, if possible I will crush them.

However, the enemy is too strong, that I'm not willing to.

As I was expressing my feelings, the clouds came out and the stars appeared.

When I finally settled down, a shadow appeared in the moon.

The royal castle is covered in pitch black And then, that moment, my sixth sense sound like a bell.

I fly sideways on full strength. In addition to the accelerated flight ability I took some two, three steps distance. *zazaza* I slide as I land, when I pay attention on the place where I hid a while ago, there's one figure appearing.

It's dark so I can't see well, but the silhouette is of a beast girl. Judging from her triangular ears, she's probably from the cat race.

A golden eye from the darkness is looking straight here.

I thought I was discovered by the guards, but it seems I'm mistaken. She's probably someone on the same job. In addition to that, the security inside the castle is only human. That's why there's only one answer.

「Did you came out from that place? Are you a remodeled beast human?」

I was about to look for the experiment site, but it seems that they came for me instead. This has the heaviest atmosphere.

「Kill... Black Hair...man...kill!」

「Kuh!」

The girl forcibly attacked. The distance that exceeded 10 meters was cut down in an instant, a line spectrum ran in the night's darkness. There's a trace the girl wielded her nail. It's too fast that I only see the line.

I evaded it using intuition. But, I wasn't able to evade it my arm was grazed. The clothes I wore were blade material proof, but it was cut easily and there was a shallow cut to the arm.

She passed through with a certain kill speed. I threw a knife backhand, her cat ears twitched, then she looked at my direction and dodged by sidestepping.

The physical strength's difference is too much. The girl run one again in full speed, chasing me again. I can hardly evade it.

The sharpness and length of her fingernail is longer than usual, it's abnormal. It is perhaps modified to become stronger.

In addition, her attack perception is too high that I can't land a hit. It's the worst compatibility.

「You dodged? Don't run!」

The crazy girl attacked once again. Her talk has no signs of extreme hostility.

This place is the corner of the castle, the research building of the imperial court magician is near, no one is around right now. There's an attack barrier around the area, and I've been isolated from the surroundings.

The only one who can do this in the castle is the witch of supreme time. It seems her bad hobby is peeping. If so, then I can't use my super abilities.

I can teleport when it comes to worst, but that's my trump card. I'll try to run away first.

I hold a dagger on my right hand and prepared a low stance, waiting for the girl. The girl running on all fours flew in front of my eyes, then it jumped aiming her nails on my face.

I bent myself backwards while matching the dagger on her nail and escaped using that chance. The dagger was cut into five parts while scattering sparks. But in that fraction of time, I was able to evade.

I made a backflip and kicked the belly of the girl who is in the air at the same time.

The speed of the girl and the flight assistance was used, the girl turned

to a flying cat. 1

The girl's small body was thrown in the air, then she fixed her posture with her amazing sense of balance<sup>2</sup>.

I threw the sliced dagger, the girl deflected it in the air.

However, she didn't seem to notice the wire hidden in the dagger. She's weak against feints.

The wire coiled itself on the girl's foot, then when I pulled it, the girl lost it's balance and fell.

I pulled one dagger to stab the girl.

The girl intercepted the attack with her nail and made a shallow cut on my cheek. At the same time, the dagger was sucked in by her neck.

I accurately aimed at her vital point, but it deflected like a steel.

It's not body strengthening through magic. I thought my blade pass through from the strong magic, but I only made a scratch.

Is this the reinforcement modeling of that supreme time witch?

The girl who landed on her feet perfectly put her hand on her neck and looked at me in surprise.

「You're strong」

「Thanks for that. Hey, can we talk for a moment?」

I hope that she becomes a bit calm and try to talk. However, that was useless.

The girl cut the wire on her foot and shouted happily.

「But, I wont lose!!」

She seems to take it seriously. The planar moves of the girl became three dimensional.

She's running around on the trees and the castle wall as she pleases.

From behind to the side, she attacks on where it can't be defended.

I make full use of prediction of feints and evade them all. I threw a knife to obstruct her, then created a wire course. Pretending to dodge to the right then running to the left, sometimes It's impossible to dodge so I roll on the ground clumsily.

The cuts in my body had increased.

I contrast on me who has no composure, the girl keeps speeding up. It's impossible to catch with my eyes. I can grasp her location with her magical power, but I don't know until when I can do that.

At first it was just small cuts on skin, but she starts to cut to the muscles. Is it a matter of time before I get tormented to death?

It's not fun to be seen by the witch, but I can't hold this.

I lowered my posture and jumped to evade the girl.

When I passed through the girl, I hang in the air waiting for purrsuit3

「Myaaa!」

It's reversed. As I move in the air, the girl can't take me down to kill.

I used my hidden flight ability at full force. The extended nail of the girl cut the air and doesn't reach me.

I grasped the hand of the shocked girl, then got on her behind in a



moment. I held her joints and sealed her movements.

「Let go!!」

The girl flails wildly, but I completely sealed her so it's futile. I flew in the sky with my flight ability. I jumped out the barrier while increasing my speed. Then, I turned without killing momentum, adding the acceleration of gravity, we're dropping vertically to the ground.

We're approaching the ground rapidly. Though there's the fear of death, I didn't lower the speed.

「Myaaaaaaaaa!!」

「Don't think bad of me!」

And, before we hit the ground, the girl shouted and kicked.

*doon* a loud sound and the earth was blown off.

I have cancelled the  $V_f = V_i + at$ , but I'm unable to stop the  $F = m(\Delta V / \Delta T)$  In addition, rolled on a trunk of a big tree a lot of times until we stopped.

My whole body aches. I could've been fractured somewhere.

I observed the ground <sup>zero</sup> without letting my guard down

「Funyaaaa...」

The cloud dust cleared up, then there's a girl rolling her eyes in the center. I might have caused a cerebral concussion. Still, judging from her looks, she doesn't look like injured.

I approached the girl while whipping my aching body. She doesn't look

like she's going to attack. I tied her up before it's too late for the time being.

A young girl can be seen near. The age is about ten years old. I thought it was a tiger or leopard from her response, but when I saw her tail and ear, she was an ordinary catgirl.

Originally, the cat girl from the cat race are gentle and timid, but it doesn't apply to this one a while ago.

I wondered and examined her body, then I saw the cause immediately.

There's a dark magic coiling in her body. It's a proof of magic pollution. This magical power is gnawing her body and spirit out of sense.

When I found it out, I can handle it easily. If I make her drink my usual magic purification medicine, the girl's sanity would return to sanity.

I took a small medicine vial from my pouch, then poured it into the girl's mouth.

「...\*goho\*\*goho\*7」

However, the girl has vomited the medicine. She can't drink well if she's unconscious. She will attack once she wake up just like this. Since it can't be helped, I decided to transfer it mouth to mouth.

I won't hesitate even if the other side is a girl. I held the medicine in my mouth and kissed the girl.

「N...」

I poured the medicine little by little, then she swallowed it. I separated

out mouths after the medicine is poured.

She's still unconscious, but she'll wake up soon. Then, that's all.

While I'm at it, I looked for injuries, but there's no problem in particular. Though I threw her to the ground with a considerable speed, there's no fracture. Don't I have more damage?

I pulled the cheeks of the girl for being absurd. It's squishy and soft. While I'm on it, I also touched fluffy ears.

「N~...」

The girl looks like she feels good for some reason8

I played with the girl who doesn't look like she's not going to wake up soon, then a sign of someone appeared from the back. A presence that made my whole body have goosebumps—

「You've finally come」

The instigator finally appeared. I turned around and shifted to battle mode.

「Don't be so cautious. I came here to praise you on your fight」

What appeared is someone in goth dress and black mantle, it was a girl wearing a black triangle hat. She's the witch-girl. Her long white hair shines on her black clothes. Her face is well featured like a doll, it has a eerie atmosphere somehow. She looks like a 10 year old.

However, her abnormal magical power fitted in her body above anything else.

The magical power amount exceeding Lion's scope. It's something dark that crawled out of the darkness of the abyss. From the way it persistently coils around the body, she's more dead than alive. It's certainly a level of monster that's the same as master.

It's the person that you should never antagonize in this country. —The witch of supreme time

「You're the witch of supreme time. What's this behavior?」

To my utter cry the girl shook her head.

「I don't like to be called by that name. Please feel free to call me Matifa」

1. No, she's not ↩
2. Cats ↩
3. That's intentional nyaa ↩
4. Flight ability momentum. I just want to science ↩
5. Hitting the ground ↩
5. Fall point. ↩
7. Cough Cough ↩
3. Maybe because you're touching her ears ↩

## Chapter 21: The first slave

「...Matifa, what do you need from me?」

Matifa kept nodding then began to speak joyfully.

「No, I just thought that you were interesting so I meddled with you. I wouldn't have thought that you're a pervert that enjoys smelling Seria's1 panties」

「...What are you saying?」

Why does this fellow know that I'm sniffing panties? That was in Seria's bathroom. I confirmed that there's no one around. I was alone in that room. I didn't even tell Cathy about it. That's why no one should know that...

But, as if ridiculing my hope, Matifa began to speak.

「You want to hear the details? Then I'll tell you. That was the evening eight days ago, a single man appeared suddenly in the royal castle. The man appeared from nowhere, flew, then disappeared, then he was running after the first princess Seria. After he invaded the princess' room, he disappeared again when the maid had come. Next, the man appeared on the bathroom where the princess is showering. Then the man picked up the freshly taken off panties of the princess, then brought his face close, then sniffed——」

「Da———! I got it! I got it already so stop. I was wrong. But, don't tell more than that!!」

Shit. I don't know the means she used, but she knows everything. I infer that it's a magic that I can't use. This is why I hate absurd magic.

Matifa laughed as she see me panic.

「That's why you're interesting. That man was enjoying the scent of the princess' panties, enjoying the flavor, he was having a trip in world of delusions while rubbing his crotch, then unexpectedly disappeared from the castle」

「I didn't lick it!! Don't add lies on it!」

Matifa continued to talk with an innocent look. Furthermore, she's making an exaggerated gestures like a drama.

「Well, well, calm down. I still hadn't finished my story yet. What's mysterious is that man has no magic at all, and there were no traces of using magic. I can only think of the events as magic. ——You, just what are you?」

An indescribable pressure is emitted by Matifa. Her silence tells that she won't allow me to lie.

Though, she looks laughing cutely, I feel like I'm being stared by a monster.

However, I can't tell her anything. Therefore I only have one answer.

「I don't know either」

Matifa wants to know my super abilities. I don't even know it either. However, I only use it because I can.

But, will Matifa be convinced by just that?

When I thought about it, Matifa quickly subdued her magic. The pressure from earlier disappeared too.

「Is that so? Then it can't be helped. It's not like I'm going to bite or eat you. I don't intend to arrest a suspicious person so be relieved」

「Is that so? If you're not going to arrest me, then something else? Did you really come here just to praise my victory?」

If you know what I did eight days ago, then you should be aware of today too. I don't understand her reason to overlook me.

Despite that, Matifa declared indifferently.

「That's true. Misha is strong isn't she? I just ordered her earlier but it seems she enjoyed it. Misha is my work of art that I have confidence in, but I didn't think that she would lose. Even this child has a B-class physical strength. However, just physical strength is useless isn't it? She has no techniques, and since she lost her calm, it's easy to turn the tables. No, since your attack can't pass through, I thought that you would win even if I closed up the barrier and escape route, so I stepped in. I truly admired the attack that you did to defeat Misha. It was wonderful」

「...Thank you for that」

Matifa spoke in one breathing then clapped her hand. However, why do I feel that I'm not being praised at all?

This cat eared call seems to be called Misha.

She said that Misha has a B-class physical strength. Just how was it evaluated in actual combat response?

The battle ability evaluation is commonly used to evaluate the battle ability of an adventurer or a knight. Common knight are D-class, Imperial guard is a C-class, and lastly, those with official position like a captain is a B-class. By the way, Lion is A-class A-classs is a class that's already called a monster, there's a gap below the B-class.

In short, Misha is still not ten years old, yet she equal to a trained skilled knight. Thinking that this will attack the corps, Just how much threat they will make.

I won because Misha simply has no technique. She's deceived by feints, she doesn't seem to be fixated on winning against me and was just playing.

The difference between deciding victory and defeat is the tactics, My ability has not reached B-class I only have the strength of a D-class, except when I use my super abilities, which makes me C-class.

When she stopped clapping, Matifa continued her story.

「I'll give you a reward for pleasing me. You can take Misha. It's a slave, a slave. You're a man so you like it right? Misha is cute. She's docile and obedient, a good child. She hates to lose, but bear with it. She can do cooking, cleaning, washing your clothes, she can help you with your daily needs. Of course, even at night. She meows when teased, and she's sensitive too. She's a bit young, but you like it right? Ah, be relieved. I trained her for a bit, but Misha is still a virgin. Her hymen is clean. She's strong as you've experienced. She won't hold you down. If you want it she can be stronger. If you buy her from a slave trader, 50 gold coins would be silly. If you let her grow a bit, it would reach a hundred gold. I want to go along with you. How's it? would you receive it?」

Matifa listed her words like a salesman.



If I was asked if I want a slave, I will answer without hesitation. However, if I believe Matifa's words, Misha is a no good anymore.

But I don't know what this witch is thinking so should I trust her? If I take her, would this girl kill me on sleep?

...Let's try asking her a leading question.

「Isn't Matifa affiliated with the second prince Desire? If you know me, then you also know my purpose, right?」

My objective doesn't agree with Desire's. Although, I don't care if Desire became the king, but if Desire is an enemy of Seria, then he's also my enemy.

And, Matifa is currently in the Desire and Mark Newt faction right now. I don't know her reason to overlook me and even help me.

「Yeah, that one? It's true that I cooperate with Desire and Ophelia, but our contract is only me handing the results of the research. Misha is just one person so there's no problem. In addition, I'm opposed for him to become the next king. I don't know what he's saying, but he won't be the next king. The two sons of Ortiz are exceedingly heartless. I recommend Seria as the next King. That's why I want to help you by all means」

Matifa relies on me. However, that's a misunderstanding.

It's not like I intend to make Seria the next King. Rather than being the king I want to make her mine. I don't mind having someone I don't know being the king, if Seria became the King, she'd be forced to work her duties. The suitable one is Lion, my bet is on Lion. In that situation, I'd be troubled.

I want to grasp the weakness of the next king in hope that Seria can live in the royal castle without getting sent off to marriage. If that time

happened no matter what, I'll use a husband puppet applying for the family name, but the real married person doesn't exist. My goal is to go to that extent.

But, it seems that Matifa is serious. In the first place, Matifa intends to kill me, so she can just use force here. Though I will run away alone. ....Is she giving me Misha to prevent that?

Thinking about the various ideas is a pain in the ass. She loves to talk, so it's probably better to throw a straight ball.

「I'm telling you this already, my intention isn't to make Seria the king. Also, I don't understand the reason why you're going to help me. What's your real objective?」

When I asked, Matifa put her hand on her chin and thought.

「Fumu, it seems you're on guard. Well, it's natural. Then, I'll tell you honestly. My interest in this experiment had already moved to another thing. That's you. I want to know about you. From a piece of our hair to the drop your blood, I want to know everything about you. When did you begin to have that ability, what theory does it have, how you manage that ability. What's the true nature of that ability? Why does that ability exist. And, what are you doing with that ability. I want to know everything about that. It's not an exaggeration to say that my heart is already captured by you.

However, your power isn't decisive enough. That's because you can't live in this world that's filled with evil spirits<sup>2</sup> Furthermore, I can feel that you're being called by a ruining desire. That's why I'm troubled. What's why I lent my power to you.

In reality, after taking your combat data with Misha, I was planning to

catch you to look up, but I changed my mind. I want to see how far can you go. However, it would be unfair if i help you out directly, so I will give the one you knocked down, Misha as a present. How's that? Did my feelings get through?」

From what I've heard, it's just a declaration of love. However, appearing and disappearing on my back is an abnormal attachment<sup>3</sup> She surely won't let me go, she'll observe me struggling from every corner She might have given me Misha for free on her whim.

「...I want to hear Misha's opinion. It was futile to ask her when she attacked earlier after all」

「True. Compatibility is important. If she got conscious, you should talk to her clearly. I'm sure you'd be pleased with it」

When I turned back, Misha's radiant golden eyes is watching me quietly. She cut the wires while I was unaware, and the frenzy a while ago disappeared, she's sitting quietly.

「Can I talk to you?」

「...Yeah. Misha will become your slave」

Misha doesn't look like she hate it. On the contrary, she looks like she's happy.

I love cute cat girls. I want to play various things with her. But...

「Are you really okay with it? Just to tell you, I'm a scum. I'll forge you to be a murderer. I'll even rape you」

I emphasized that I'm harsh. I would be troubled if she said no, if she resisted. It's unlikely that I win.

「It's okay. I'll do as Master say. I'll do my best in work!!」

Misha's eyes are happily sparkling. Since she was trained by that witch, I thought that her common sense was blown away, isn't this a little abnormal?

「Why do you look so happy?」

「Master is strong and cool! Also, you made me drink medicine. Misha is okay being Master's slave!」

She seems to like me because of that. It's like a grade school girl that fell in love with a fast runner boy.

Also, the purpose of making her drink medicine was to gather information, but...

No, in the first place, she might be thinking that I treat her better than Matifa.

With this suspicious witch, it's possible. Furthermore, since she did human experimentation the possibility is higher.

「Do you hate Matifa's place?」

「I don't hate it. However, the experiments hurt so I don't like it」

Misha frowned slightly. However, I can't see the true feelings why she hate it.

「OH? What did they do?」

「Unnn... I don't know」

Misha answered downheartedly. The big ears in her head faced down apologetically.

「Hahaha, It's impossible to find out about me from questioning her. My research isn't on a level where that child can understand. How is it? Even if you can't trust me, Misha should be okay. That child is a slave that came to my place without knowing anything, that's why you shouldn't worry. Misha seems to have taken a liking to you」

Before I knew it, Misha already curled her back, when Misha stood up, she pressed me in one go.

I thought of refusing, but when I saw Misha's expectant eye, words don't come out.

And suppose I refused it, I don't know what Matifa would do next. I know too well that she's a monster that's on Master's level that doesn't follow common sense. If I unskillfully displeased her, my life can't be guaranteed.

I can't do anything but to get on it.

「Okay already. Best regards, Misha」

「Uhn, best regards!」

I stretched my hand, and Misha grasped it happily. Thus, I obtained my slave.

1. The author must have misspelled Seria to Misha ←
2. 魑魅魍魎 – Evil Spirits of the mountains and rivers ←
3. だがその裏に見え隠れするのは病的なまでの執着心。←

## Chapter 22: Witch girl Matifa's semen exploiting lesson #

「Now then, since this matter has settled, I'll give this to Misha」

Matifa took out a choker with a small jewel.

「When invading the hall, you should wear this. It's a convenient item that can let you pass through this castle barrier. With this, you can freely enter the main gate from the wall. Hey, you should put it on her. A slave contract magic is included in it incidentally」

I received the choker from Matifa and coiled it on Misha's neck. No matter how you look at it, it's a pet cat collar.

「You passed this easily. Isn't this a valuable?」

「That's true. It's valuable that only one exist in this world. Because I just made it right now」

「What a load of bullshit」

Why are you making accessories with such valuable effects in your spare time? If you do that, the craftsmen would be driven to close their business.

「Don't say that. I had some trouble reaching all the way here. ——Oh is that so? Could it be that you want it too? It looks like there's some restriction and risks on your power right? The risk of the disappearance is mental damage. This is related to the time you disappear right? However, there's no mental damage during the invasion 8 days ago. The way I look

at it, there's another ability. But you have reasons why you don't use it much often. How's it? Was I right?

This fellow is tricky. She read my abilities easily.

I was mortified but the apprenticeship is different<sup>1</sup> This should be expected from someone who lived for more than 300 years.

But, If I can't keep it as a secret, I'll maximize it's use.

「You're correct. I want to have one too. It's true that I can pass through the barrier but doing it every time is a pain in the ass」

「N, Are you thinking of something rude?」

Matifa's cheeks bulged. Despite the cute appearance, a hateful magic is leaking.

I hastily followed-up

「I just thought that Matifa is a cute and an amazing girl. Leaving that aside, can you give me one?」

Matifa breathed out air, I felt that she lowered her arms. That's was fucking scary.

「Well it's fine. Let's see, is this good for you?」

When she said so, Matifa teasingly laughed and reached for her skirt.

Then, a pure white panties was taken down from the inside smoothly. She pulled it from her legs, then presented it to me.



「I'll give this to you. If you wear this on your head, you can slip through the castle's barrier. Yes, you can wear it as underwear too. However, it's no good if you just put it in your hands. How's it? You're glad?」

Matifa presented her panties while smirking. The underwear is filled with frills and has a small lace.

She told me to put this on my head? That's like a punishment game. For a moment I thought that it would be nice, but I can't bring myself to do it on a daily basis.

「Wait. It's too early for me. I have yet to throw my pride」

「Are you dissatisfied? Then I'll throw an extra. With this, you'll have unparalleled energy. Even girls are saying 'hiihii' and get pregnant, your penis will never run out of juice」

「That's just a mere pervert! Don't put that effect!」

What does this one want me to be? Does she see me as a pervert that much?

「You're too demanding. Then, this is the last one. If you wear this the wounds in your body would be healed. Your physical strength is restored incidentally too. I think you should save this for emergencies」

「What?」

「Well, don't knock it till you've tried it. First, let's heal the cuts in your body」

Matifa opened her panties with her two hands and slowly slide it. I was worrying if I should run away, or I should receive the it obediently. Yup,

that's good. Let's receive the panties Let's do that.

But, my decision was too slow.

「I can't move!」

「Sorry but I restricted you using magic. But if you use force, you can get through」

Certainly, If I used force I can get out. But, I feel that I will lose.

Also, isn't it dangerous to use my abilities in front of her? Even if I got lucky this time, she'd make a measure for the next and I would have a bad time.

Let's set it aside for the real trouble.

「What, aren't you going to resist? Is it okay for you to put my panties on you?」

Matifa reached my front, then used both hands to cover my head.

If this continued, I'd be covered in her panties. I feel like I'm going to lose something important if I do.

「Wait! Before you put that you must absolutely hear this!」

Matifa stopped moving when I shouted. This is my last struggle, so I raised my voice.

「Why is it white?! Your clothes are red and black! Is that really your fresh panties?!」

「.....」

「.....」

Silence ruled the place.

Matifa is blinking in surprise, while Misha's mouth fell open.

However, I must make this clear. Black goth, black panties. That's common sense. Red is barely okay. But, if it's white then it should be pumpkin print panties. Yet, why is it a white lace?

The one you're going to cover me, is something you made with magic and you didn't actually took off your panties, am I wrong?

If you want to know why, it's because I'm black haired. Black panties doesn't stand out in black hair.

Furthermore, someone who presents her own panties to a man is just a nympho. She must have at least a slight sense of shame.

That's why, Matifa created that white panties.

「...Fuu, ahahahahaha! Of all the things, that's what you're going to ask? Very well, I'll answer you. It's as you say, I'm using a black lace」

「Then, that's not the panties you're wearing」

「That's wrong. This is certainly the panties that I was wearing. However, I changed it to white using magic to match your black hair. You don't have to worry about something like color」

「Wh...at? Then you're saying that it's certainly your panties? But it can be said that the biggest identity of your panties, which is color is lost? No, but...」

「You're too persistent. Look, it's done」

When I noticed, my head was covered with panties.

「A——! What have you done!」

「Ahaahhaha, Misha, look at him. Look at the pathetic face! This is your new master」

「Uhm, Misha is master's ally!」

Misha is really a good child. On the other hand, Misha's abnormal character is a waste on her cute face.

Shedding tears while imagining her girlish appearance, my crotch feels sudden discomfort.

「This seems to work now. Your penis seems to be energetic as well」

Matifa looked at my groin and began to stroke it on top of the clothes.

「You, did you really add the unparalleled energy effect!?!」

「Isn't that obvious I'm a witch you know? A witch keeps the contract by all means. That's why I put all the effects I said a while ago so be relieved」

She said something outrageous.

「Wait, release this magic. Take off the panties.」

「Don't say something so cold. After all the trouble I did just to play」

「S—t—o—p!」

Matifa ignored my cries and happily took out my penis from my shorts.

It's already erect because of magic, and pre-cum is already expected to flow forward

「Misha, this is my last lesson. I will demonstrate it so watch carefully」

「Y-yes!」

「Don't ignore me!」

Matifa began to squeeze my rod while wearing black gloves. Her perfect use of power makes precise stimulation and it feels good.

「Isn't this quite an excellent thing? The length and thickness is bigger than norm, if you got violent it might damage a woman. The hardness is good too, and the shape is well. The vaginal walls sticking to it would feel good」

「FumuFumu」

「Hey! This isn't the time to be criticizing a man's thing! Misha, stop listening and help me!」

「Err...」

I feel that my pure heart is being trampled. Why did this happen!?  
It would have been good if Misha is flustered. But, Matifa doesn't care.

「Misha, you don't have to listen to an impossible order. Other than that, let's continue the lesson. You remember the sensitive point of a man right?」

「Yes~」

「You have to stimulate it this way...this happens」

Matifa began to stroke my penis with her hand. In addition her other hand is holding my glans, rubbing my sensitive part.

She's captured the weak point of a man precisely and quickly, then moving the gloves with a smooth texture, In addition, with the effect of the unparalleled energy the feeling of ejaculation rose up in no time.

「OOooo...Coming!」

I can't endure it and released my semen. The black gloves of Matifa caught the my cloud of children. She didn't let any spill and fall to the ground

It didn't even take one minute...

「Oooh!」

Misha was fascinated by the spectacle. ——This humiliation2

「Don't 'oooh'! Help me Misha! Why are you getting familiar with me, Matifa!」

「Me? that's because I'm a witch. In this experiment, sperm is necessary, and so I will exploit a lot of semen. Fresh is better」

This girl said exploiting semen!

「That's quite a treatment! Are men just livestock to you?」

「No, should you tell that to yourself? You just did Seria a while ago, am I wrong? I'm just giving an innocent boy a sexual lesson. And everyone is satisfies, I'll go back. I obtain my materials and I will be helped. Look,

there's nothing bad isn't it」

「Ugu」

Dammit...I can't retort

Meanwhile, Matifa fills up a small bottle that she got somewhere. She licked the remaining drop on her palm at the end.

「Yup, it's has a man's scent. Now then, Misha, it's your turn next」

After satisfying and silencing me, Matifa gave the place to Misha.

Misha asked Matifa on how to do me.

「But, master told us to stop...」

「Oh, that, you don't need to worry about it because he didn't mean it. He should already disappear from this place if he really wants us to stop. With your master's power it's possible. But he's not doing it, your master is waiting for you to make him feel good」

「Master, is that true?」

Misha looked up at me uneasy. You won't face someone who's face is covered with panties and his penis erect.

If she don't she might cry. I like to make women cry, but it's not my hobby to make children cry.

Act blindly!

「It's true. Do it Misha」

「...Okay~!」

Misha's hand stretched to my cock while laughing suddenly. Her squishy hand firmly grips my rod.

The power is stronger than Matifa, it still feels good. She pressed the point well.

She began to move her hand back and forth.

「How is it? Master」

「It's good. Where did you learn it?」

「Matifa taught me」

「Did you play with a boy together?」

「No, just the method」

Well, what does that mean? It's impossible to grow from matifa...grow?

「Matifa, you're a girl right?」

「What are you asking so suddenly. I'm a genuine girl!」

Sorry to say Matifa, but you're not a girl acting your age. 3

「I just thought that you can do something about it using magic」

「Since Misha is interested I helped and trained her. Don't worry, since the beginning I'm a real thing」

「Is that so? Then it's fine」

While I was speaking with Matifa, Misha continued to move her hand. I can't deny her lack of experience, but the technique was certainly



inherited. My penis just released just a moment ago, but the magic is filling up one after another, and it's ready to launch again.

「Misha, I'll release it. Receive it through your mouth」

「Okay!」

Without any resistance to my order, Misha followed it immediately. *dopyu dopyu* a cloudy liquid plunged inside the mouth that has a fang.

Misha caught it to the last drop, *aahn* she displayed the semen I released

「It's okay to drink」

Misha drank up the semen when I ordered her to do so. She's trained well.

「How's it? Did you like Misha and my panties?」

「Aside from Matifa's panties, I like Misha. I'll receive this thankfully」

「Then it's good. Since you healed your wound, should we change locations?」

...? Change location? It's not the end4?

「I thought you're going to release me?」

「I had a change of heart because you were interesting. I'll offer you a place so make sure that we're both satisfied. Look, come here.」

Matifa said and she began to walk, my body started to move without my permission. With a panties on my head like a certain rider<sup>5</sup>, I followed Matifa like a puppet. I seem to have no free will.

Misha embrace my arm while walking. She's behaving a spoiled child as she press her small breast that's starting to swell.

I really don't understand why she liked me. Do the beast people have a tradition where they obey if they lose?

Or is she seducing me to make me treat her good as a slave?

Well, she's cute so it's fine.

We soon reached a research building and gone upstairs. I was nervous that I would be found my someone, but I didn't see anyone. This research building is exclusive for Matifa.

Then my body finally became free after we entered the second floor.

1. 悔しいが年季が違ふ。↵
2. please don't turn to a masochist, I will drop translating this. fuck femdom ↵
3. Matifaは心外だと言わんばかりに答えるが、お前女の子って年齢じゃないだろ。I know I translated this one wrong ↵
4. It's never the end, you know that ↵
5. actual line is a "Hentai Style" ↵

## Chapter 23: The witch and the cat eared girl 3P ##

There's only one thing to do after my body became free. I took off the panties that's covering my head.

「You took it off already? It suits you quite well」

Matifa complained looking dissatisfied. But a man who's happy having his face covered with panties is just a Hentai<sup>1</sup>

「Give me a break. Rather than that, we're going to continue right? Misha, come here」

I strip Misha's clothes as starter. Even if I say that, it's just a slave cloth with one hole so she just need to raise her arm.

When I took her clothes off, Misha's young limbs become bare.

The flexible muscles peculiar to beast people has a wild charm. Her chest only has a point but it's beginning to swell.

I thought Misha's hair is black, but when I saw it in an well illuminated place her color is bluish purple just like a dawn sky. A big cat ear appears from her short cut hair. When I remembered the feeling when I touched it, I moved to flap it. Very interesting.

「M-master?」

「Oh, sorry. It's because you have a good hair」

I stroke the head of the perplexed Misha to fool her, I continued and reached out for her panties. Lowering the low-rise panties in order to

avoid the tail, a hairless land appeared.

「Hey you, don't just be preoccupied and play with me too」

After stripping Misha, a sulkish voice sounded. What I found is Matifa sitting on bed and puffing her cheeks bored.

「No, Matifa has no panties right? Aren't you prepared already?」

「Oh, that's it, so that's how it is. But, I think you can just show a bit of interest in my body right?」

「To be honest, I don't know how to strip that Gothic Lolita Dress」

Matifa wears a black goth loli dress and her clothes are frilly. A man like me can't imagine how to put it on nor take it off.

「For the time being if you pull our the ribbon on my back, it will come off. You should study this well」

「Is that so? Then allow me to study now」

I worked hard to strip Matifa. But the complex structure of Matifa is easier said than done. After struggling, I was somehow able to expose her chest.

「That's because you're not observing the structure well. I'll ask you to do better next time」

Matifa remarked. Why should you be preachy when on stripping clothes? 2 This loliba—.

「You say something?」

「Nothing」

However, I feel in awe when I looked at Matifa once again.

I can say that she's doll-like, Matifa's beauty is like a doll itself.

Her face parts are arranged perfectly, blue eyes like jewels, straight gray hair with no split ends, white skin like ceramics, a line representing the girl's peculiar danger. Everything seemed to be an imitation, but it was certainly a body of human.

「How's it? It's beautiful right? Because I can rejuvenate using magic, this face and body is born. Do you understand that this is the best happiness from holding such a beautiful girl?」

Matifa said filled with confidence. She can really be confident with it.

「Yeah, I can't object with that」

「Matifa-sama is beautiful as expected...」

Not just me, but Misha is also charmed by Matifa's beauty.

My body is naturally drawn and I kissed Matifa.

「N— you're quite aggressive. It's a good thing. Men should lead at such a time」

I pushed Matifa down to the bed and crept my hand on her small

body. The fresh and young skin sticking to my fingers feels good. Her chest is a bit fluffy, when I touched it it returns a squishy sensation. A pink small bud is picked up and stimulated kindly.

「Nn~ You're polite despite you're appearance. Others jump in when they see my body. Oh, a child with no delicacy will probably return」

「I intend to be gentlemanly for the time being」

「Ahaha, what a funny joke」

I'm not going to tell her that I'm familiar with Seria. No matter what, they'd rage if they hear another woman's name.

「Do you really bring men that frequently?」

「Don't say that. It's almost 200 years since I did a real thing. I found a promising boy that time and taught her how to sleep with women. That child seems to be happy with another woman after becoming a hero. Though I say that the child whom I trained hard wants it more recently, with that said, I'm not so cheap to let you do it. Even though I look like this, I'm a person with good moral. Since you're interesting and I'm having future expectations so I permitted you especially」

The digit was ridiculous. She surpassed the human life-span as expected. But, I don't understand how old Matifa is.

I feel that she's just 2 or 3 years by me. 3

「I'm honored. Enjoy it by all means」

「You too, feel me」

Matifa is surely thirsty. In the first place, Matifa's personality is out of standards that there's no matching man. Even if there's one, it's just in appearance. You can't get away with just laughing and talking to each other.<sup>4</sup>

For that reason, she likes me who took a life threatening practical joke without escaping.

I reflect on what I handled sloppily some time ago and caress Matifa seriously.

I feel bad on leaving Misha to wait, but then Misha also participated.

「Misha will join」

Misha licks the free nipple. Since it's rare, I did the opposite side and her nipples gradually got hard.

「Nnn~! You two work smoothly together.」

Matifa leaks a pleasant voice. I was uneasy because her body is too young, but it seems that she can feel it properly.

My hand reaches to her forbidden area and invaded her zettai ryouiki<sup>5</sup>. She didn't resist even if I rub her inner thighs, when I touched it, it was a little wet.

She also has a childish slippery pussy like Misha. I pat her genital as a greeting kindly.

「Haan! It's good. Touch there more」

「Where is 'there'? If you don't say it clearly I won't know」

「That's the place where you're mean. That's my pussy. Will you touch my

pussy more?」

「Your wish is my command」

I rubbed it bit by bit just as she told me, then finally a sweet voice leaked.

「Fuua! Haa! Un, that's good. Somehow my body got hot. You can go a bit more violent you know」

I understood her indirect demand and speed up my finger's movement. I exert some force on her slit, then rub the labia that's been hiding. In addition, love nectar began to leak as I stimulate her clitoris with my thumb.

「It got wet」

「Un, your hand feels good after all. If you'd like should I do it too?」

「You just did a while ago. It's my turn this time」

「Is that so? Then I'll leave it to you」

Matifa's handjob made me cum instantly so I'll refrain for now.

I left her chest to Misha and took off the clothes and moved between her legs.

I spread the legs that's been wrapped with knee socks, then her white skin and a perfectly closed genital area appeared under her skirt. The white and black contrast brings out the spice.

When I opened the meat kindly, the labia and a small erect clitoris appeared.

I peeled her clitoris and rubbed it with my finger directly.



「Aaaa! That's, that rhythm! Do it more!」

In response to Matifa's demand, I raised the level of caress.

I let my finger invade her small child hole quietly. Matifa's small hole swallowed my finger smoothly, sucking it tight. I grind inside, it loosened a bit.

Meanwhile Misha is fiddling with Matifa's chest. She sucks on left and right alternately, fiddling with her finger, then licks it with her tongue. She's quite used to it.

Is Matifa gradually feeling it? Her breathing turned rough.

On her entrance, it's flapping seemingly filled with desires, when I added a second finger, the love nectar increased quickly.

She's probably close to climax.

When I bent my finger and rummaged her vaginal wall, she raised her waist.

「Haaaa! Haa—haaa—! It's good, you. You're more skillful than I thought. I never thought that you'd make me feel good so easy」

Matifa seems to feel quite good. She clench the sheets firmly with her small hand and her eyes' gaze is in trance.

It should be fine.

「Matifa, I'm going in」

「Nnn! ...Your timing is huge? Fufu, you're quite a brute aren't you? —It's fine. Mess me up with your cock!」

「At times like this you should beg for the penis!」

I opened Matifa's legs wide then forced my glans on her small vaginal hole. As expected, with her body size it's quite tight. Still, I crack open Matifa's small entrance and embed my dick little by little.

「Nuuu! It's really big! And it's hot! Ahahaha, I'm getting broken!!」

「I won't stop anymore. Just a bit more so endure it」

「Okay! Hurry up and give me!」

Matifa clenched her fists on the sheets enduring something.

I pushed my waist steadily and the tip settled somehow. From there, I pushed my meat through and got further inside.

「Uaaaaaaaaa! It's coming in! Your penis! This is no good! I can't endure this! Cumming!!」

Matifa's body shook as she feel she got penetrated. I stopped and thrust the remainder quickly

「Aaaaaaaaaaaaaa!」

After I reached the deepest, Matifa climaxed. Her small body jumps, and her small vagina shrinks further.

「Do raw dicks feels so good after your first time in 200 years?」

「Yes! This is what I wanted!」

The walls of her vagina tightens around my cock.

I haven't inserted all yet but it seems impossible to take more. Let's accept and settle on this loli hole.

「Master...Misha too」

While feeling Matifa's loli hole, I heard a lonely voice next to me. A wistful Misha can be seen there.

「Come here Misha. I'll do you by hand」

「Okay~」

While inserted into Matifa, I beckoned Misha to kiss. Misha willingly included her tongue.

「Nn...\*Chupa\*...\*Chu\*...\*Pichu\*...」

I crawled my finger on Misha's round ass and genital area, it was wet already. Just like what I did to Matifa, I slid it and stroke to loosen it.

「Nmyaaa...Master's hand feels good」

Misha's face is melting from pleasure. While fiddling with Misha's loli pussy, I want to be stimulated too.

「Matifa, I'll move. Endure it」

「Haa, haa... Fufu, Even though I just came you're going to move

already? Okay, it's fine, come here」

Matifa's pussy got dripping wet, there's no more trouble to move even if it's tight. I moved my waist slowly, her folds sticks tights and it feels good. When I intensified my movements a bit, Matifa screamed.

「Haaaaaaa! aaaaaa! Amazing! You're amazing! You're forcing my vaginal walls, it's been a while since I felt this! Haa! Haa! Haha! I just came a while ago but I feel I'm gonna cum again immediately!」

「Haa, I won't stand for long, so just cum as you like」

「Okay! You're the best as expected !! I want to take you away from Seria!」

Matifa shakes her waist while saying so. I rotate my lets to suit with the movement of her waist according to her movements.

「That's impossible. I have no intention to give up Seria. However, If it's Matifa I'll think about it」6

「Fufu, that's already fine. You healed my suffering after all」

「Even if I declare you as a mistress you won't get angry? If you're okay with it, then I'll be your partner anytime!」

Matifa may be apathetic. I wonder if she has that mind because she lived for long.

「Nn...Master, I'm feeling numb again」

Misha seems to begin to feel it too. When I stimulated her

underdeveloped clitoris, her reaction was different.

「Nnn! It feels good there!」

「Do you know what this is?」

「Yes! Clitoris! Matifa taught me!」

She seems to be taught about it too. Just how far did you go?

「Then you do know what to do right? Do it to Matifa」

「Okay!」

Misha extended her hand on the part where we are connected and reached to Matifa's genitals. And pinched the clitoris without hesitation.

「Haaaaa! I'm feeling from my clitoris! Misha! More! Do it more!」

「Nyaaaaa! Misha too! Master, please!」

I surge into Matifa's vagina intensely. Attacking them both at the same time, Matifa's doll-like face is enchanted, and changed into a lewd girl.

A finger shoved in and opened Misha's unripe vagina.

My limit is close already. I moved my waist faster.

「I'm about to cum! I'll let it out inside your vagina」

「It's okay! Come! Come inside my vagina!」

「Misha too! Cumming!」

I go on my last spurt.

My waist and hand attacked without holding back.

「Guu! I'll ejaculate! I'm gonna blow!!」

「Haaaa, hurry up and make me dirty!」

Matifa clinged and put force on her feet. Her vagina shuts hard at the same time and the sperm welled up came out at once.

I thrust my penis inside her small vaginal hole until I reached my limit, *Byurururu* my burning desire was spit out.

「Coming!!」

「Aaaaaaaaaa! It's coming! Something hot is coming inside my vagina! Ah, I'm cumming again! Ah, Ah, Aaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

「Nyaaaaaaaa!」

Matifa and Misha climaxed at the same time. My penis and hand is being clamped that it hurts.

I stared as Matifa's body reached the climax of pleasure.

「Haa, haa, haha, you let out a lot. ——Would you kiss me?」

Matifa acted like a spoiled child and project both of her arms I kissed her deeply while being connected.

「\*Chu\*...\*Churu\*...\*Picha\*...\*chupa\*...」

Matifa's tongue technique is good. Sweet saliva entangles, our tongues are melting together. My son who lost strength a while ago got energetic again. It seems we can start round 2 immediately.

But unfortunately, I can't take Matifa as partner forever. I have another partner today.

When I separate our mouths, Matifa understood and nodded lightly.

Matifa reluctantly pulled out her vagina from my penis. A cloudy liquid dripped from the hole that has been spread a little.

Misha asked me when she saw that.

「Nn...Master's semen...\*picha\*」

「Misha's great isn't she? It's your turn next. I hope your new master fill you up」

Matifa stroked Misha's head adorably. The two flirting makes me feel jealous.

1. Kamen ←
2. Oh you Ren, you don't know the art of stripping yet ←
3. もしかしたら俺で言う2, 3年くらいの感覚なのかもしれない。←
4. 笑い合ったり軽口をたたき合うような間柄にはなれないだろう。←
5. Exposed skin between top of knee-high socks and hemline of skirt ←
5. だがMatifaも一緒なら考えてやる」←

## Chapter 24: Witch girl and Cat girl 3p part 2 ##

It's boring if I'm just watching the two beautiful girls flirt. I extend my hand on Misha's shaking tail in order to mix in.

「Nya!」

When I opened Misha's genitals, her inside is sufficiently wet already. It seems we're good to go just like this.

「I kept Misha waiting. I'm going in」

「Okay! Please insert Master's penis!」

Misha sticks out her butt asking for it while raising her tail.

I stick my penis to Misha's hole that's smaller than Matifa's. The lubricant is enough, but the entrance is so small that I feel uneasy entering it.

Was my hesitation seen through? Matifa advised Misha.

「Misha, relax, relax yourself. If you strain power it would be hard for your master」

Matifa persuades Misha while patting the line of cheek from Misha's neck. With that alone, Misha's body lost power.

When I force my glans, the meat is spreading along the way. But I still can't insert it easily.



「Nyaaaa, my crotch is spreading!」

Misha is surprised by the sense of first time.

Power enter Misha's body and my glans were repelled. It might be an influence of body reinforcement, her resistance is stronger than I thought.

「Misha, it would be fine so calm down」

I persuade Misha while stroking her ass, but she doesn't relax easily. Then, Matifa interfered.

「You, try to grip her tail. You'll see something interesting」

「Like this?」

I caught the blueish purple tail in front of me just like I was told.

「Funyaa! M-master!?!」

Her hair stood up for a moment, and it thickened round enough. In addition, Misha's body jumped, and she collapsed and fell limply.

「Cat person's erogenous zone is their tail. Misha is no exception. By the way, Misha can feel it if you stroke her tail like how you stroke your penis. I trained her that way」

I stroke her fluffy tail just like Matifa said, Misha's sticking out her small ass and she's melting completely like a mascot from somewhere.

I began to invade the young vagina that lost it's strength once again.

「Nyaaaa...master's penis...big...」

Even if relaxed, Misha's vaginal hole is still tight. She's still too young as expected. Still, my glans manage to be buried and I felt some strong resistance. It's her hymen.

「Misha, it will hurt but endure it」

「Okay, Mi—sha will endure it」

*Gugugu* my penis thrust in. While tearing her membrane, I screwed her small vagina by force

「Nya, nyaaaaaaa! Master!? It hurts!」

As expected, loss of virginity is painful that Misha is disillusioned for a moment.

It tightened up that my penis seems to be torn off at the same time.

「It hurts, it hurts! Misha relax!」

「Nyaa! Nyaaaaaaa...」

I gripped Misha's tail while ordering her, then Misha's body relaxed again. You can really control her by a single tail. If I know this, then I could've won the battle earlier.

「Hey, it's interesting right? Since I can't train inside this child's vagina, I developed her mainly there instead. It's possible for her to cum with just her tail now. Now, it's your role from here. Don't just make her feel pleasure from the tail but also in her vagina」

Matifa began to caress Misha while saying that. She kissed Misha then fiddled on her flat chest as revenge from earlier.

Misha melts as it happens.

When I looked at the connecting part, there's quite an amount of blood flowing out. But, Misha doesn't look to be in pain anymore.

I began to piston while settling on only half inside her vagina. I pulled my waist and her folds sticks on me. On the contrary, a hard muscle shrinks tight and my begins to contract on my whole penis.

Every time I thrust, the illusion of Misha's meat is being scrapped of is remembered. She's an obedient cute kitten instilling the image of her master.

「Misha, how's it?」

「Nyaa, Master is warm. Master is melting Misha once again」

Misha's been embraced by Matifa's chest feeling pleasant. She's delighted that her expression loosened.

Looking at Misha's state, Misha loved it and loosened her cheeks.

「Misha is cute. I want such a daughter」

「On the outside both of you look like children. However, I agree with your opinion」

「Fufu, you're a bad papa for mating with your child」

「Yeah, I'm a bad guy after all. I'm a murdered and a child rapist」

Matifa expresses a smile after hearing me.

「You're an unusual type aren't you. You commit a crime but you still hold good sense. And you're not laying out an excuse such as trivial sense of justice or false truth, you hold your will to the end.

You recognize the world as is, normally, you don't insist your ideas. The only person who can do that are from outside of this world, someone who has been called by a god. Just like me for instance.

I'm in that age, besides, I admire how your body lasted without magical power. I seem to fell in love with you seriously」

Saying so, Matifa separated from Misha and crawled her hands on my body. She sucked at my nipples and rubbed my testicles with her fair delicate hand. My crotch reacted to the stimulation and Misha raised a groan.

「I'm not that amazing. I'm just a selfish man」

Every time I hear Matifa's words, an indescribable frustration wells up inside. I thrust my waist so hard to vent it out.

「Funyaa! Ah, master, it hurts」

Misha looks suffering, but it doesn't matter. It's the slave's role to accept it. Matifa kept talking while not minding Misha.

「That selfishness, everyone is just as bad, you now that you're the same as them. There's no such thing as righteous. Law is just to make the society stable, it's not something to protect a person. Since you can't expect to be protected, you should protect yourself」

「I'll do that even without you telling me. I can no longer turn back」

「That's correct. I will support you on that」

Thus, Matifa's long talk was over.

I'll do what I want to do. Right now, it's Misha. I'll fill up the womb of this lovely kitten with my semen.

「Misha, how's my thrust in your vagina? Are you used to it already?」

I speak while thrusting Misha violently.

「Yes, Master's penis, keeps coming inside me, it feels good! Something coming to Misha」

「Then don't endure and cum」

「Okay, okay, Misha's cumming! I'm cumming from mashter!」

The sliding gradually improves, it makes the piston faster. In addition, Misha's panting voice became intense too.,

「Nyaa, nyaa, nyaaaaa! Cumming! Cumiiiiiiiiing!!」

Misha's body clinging to bed trembled before long. I felt her always

narrow small vagina getting tighter.

「Misha's too sensitive. Do your best because it's not the end yet」

I stir up Misha's tightening vagina forcibly. It's too tight that I can't move, but I throw impact on her womb at least.

「Nya, nya, nyaa! mashtter's coming, nyaaaa!! Misha's cumming isn't stopping!」

When I caught and rubbed her tail, Misha began to continuously cum. She meows and yell with her inarticulate tongue.

「You're a bad master. Did my words hurt you that much?」

「If you know then don't say it. After Misha it's your turn」

「Ooh, that's scary. Then I suppose I'll wet myself and wait」

Matifa licked her own finger then began to comfort her genital with her hand.

I throw what I accumulated inside to Misha.

「I'm blowing, Misha! Take it!」

「Nyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

*Byuryry byuru* I released semen inside Misha's womb. I defiled Misha's uterus with my syrupy thing.

「Hanyaaa...ah...」

That time, a golden liquid leaked out from Misha's crotch. It made a big stain on the bed.

「Ah...I'm sorry...Misha leaked out...」

「I don't mind it Misha. This much isn't a problem」

Matifa comforted the apologetic Misha. Since the owner of the bed doesn't mind, I don't mind it particularly either.

When the leaking ended, Misha fell limp on the bed. Her tail has lost its vigor too.

「Good work Misha. It was good」

「Hanyaaa...Master is really amazing...」

Misha began to sleep just like that. It seems she's really tired

I stroke the head of the kitten with a childish body who accepted me and turned to Matifa.

「You know what's next?」

「Of course. I don't mind you doing so intense that you'd break this body」

「Don't regret it」

「Who do you think I am? You better not regret it」

Then, until the new day breaks, the flirtatious voice on the research

building didn't stop. While doing Matifa Intensely, I also had sex with Misha a lot of times.

I recover using Matifa's magic when I get tired, and I continued the act until I lost my strength completely.



## Chapter 25: Girl's promise

The sun shone on the room I'm not familiar with, I was speechless on the spectacle.

Two girls who aren't even 10 years old are lying down on a bed full of semen.

One of the girls is a cat eared and tailed girl with a bluish purple hair, the other one is a like an artificial product white and black girl White liquid is pouring between their mouths and crotch, sperm sticks on both of their face and chest.

If I remember correctly, this happened after my second round with Matifa. I attacked Matifa intensely while she's gasping for breath. When I lift her like the cursed doll in gossips, she used the royalty's secret magic to me. Why can this one use it? By the way that panties also had the same effect as this, the whole string of questions was blown off and I turned to a beast.

I pushed down Matifa with all my power and poured her vagina with semen like an idiot. If I can't enter anymore, I didn't hesitate and penetrated the curling body of Misha who's sleeping. In addition, I penetrate this two in turns. My lust was received by the two obediently.

When My reason was returning as I bang Misha's insides, Matifa used her magic again. I stopped when the vagina of the two became a semen tank and used the mouth of the two. The parts they can't finish drinking spilled on their just swelling breasts, I kept letting it out. Both Misha and Matifa seemed glad on the semen shower, rather, they rub my balls and squeeze my cock aggressively.

When my reason returned again, Matifa used her magic for the third time. However, my physical strength was also on the limit. Then the two

people who guessed it began to push me down and shoved my cock in their pussy and began to move their waist. The two little girls used semen instead of lotion and inserted my penis in their pussy, the chaotic scene looks erotic. It's too chaotic that I don't even know if we're exchanging saliva or semen when we kiss. The two girls squirted like a fountain, my physical strength is strained at the end as I thrust to the two young hole leading to what's right now.

In short, I had been forced to become a monkey midway. It's a disgrace.

「Haa, haa, haa...」

「You seem to be tired. Well, it's reasonable. No matter how you forge yourself, since you have no magical power, you can't go out of person's level」

Matifa talked to me while her arranging her breath as she sit on the other side of the bed, looking at the sunrise. Lying down next to Matifa is Misha who is sleeping peacefully in bed. I'm saved by the satisfied expression of these two.

「If you think so then don't overwork me. What would you do if I get ED?」

「I was wrong about that. I've been too enthusiastic after a long time. It's because you're too passionate, Also, you should be proud that you lasted. You were trained well. You exceeded my expectations after all. You're really interesting」

「Give me a break」

She seems to be interested on ill-natured people. If she discovered that I'm an otherworlder, it would be more trouble. I must absolutely conceal

it.

I had Matifa clean our bodies with magic, I put on clothes and decided to carry Misha on my back where I can return my strength.

「You can come anytime again. I'll plan a different welcome next time. When you're inside the castle I can basically sense you, so you don't need to knock. Well, your ability seems to be able to pass through my senses, but, For now, I'll change my target. I'll analyze your ability. Therefore, be sure to come to the royal castle. And the matter about my panties is a joke. It's possible to get away from the barrier even if you don't put it on so be relieved, you should be relieved. But it's useless unless you possess it. Also, I returned it's color to black. Instead, I recommend you to hang it on your nose and mouth. Now then, that's all for me. I'll leave Misha to you」

Matifa looked slightly lonely when she said.

「That reminds me, I forgot to ask one thing. I think of transferring your contract of remodeling the beast people with Desire, can you do something about it?」

Matifa answered my unusual question with a smile.

「Witch's contract is absolute. I can't break the service contract. Therefore, for that matter I can't help you. In truth, just telling you is already a breach of contract, but since you stole the secret from Desire and you were able to beat Misha so it's possible. In other words, this is the maximum concession for me. If you want to get rid of the contract itself, you must either defeat me or kill the 50 remodeled beast people. This is all I can say. From here, is something you have to do by yourself」

Matifa said as she laid down on the bed tired. It seems she won't talk any further. I decided to come back home and sleep too.

I went over the castle wall secretly from the sky while carrying Misha on the back. Just like Matifa said, the barrier didn't react at all.

I enter the hideout at the entrance of the second floor and I entered the bedroom without stopping at the workroom. It's a simple room with only a bed and a closet.

I lay down Misha on the bed and crawled next to her.

It was really hard today. Cathy did wake up fellatio in the morning, I eavesdropped in the royal castle, raped Seria while near Lion, fought Misha, and played and did naughty things with Misha and Matifa. When I think once again, it was a cruel day. But, there were some harvests too.

The next big event will be Will Gantt house and Felix's return. The first report of Seria being attacked would soon arrive but the big deal has not been reported at all. Also, I had Cathy to watch Will Gantt House so there's no problem. I can't go against the fatigue from the travel so let's firmly take a rest here. I slept while thinking so.



It was afternoon when I woke up. When I rose myself and looked around the room, My eyes met with Misha which is staring at me.

「Good morning Master」

「Morning. Is your body okay already?」

「Yup, I'm okay」

Misha hops repeatedly saying so. The skirt is rolled up casually and her panties are exposed to full view.

She looks quite healthy. After the violent fight and her first experience yesterday, she's quite fine. My body still feels heavy. I wonder if this is what being old means.

「For the time being, let's eat」

「Okay, Misha will make one」

I moved to the living room while being relieved that Cathy isn't there. I had left some preserved food, but I decided to leave it Misha and let her do as she like.

Misha began to cook like she's used to it.

She peeled the potatoes off smoothly with her sharp nails, she also cut the hard dried meat into easy to eat pieces.

She lit fire on the furnace with her fingernails instead of flint, then boiled the soup Just what on earth is that nail made of?

She licked the seasonings, salt and herbs to confirm the taste then she threw small amounts.

She blew to cool it down before tasting, satisfied, she put the container aside.

In this world, meat and vegetable soup is common. And a solid brown bread is standing on the table. This much is the limit when you're trying to cook with ingredients right now.

I licked to check the taste of the soup.

「—It's delicious. Good job Misha」

The rich taste sinks on my tired body. The seasoning is moderate, the bad smell of the meat is put out and it doesn't kill the other taste so I have no complaints. Furthermore, I'm surprised that the dried meat that should be hard to eat was processed in a way that it's bitten and cut easily.

Misha on my side looked at me nervous, I pat her head and she was pleased. It seems I really found a good bargain.

I had Misha use the table and the two of us ate.

As soon as I gave her a permission, Misha nibbled on the bread.

「Isn't Misha better in this than fighting?」

I let out my thoughts suddenly. Judging from the fight yesterday, her body ability is high but she doesn't know fight techniques.

「Mogumogu1...Yes, I was helping the household all the time, then I was brought to Matifa-sama's place and became strong. Hagu2...」

Misha is originally a house aiding slave from a merchant's house. However, Matifa bought the goods of the slave merchant. And then, she did remodeling reinforcement and gave them incomparable strength. It seems dozens of beast people have been bought the same way. Among then, Matifa was interested in Misha and gave her special treatment. Night and day.

Beast people have been made to fight among themselves and Misha is reinforced especially and was the strongest.

「However, Master is stronger! Though Misha was strong she was never

able to win against Master. Master is an amazing person!」

It seems to be the reason why Misha recognized me. It's merely a difference of experience, but it's not necessary to correct it. I obediently accepted the gaze of respect of Misha.

After we finished our lunch, we went out the town. It's to get Misha's daily clothes. After buying it briefly around the shopping area, I went on the back store and bought a spy costume for Misha.

When I asked the back store to make Japanese clothes for Misha, the female merchant looked amazed and brought moderate goods. We just talked for almost an hour so why? Misha starts to talk as if scared. The companion was a Japanese gentleman but not to this degree.

And, while we're at it, we passed through Capo's pharmacy in order to buy fatigue reduction medicine. Misha faced the wrong direction suddenly

「Master, there's a scream. Perhaps, a girl」

Misha raised a worried voice. The direction Misha is facing is an unpopular alley. I'm not so corrupt to abandon a girl in trouble. ...I hope she's cute.

「Lead the way」

「Here!」

When I ordered her, Misha began to ran happily. I follower her. I caught magical power hanging around the back alley immediately. The number

was 4. One person's magical power is abnormally low. This feeling is the girl with a hat whom I met with Capo yesterday. There's no mistake that her house must be close.

I heard the girl's scream along with the laughter of the scums from the back alley.

「No! let me go!」

「Calm down!」

「It's an easy job to take and collect children with no Magic」

「Yeah, we can drink good alcohol today」

「Stop talking and help me here!」

It seems that they knew the girl and attacked her. Is their purpose kidnapping?

「I'll make an opening so Misha secure the girl. Don't kill」

「Okay」

I shortened the distance and plunged to the back alley.

Just before my opponents saw me, I flew and got overhead. The enemies are a shorty, fatty, and skinny. Their magical power isn't so strong, they're just hoodlums expert on small fry. It's unnecessary to kill them.

The girl's arms are being held by the fatty so she's in a situation which she can't run away. Her broad brimmed hat trademark fell on the ground and her pink hair is disheveled. She's holding a paper bag on her right hand.



First, I land on the back of the fatty who's holding the girl's arm. I beat his head with a dagger at the same time.

Fatty's eyes turned white and fell on the ground slowly.

「What are you! Appearing from nowhere!」

The small man noticed my existence immediately readied his sword and magic.

He was one beat late and the thin man noticed the abnormality and reached for the girl

「Don't move! I don't care what happens to this—」

However, the man's arm flew to the sky. Misha secured the girl from the fat man who fell down. Nice timing.

「Stop that. You won't experience pain if you pull out now」

I gave them a warning as the general public and the girl saw me. If there's no eyewitness then questioning are unnecessary.

「Aren't you a man with No magic! How dare you putting up a brave front! Don't think you can go against the three of us Tartarus sword」

「Ha? Tartar sauce?」

「Mackerel sword...Delicious. *Drool*」

The short man suddenly said something incomprehensible.

Misha muttered something disturbing from the back. Even if we defeat them, I don't think their delicious.

By the way, in this world, mackerel isn't a fish but a monstrous sword with a distinctive eye. It tastes very good. Especially, it's fried egg is outstanding.

「The three Tartarus sword! Youuu, I won't forgive you!!」

The short man slashes me while shouting. His movement was strengthened with magic. However, his too obedient to his swordsmanship.

Or rather, where did they get this cursed sword? The sword of Shorty has a strange pattern, but I don't feel any magical power dwelling, it's an ordinary sword.

When I match the dagger with the swinging sword, there's no abnormality as expected. I just slid the hammer and I palmed his chin to counter.

This technique is drilled by my master physically, you shake the brain of the opponent. Their body is strong to some degree, but they can't prevent it all.

The shorty fell down slowly and I aimed at his stomach.

The thin man from the back pulled out a knife immediately. I twist my body and dodged, but it grazed my clothes. I seem to have been made to mistake a chance for a matted black blade by a lanky arm. 3

However, only my clothes are cut and there's no abnormality. There's no cursed sword that erodes you with fire.

I twisted his arm and pinned him down the ground.

Could it be that the one they call cursed sword is this one looking like a

kitchen knife? If so then the first assumption 'tartar sauce' would be funny.

It's a typical bluff, but a person who can't detect magical power well may be fooled. I say the bluff tactics peculiar to the weak. I know it well. These fellows are probably like me.

「That's the end. Give it up if you don't want to be pushed to the guards」

「I-I give up. Please spare my life...」

I snatched his black knife and threatened him, the skinny kept nodding. When I released him, he took his companions and run away.

I picked up the hat and removed the dust.

「For the time being, let's change place」

I covered the girl who's held by Misha who's absentminded with a hat. At that time, I saw a sharp ear floating from the interval of her hair.

1. NomNom ↔

2. Bite ↔

3. つや消しされた黒い刃とひよろ長い腕で間合いを錯覚させられたらしい。↔

## Chapter 26: Tiny Breasts vs Tiny Breasts

I never thought that a clichéd event would come.

I was helped by Seria when I was attacked in this world. Then I grew up to be on this girl's side to help her. If I attack somebody afterwards, it's a complete conquest. No, since I attacked Seria so it's already complete?

I came back to the street while thinking of such a foolish idea. First, let's talk to the girl I helped.

「Are you okay? Were you injured?」

「I'm fine. Thank you for helping me」

The girl pulls down the visor of her hat with both of her hand and expressed her thanks while hiding her face. But she can't hide her red cheeks. She's quite shy.

Oh well, I played the part of a reliable onii-san who helped her. If she doesn't react then it's boring.

「If you have someone to thank, thank Misha. It's Misha who noticed your voice」

「Thank you too. You're quite a strong girl」

「Yes! I did what Master told me」

Misha looks satisfied with the thanks. Her tail shakes with her mood. It's been a while since I did a good thing so I continued the Hero act.

「I'm glad that you're okay. While we're at it, let's send you to your

house」

「Are you sure?」

「Yeah, I'm worried after all」

「Then...Please」

I walked the street by the guidance of the girl. I Meanwhile, the girl hid her face and fell silent. Is she still embarrassed? What a cute girl, when I was thinking of that, my sleeve is getting pulled.

「Master, your face is weird」

「Don't say it」

When Misha warned me, I changed the subject to fool the girl.

「By the way, what's your name?」

「Hahya! Uhm, Lilith. I'm called Lilith!」

Lilith, who was thinking deeply was surprised with the sudden voice.

「It's Lilith? Why you went alone today?」

「Err, onee-chan fell down and I got medicine from oji-san. Then, I was attacked by the people on the back...」

From Lilith's talk, the two sisters are living together and the elder sister suddenly came back home from work during daytime and fell down. The person herself said that she's just tired so there's no need to worry, but the worried Lilith took medicine from Capo alone. Then, she was

suddenly attacked on the way and reached the back alley and that brings to the current situation.

Then, we immediately arrived at Lilith's house while talking

There was a two story house with a terrace.

It's a cheap rent house which is built by the state support. When I looked left and right, all the houses have the same structure.

Colorful flower blooms in front of Lilith's house and is much more livelier than the other houses. Gardening is probably her hobby.

I told her to be careful before we bid farewell, I squat down to match the eyes of Lilith.

「Be careful next time. Since we people with No magic are easy to be aimed at, don't go alone. Okay?」

Lilith nodded as she saw my still face. Her face is red. This girl fell in love.

I'll just leave coolly afterwards. Bye then, when I turned back, Lilith raised a cry.

「U-uhm! A-as thanks! Err...Would you like to drink tea inside?」

Lilith wants to detain me. However, I don't know what to do so I can't speak.

「That's right! Snacks! I'm about to bake cookies! Please eat it by all means!」

「Cookie! Master, let's eat cookies!!」

*Pikon* Misha was baited with food. Her eyes are sparkling just like when I was attacked. At this rate I can't do anything but go in. This isn't the development I wished for.

「Well then, if you insist」

With that said, I intruded Lilith's house.

There's a lot of flower arrangements and houseplant that calms my heart inside the house.

「You like plants?」

「Yes~ It's because it calms down restless people naturally. Also—I'm an elf after all」

Lilith hesitated, but took off her hat, then her pointed ears are exposed. It's moving unsteadily as if insisting it's existence out her pink hair.

「It's a secret right? Why did you tell me?」

「Onii-san saw it a while ago. Also...I believe in you」

Lilith looked at me and Misha while saying so.

While we're talking, footsteps can be heard from the upper floor

「Lilith came back? Oh, a visitor?」

「Ah, Onee-chan you should still be sleeping! These people helped me

when I was attacked a while ago. I want to thank them so I let them in」

The magical power from the voice I heard is familiar. Then, when I saw the face of the person from the second floor, I imagined I pumped my fist into the air triumphantly.

Coming down is a leaf colored hair elf dressed in pajamas— Seria's maid, Lululie.

I thought of it since I saw Lilith's pointed ears.

Demi-human's standing in this country is low. There are considerably few people living in the royal capital who doesn't discriminate them severely. Furthermore, they can't take good jobs because they have to take magical power purification medicine. It's true that she has a decent job. With that, It's natural to think that Lilith's elder sister is Lululie.

Of course, there's a possibility that it's an unknown elf from the capital. But the two are sisters just like how I imagined.

I'm able to make contact with Lululie by chance. I can use this.

While my scum thoughts are rising, Lilith talked while making some hand gestures.

「It really happened in an instant! When I thought Onii-san was cut the other guy was down! He then suppressed the other person in a flash, it was amazing! Then, Misha carried me like a prince even though she's small—」

Lilith is too excited that she talked about what we did to Lululie over and over again.

When Lilith finished speaking briefly soon, Lululie bowed at me.



「Thank you so much for saving Lilith. I'm Lululie, this child's sister. Here's our living room, please come」

Then, we were guided by Lululie to the living room. We finished the self-introductions in the meantime.

Lululie's gaze seems to investigate but I guess it isn't just my imagination. She thinks I'm a suspicious person, but she hadn't seen through me. She seems to not noticed my relationship with Seria since the attack the other day.

「Please relax as I prepare the tea」

Lululie says as she heads to the kitchen, but her feet is unsteady.

It's understandable. She slept on the duration of the attack, then forced to sleep through magic to remove her fatigue. Furthermore, when she woke up, she constantly attended to Seria. She returned home today probably because she left the castle after being kicked out by Seria out of her room last night. It's natural that she'll fall down.

Lilith stopped Lululie.

「I'm going to do it so Onee-chan should rest」

「However, can Lilith set fire?」

「I can do it if I try」

「But...」

Quarrel between siblings is no good, but they suddenly started fighting. However, the words of worry are the only one coming out. This

sisters must be close.

An outsider should just watch and not butt in, but the quarrel escalates gradually.

「I will do it」

「No, I will...」

「I will—」

They won't hand it over each other. Then, Lilith spoke a line she shouldn't say.

「Onee-chan should rest so you can't. Your boobs won't grow big if you don't!」

「Wait, Lilith!?!」

Lululie shyly hid her small chest with her hand due to the sudden mental attack. But, Lilith didn't care about it.

「I know it. Onee-chan rubs it when she's taking a bath to make it bigger」

「L-Lilith, shut up!」

「I won't shut up. Onee-chan always mind her breasts and kept sighing」

「Isn't Lilith the same!」

Lululie lost it and made a comeback to Lilith. Then, the fight between two tiny breasts started.

「If I grow up, I'll be like Seria-sama!」

「It's impossible. Princess is already big when she was at your age」

「I-It's not impossible. I'll definitely surpass onee-chan!」

「Look, your target changed. Also, I won't lose to Lilith」

Lululie cuts down Lilith's dream in one stroke.

Is Lilith the same age when I first saw Seria? Certainly, Seria's breast was bigger than Lululie's that time. No matter how long the elf lived, it's impossible for Lilith to catch up with Seria.

But, I don't know who would win on Lilith vs Lululie.

「I-I can win. I heard how to get as big as Seria」

「Wait a moment Lilith, teach me that」

Lululie questioned Lilith desperately. What an absurd drive.

Lilith grinned and said.

「Noo~ I won't teach Onee-chan. You can just do what you do by yourself」

「Is that so? then tonight's dinner is green pepper」

「Why!? green pepper has nothing to do with it?」

「When you're choosy, your breast won't grow big」

Lululie's counterattack began. She used the deadly 『Being choosy is bad』attack. It's impossible for a child to counter it. Now, how will Lilith dodge this?

「Ugugu, I-I can even eat green pepper!」

「Then, I'll add eggplant, tomato and mushrooms」

「Eeeeh! W-wait. I'll talk, I'll talk so...」

Lilith raised the white flag on the Lululie's onslaught.

However, Lilith's eyes swim as she speak. She really doesn't know the method how to make the chest big. She's thinking desperately right now. She glanced at me, then, she her eyes flashed as if she's inspired.

「Err, Onee-chan. That method is...rubbing」

Lilith springs out her hand as Lululie approach her. But, Lululie answered with a flat voice.

「I already tested it」

I remembered a slight fear with her mutter of despair.

But, Lilith won't go down yet.

「That's different, you shouldn't massage yourself, but the one who you love should!」

「The one I love...」

「That's right, therefore it's impossible for onee-chan to be single forever. I'm getting massaged by onii-san so I'm fine!」

Saying so, Lilith jumped at my arm. Her hard rib pressed against me. Then, Lululie finally remembered that we exist.

「Ah...」

「Ahahah...」

Lululie became stiff with Lilith clinging to me, I laughed to deceive her and Misha is grooming her tail.

What's this chaos space? For the time being, let's run away. It's the best way.

「Ah, what is it? I'm hungry. Misha」

「Yes, I'm hungry. I want to eat the cookies soon」

Misha read the atmosphere properly. Next, let's give her a task.

「That's right, Misha, help Lilith. You won't have problems baking cookies right?」

「Okay, leave it to me. Let's go」

Misha pulled Lilith's hand and led her to the kitchen. Lululie sat on the chair, she seemed embarrassed.

「I'm sorry, I showed something unsightly...」

「Don't mind it. I didn't hear nor see anything」

After talking with Lululie for a while, Lilith brought the tea in front of us.

「Look, I can do it Onee-chan!」

「That's because Misha-chan helped you. Gosh...」

Lilith boasted on Lululie for a bit, then she returned to the kitchen. She will bake cookies with Misha this time.

Apparently, this war is Lululie's loss.

After the play ended, I tried to talk to Lululie.

I faced Lululie once again and talked to her with a serious face.

「Lululie, I want to talk about the matter when Lilith is attacked」

「...What could it be?」

She understood the atmosphere, Lululie's face turned serious too.

「This time those fellows tried to kidnap Lilith, but they aimed at Lilith as an individual. It wasn't because since she's an elf with No magic, it's Lilith herself. You got a clue why she's aimed at?」

「If I have any ideas?」

Lululie is lost in thought hitting her elbow with her hand.

「That's right. The reason why Lilith's attack— for example, she might know some important information about the attack on Princess Seria the other day」

When I said that, Lululie looked at me suspiciously.

「...Why's it about that?」

「Lululie might not know it, but the matter about Princess Seria being attacked by someone the day before is already a rumor downtown. She was with a maid that time. And then, they attempted to kidnap Lilith a while ago. When you match it, you can see the aim of the criminal」

Lululie meditated for a while, then her mouth slowly opened.

「In short, the real aim...is me?」

I silently agreed.

If they were to kidnap Lilith, what would she do? Since Lululie has no money, they won't demand it. Perhaps, their real purpose is Lululie, or to threaten Seria.

Perhaps the mastermind is no other than the three perpetrators. Then, the mastermind knows the relationship of Lululie and Seria.

「This is just a guess. Also, I haven't heard about the details. However, it seems the two of you are in danger」

「——That's, true. Your speculation might be true. However...」

Lululie understood the meaning of my words. But, she's confused. She doesn't know what to do.

But, I will push it here.

「So, I have a proposal. I, with Misha intend to guard you two for a while. I have the same constitution as Lilith but I'm sensitive on enemies, and Misha has a physical ability almost equal to C-class. And we can call

someone we trust when we're busy. How about it?」

Since I hid my power, I lowered my statement.

Lululie is a significant person. She's Seria's weak point and also my target. I can't leave her alone.

I thought of escorting her from the castle, but this situation doesn't exist. Furthermore, Lululie dislikes knights. Then, there's a good chance I get her favor.

When I was thinking about it, Lululie refused.

「That's...I'm grateful for it, however I can't pay for the fee. Also, I don't want to involve people in danger」

「You don't need to mind the reward. It's not for free, but you can pay on a reasonable range. I won't demand for your body so don't worry」

「But, that's—」

Lululie is still hesitating. After all, she would hesitate to make a debt from a man whom she didn't know.

I really want her to pay with her body, but I promised Seria that I won't lay my hand on Lululie. I'm a man who keeps promises. But, I can make a favorable impression with this plan.

「This is just my selfishness. Since I already know the girl being aimed at, I can't just leave her alone. I can watch secretly from the outside, but I want to protect you close. I don't mind if you don't pay for reward. I'm prepared for the risk of dying since I imitate adventurer's temporary freedom. Is it still no good?」

「Even...if you say that?」



Lululie cast down her eyes.

Though I suppressed goosebumps and irritation but, there's no much reaction.

She has a stronger guard than I thought. It seems she need another push.

When I was thinking of what should I do, a voice from the kitchen is heard.

「Uwaa, Misha, that's amazing! How did you do it?」

「I don't know. But this nail that cuts everything is my pride. It doesn't even get dirty」

「Eh. Can it cut stones?」

「It can even cut Mithril」

「Even mithril!?!」

「Yes, But I can't cut master」

「You can't cut onii-san okay!?!」

The two girls seems to cook happily. But the contents of the conversation is dangerous.

「How about it? I'd be grateful if Misha and Lilith would become friends. Since she doesn't have friends due to special circumstances, but i think it's a good chance」

Appeal to sympathy strategy. If this is still no good I don't have anything else at hand.

I patiently waited for Lululie's answer. Before long, Lululuie looked at the kitchen—then smiled.

「...That child seems to be having fun. Got it. I don't want to see Lilith be involved in danger so I will accept your proposal. And also, it seems Lilith would be pleased too. It may be inconvenient, but guard us」

「Be relieved. I will definitely guard you」

I returned an answer while being relived from Lululie's answer.

The first stage of winning over the elf sisters is cleared.

I decided the guarding contents, we decided the reward and I signed the escort contract.

- 1. Ren used Puppy dog eyes! ↔
- 2. Lululie is confused! ↔

## Chapter 27: Lululie's massage #

About the guard contract, we decided that Misha is in charge of Lilith, and I will be responsible to pick up Lululie at night and night guarding.

「So there's a place like this」

「Yes, I ask you of this... Huh?」

As soon the talk ended, Lululie began to shake her head unsteadily. She can't focus her eyes. It seems she overworked too much that her body is exhausted.

「Are you okay?」

「Eh? Ah, Sorry...」

If I leave her alone she's likely to fall off from the chair so I go around her back to support her body. She has a really slim body, I grabbed her bony shoulders.

Just like that, I peeped on the small chest's pointed end from the gap of her neck and pajamas from behind. I can't say that her body is unhealthy to that extent, but she's a bit to thin.

「Are you eating properly?」

「Yes, for the time being」

「For the time being? I guess the food expense is cut for the medicine anyway. I think it's no good」

「That's...」

Lululie is embarrassed for a reply. It seems it was a bulls-eye.

「The reason why you fell down this time is because your physical strength declined. Since you'd be troubled if you can't work anymore, take meals properly」

「Yes. I'm sorry」

「Look, it's the medicine Lilith brought. Drink it.」

I lifted the vial left on the table and handed it over to Lululie.

Lululie accepted it absentmindedly and put it in her mouth. She drank the green liquid, then breathed out sexily.

I often drink this medicine, there's actually a small effect in this medicine besides the physical strength recovery. The body warms up and will be wrapped up in pleasure when you drink it. If drank when tired, your body would relax greatly what you'd be in dreamy state of mind in no time .

In short, it's a bonus time where Lululie's brain isn't working well. I light body touch is possible without problems. I won't let this chance get away.

「It takes a while before the effect takes over. Should I carry you to your room?」

「No, just let me be for a while」

That's a shame. She declined. But, I want to do her in this state.

「Is that so? Then I'll massage you」

「Eh? Ah...」

I massaged Lululie's thick shoulders without waiting for an answer.

「After all you just work all the time right? A person who works hard for their family is okay, but you also have to pay attention to your body. When it's hard for you, it's okay to act spoiled you know」

I was somehow able to decrease her ability to think gradually. I console the body that's been tired from anxiety and long journey.

「Ah, there, it feels good...」

Lululie surrendered to pleasure as I massage her shoulder gently.

As expected, even she's young her shoulders are heavy. It's worth massaging this.

When I get exhausted on training, I was often massaged by master. If I recovered, it's intensive hellish training again, but I remember the pleasure even now. Sometimes I and Cathy do it mutually so I mastered the technique.

I used Lululie as subject today.

「Nn...Ah, Un...」

I massaged her nape, to her shoulder, to her arm deliberately. While taking care not to use excessive force, her stiff muscles starts to loosen, then Lululie's eyelids closed. I gently lowered her body on the table and applied finger pressure on her back.

「Does it hurt?」

「Nu...no, it's just right...」

「Is that so? If it hurts just tell me」

「Okay...」

I lowered my finger along the spine. From her back to her waist, I gave it a finger pressure equally. Her posture is bad so I can't do it earnestly, but I adjust the backbone in a possible range and fixed her body.

As expected, Lululie's ass has little meat. Thin girls aren't bad, but I wish she's a bit round.

「.....\*suu\*」1

Meanwhile, Lululie is totally asleep. She must be really tired.

Now then, I finished massaging her neck, shoulder, and waist, her feet is impossible in this posture. If so, then the next target is the breasts.

According to Lilith-sensei, if it's rubbed by a man you like your breast would get bigger.

If, it really becomes big, Lululie would need it.

I like small breasts, but it's a big problem for Lululie.

That's the match of Lululie and Seria's chest size. I became sad when I saw that scene.

Not because she's a maid of the royal family, but I can't help but pity the difference in breast status of Lululie.

Furthermore, Seria is still at age of growth. The difference would be wider in the future. Then what would happen? Lululie would surely be damaged.

She minds that she's small. She knows that it's a wish that won't come true, still she won't be able to suppress the jealousy on Seria.

Then, it's possible that these two's friendship may crack. I don't want to see that<sup>2</sup>

That's why I must make Lululie's breasts big. If that happens, Lululie would be happy and I'm sure that Seria would be pleased too. Then, the two would be glad. I will raise this breasts<sup>3</sup>

With that, I leaned Lululie's body on the chair. I stopped her body as her head isn't stable.

「Lululie, the next would be your chest, do you want me to continue?」

「.....Nu...Yes?」

Since I promised Seria, I can't do it forcefully. However, since Lululie wished for a massage and accepts, there's no problem.

Even if Lululie is half asleep.

「What do you want? You want me to continue?」

「Ah...Yes...Please uu...」

Okay, I got her consent<sup>4</sup> Thus, there's no problem. There's no problem.

「Got it. If you don't like it then say it」

「Nu...」

I attack the beasts slowly from the top because she would be surprised

if I suddenly touch it. I massaged her nape and her collarbone line gently. When Lululie got used to it, I lowered my hand and massaged her pecs<sup>5</sup>

「NNn...」

There's no resistance from the sleep-like state Lululie. The softness of her chest is handed down to my hand on top of her clothes.

Next, I pushed my palm in her chest, I draw my hand inside and outside Lululie's small chest. I see the valley of her chest from the gap of the clothes disappearing.

「Ahn...」

I was caught up in the moment and continued, Lululie leaked a sweet sigh. But, Lululie's eyes is still closed and she doesn't show a bit of dislike.

I'll continue.

I move my hand to the bottom of her chest then moved my hand to lift it this time. I moved her underboob to the center and released my hand.

Then, her small chest shook. The size fits the palm of my hand, it was shaking according to gravity.

I can see it even on top of her clothes. I took the shape of my hand, I can clearly feel it's movement. I did it twice, three times, it transmitted that the tip gradually got solid.

「N, fuu...」

Lastly, before this ends, I massaged her breast as a whole. Lululie's entire small breast fits my palm, still it had a certain elasticity and



softness. I moved my finger gently to not stimulate it too much, I enjoyed the touching feeling from the top of her clothes. And when I continued doing it, Lululie's nipples are erect. She seems to feel it just like massaging herself.

But, any more than this and I won't be able to endure it, so I stopped today's breast massage.

When I returned my hand on her shoulder massage, Lululie woke up before long.

「N...Huh? I was...」

「Yo, are you awake?」

「Ah...Ren-san...」

Lululie looked upward like she's drooling. My face is reflected in the ceiling upside down.

As the brain slowly activated and understood the situation, Lululie's face changed to shame gradually.

「U-Uhm, I-I-I!」

Lululie hid her face with her hands. Her ears were dyed red as she faced down.

Apparently that's how it is today. I want to massage her lymph with my finger someday.

「Did you ease up a bit?」

「Uhm...Yes, thanks to you I felt better」

「Is that so? Then I'm glad」

I separated from the embarrassed Lululie and seated on a chair.

Just how far did Lululie remember to be so shy?

Is she embarrassed that her body is touched? or is she embarrassed that her chest is massaged? I expect that she didn't notice the chest. Her underwear may be wet.

「For me to sleep like that...」

Apparently it's about that. Is she embarrassed that her sleeping face is seen? If there's no problem that I touched her body, I'll do it again.

I was thinking of what I should do next time, then a voice from the kitchen rose.

「Onii-san, we baked it!」

「Master, we did it!」

The two children jumped out from the kitchen. They're holding a plate with cookies that has a sweet fragrance.

「Huh? Onee-chan, what's wrong?」

「N-nothing!」

「N~? Suspicious...」

Lilith noticed the abnormality of Lululie, but Lululie denied it. She turned her red flushed face away to avoid suspicion.

「The medicine worked. Other than that, you guys did bake it well?」

「Mogumogu6... Yeah, I made it with Lilith-chi」

「Mi-chan is skillful」

The two seems to be in good terms that they start to call each other by nicknames. The two presented the dish while munching. Of course, I waited for the two to eat.

「Master is thinking something strange again. ...Paku7」

「I'm not thinking of anything」

It hadn't been a day since we met yet, Misha can already read my mind8. Is my face really easy to read?

I should better think of countermeasure or something. For instance, hiding my face. Of course, anything but the panties.

I postponed the Misha countermeasure for the timebeing and extended my hand on the work of these two.

Lilith watches me seriously as I eat.

I put the cookie in my mouth while being a bit nervous. The freshly baked texture and the flavor of butter spreads over my mouth.

「...How is it?」

「Yup, perfect. It's delicious」

「Yay~! Mi-chan he said it's delicious」

「Yeah, Lilith-chi's cookies are delicious」

Lilith hops in delight as she was praised.

Misha eats the cookie stealthily while making a V sign. You eat too much.

「Can I have some too?」

「Onee-chan should eat to get healthy」

「Okay」

Lululie eats along with the two. Her complexion improved after taking the medicine, but you can't remove the fatigue.

Since she's thin, I want her to eat a lot and get well. A little more flesh is better after all.

「You two did well. It's really delicious」

「Yeah!」

When Lululie praised her, Misha's ears raised high. But, Lilith showed a surprised face.

「It's unusual for onee-chan to praise someone. Did something good happened with Onii-san?」

What?

「Y-You're wrong. I just praised it honestly because it was delicious. Don't think of strange things」

「G-got it」

Lilith easily yielded to the intimidating smile of Lululie. However, I have more chance than I thought.

Should I make fun of her for a moment?

「Lululie, should I tell them the thing from a while ago?」

「E-e-e-e-earlier!？」

「What what? Did something happen as expected? Did my onee-chan steal the march!？」

Lilith is interested in the panicking Lululie. As expected, these sisters are interesting.

「We talked about escorting. You don't mind it right?」

「Eh, ah, t-that's right. Yes, please」

「Escort? What's that?」

When I said so, Lululie was relieved. Lilith complains as she don't know the talk.

「Since you might be attacked again, I discussed it with her. And so, we decided that I and Misha will guard you」

「Eh, Onii-san will protect us?」

Lilith's eyes sparkle like a girl that fell in love. After all, girls of this age longs for a princess-like story. In this case, the prince feels like a low-life, but that low-life has it easy so I'm greatly delighted.<sup>9</sup>

「Yeah, we can't be together at all times, but I'll be here as much as possible」

「Are you sure!? Yay! Thank you onii-san!」

Lilith embraced me forcefully. I received her by my chest while sitting down.

「Misha too」

I was embraced by Misha from behind for some reason.

「Fufu, you're popular」

「Well yeah. Since I'm risking my life here, I deserve this much」

「That's true」

I saw Lululie laugh as the two children cling to me.

It's an expression I hadn't seen since that incident. Lululie's tense face finally calmed down a little.

But, that's just temporary. Lululie will have a hard time in the future. I will be the cause of it.

This is a definite matter. As long as I don't give up on Seria, Lululie will surely know Seria's current state someday. Just what kind of reaction will she show? That's something I look forward too.

I. Sleeping sound ↩

2. Awwww, Ren knows that friendship is power ←
3. Lift up your hearts! ←
4. Dammit Ren, she's half-asleep! ←
5. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pectoralis\\_major\\_muscle](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pectoralis_major_muscle) ←
5. Mumbles ←
7. Nom ←
8. Today's the second day actually ←
9. この場合は王子様が下種すぎる気がするが、その下種からすればチョロくて大変喜ばしいのである。←

## Chapter 28: Princess Seria's solo play #

After explaining the escort matters, Lululie slept in her room to let her recover.

I leave the dinner to Misha and Lilith and I came back home alone because there's work.

The sun has set and it was time to contact Cathy.

Cathy just returned when I entered the workroom. She appeared in the corner of the room like a shadow and united with the landscape. I can perceive her since I'm sensitive to magic, but her presence is too thin that even a trained man won't notice her easily.

「Yo, how's the other side?」

「A fast horse arrived at Will Gantt's house this afternoon. I tried to eavesdrop and I they were talking about the executioner disturbance. Those who should deal with princess Seria is missing and is being searched」

Executioner is a common name in the imperial capital recently. His victims goes up to two digits, and his name was given because everyone he kills had their neck cut.

Executioner escapes any kind of guard and appears in front of the target. Then, he disappears the moment he killed the target.

They had various theories on it's true nature, like ghosts, or a new kind of demonic beast, but the answer is Me.

This time, I left the dead body as a warning that it was an act of an assassin. But, the surprise attack is from the border so it would take a day



and a half for a fast horse for every kind of information to be dispatched. Therefore, the other party tried to meddle with Lilith and Lululie before the warning arrived.

The information should've reached the imperial capital now, Felix would break off the search for princess Seria and consider thinking an excuse desperately.

「Did you know when Felix returned?」

「Yes. From the report, it would be a day after tomorrow」

「That went as expected. I did a lot so I'm tired」

I sneaked in the castle to obtain information yesterday, fought with Misha, Came into contact with Matifa, Lilith was almost kidnapped and I made Lululie take me as her guard.

Cathy became silent when she heard my story.

「That's how it is.」

「...The noble related information is short」

「Yeah, I don't know the plots of the two great marquises. Also, the state of the two princes are strange」

「Yeah, especially there's no reason to fight that Will Gantt. Because if you do nothing, Radom will be the king as he's the superior」

Cathy is right, in this current state of affairs, there's no reason for Will Gantt Family to fight. Will Gantt family is the first group in the first prince Radom faction. Even if they do nothing, prosperity is promised. If so, they should move avoiding the civil war.

I would understand if it's the Mark Newt family that prepares a revolt. In fact the second Prince Desire and Mark Newt house daughter Ophelia is planning to it, it is obvious from the fact that they established a strength.<sup>1</sup>

However, the first prince Radom has no attitude with the Will Gantt Family. The Will Gantt who took strong measures to kidnap Seria just had Radom berserk when he heard the name of his brother. My uneasiness can't be wiped.

「Is there something that gives the Second prince Desire advantage?」

「Let see. Jus one alone can turn this situation over」

When she got it, Cathy suggested an answer to me.

Because I'm ignorant about the royalty and nobility, she's giving me a lecture. She's a reliable sister at these times.

I can't think this can disillusion me. Then, I found an answer immediately.

「Is it the king?」

「That's right. King Ortiz hadn't decided his heir yet. Perhaps, using that reason, Desire might spread a rumor that he would be the next king」

Spreading rumors to provoke Radom. The short-tempered Radom took the provocation easily. Then, with Radom's failures piling up to that extent, he plans to drag him down and impeach him. He would say that he's the one suitable to be the king.

it's possible that the two loud laughter combination is the preparation

for the harassment. For instance, they could frame up Radom assaulting a victim and tell a lie that Seria aims for the Kings seat. Besides something cruel will be also included. They would corner him mentally.

「Then, for the king not announcing his heir—」

「Because it might trigger a civil war, they're waiting for the right timing. Or it's possible that they can't decide it」

「Is it self protection after all? Those incompetent people」

The successor battle or the power struggle of nobles. They can't help but drag people in it. Furthermore, the king lacks the ability to control.

That's why he decided to take out Seria as a bride and decrease the foreign enemy.

If this situation continues, it's just a matter of time before this country collapse.

Cathy's conjecture isn't entirely wrong either. My job is to support. After I rest for half a day I will do it.

「I'll invade the castle again. I'll leave the Will Gantt and Mark Newt houses to you Cathy. If you have time, investigate the kidnapping of Lilith」

「Roger that」

Cathy disappeared in the shadows after speaking. It's a unique ability of a dark elf to obstruct recognition in the shadows.

She can't teleport nor be invisible like me, but it's quite a convenient ability. But even so...

「Today's Cathy is docile」

If it's the usual Cathy she would beg for it. Is it 'that' day?

While praying that it's just my imagination, I changed my clothes and went to the castle.



Imperial Castle's work is over at night and a lot of people are going home. Most signs of life disappeared with only soldiers guarding going around a little.

However, I can't be careless as I don't know what will happen. I was attacked by Misha yesterday, and Matifa can see me right now. The strong sign of magical power from Lion is from the direction of the lodging house of the guards, I marked it as monster's den.

But more than that, I was astonished on the scene in front of me.

「Ah...N, naa...」

The beautiful silver hair fan spread on the bed. With that in mind, Seria wearing a transparent negligee wiggles herself indecently.

Seria is alone in the closed room.

「N...No good, yet...」

Seria lies on the soft bed and is rubbing her own thighs. The right hand extends to the source and I realized that she's comforting her secret part on top of her underwear. Her left hand grabs her chest and massages it.

If I'm not mistaken, Seria is masturbating right now.

Seria raised her chin and bent her body forward in pleasure. It's a reaction I've seen so many times.

Could it be that her nature awaken when she was raped?

The girl who doesn't know climax before I violated her, she had a feeling to comfort herself after being raped for two consecutive days.

It's a warm welcome for me, I'm happy that this is the result of my two days of loving her, but it doesn't make sense.

Also, there's another problem. I'd like to invade the interior as soon as possible, but all the invasion pathway are shut so I'm troubled. The window is closed and there's two female knights guarding it. But, if I opened the window to the public, the masturbation today will end.

There's one way to invade. That's the method of teleportation.

However, it's my trump card and is an ability I reserve against Matifa. Should I use that for this?

Matifa doesn't know I can teleport since I haven't used it to move within the walls of the castle. She might have noticed it vaguely, but she doesn't have a conclusive evidence.

But, that ability comes to light if Matifa sees it. However, I can't just observe Seria masturbating.

This is the ultimate choice.

Should I expose my trump card and observe Seria's masturbation close? Or should I open the window and force Seria to masturbate?

Observing from a distance is not in the choices.

I thought for three seconds and made a decision

My vision switch in an instant.

A rolled up negligee and glossy thighs. And the thin fingertip extends to her pink underwear. And, the exited smell of a female is floating—

I teleported to Seria's legs. Then, I erased my presence with all my power. I didn't make any sound at all.

「Nu...Even though it's no good, I can't stop.」 ...Ahn」

Whenever Seria brushes her genital, I can hear the *Kuchukuchu* wet sounds. Seria's delicate hands shifted the panties and rubbed her own meat directly.

Seria's finger is wet by the clear liquid overflowing inside her vagina.

The combination of the girl's beautiful fingertip and indecent genital is very arousing.

「N, it's a bit different. More...like, hyaa!」

Seria changed the movement of her fingers little by little. At first she was stroking the slit, then began to rub inside it. *Guni Guni* Her flesh is being squashed.

Love nectar flows from the inside and falls down to her ass and the sheets. Seria doesn't notice it. She just moved her fingers seeking pleasure.

「Ah! Haa, haa...my voice is leaking」

She desperately hides her voice, but she can't endure and her lovely voice leaks out. She wants to stop, but her body moves on its own and is not stopping. The finger moved passionately.

I shifted my glance a bit above, there I saw Seria's breasts moving with great power. It defies the gravity as it pushes up the thin negligee, and I can understand that the tip is hard even on top of her clothes.

Seria's fingers spread. She's kneading with her nipples using her thumb and index finger scissor.

「Naaa!」

As expected, Seria is weak in her chest. Though, her lower part is sensitive too, but I know that she feels good from her chest. She played with her nipple for a while and her hand slip under the negligee and caressed it directly at last.

Whole massaging her big chest she plays the nipples with her fingertip. She played her nipples with her finger, *bikun* her waist jumped.

I confirmed Seria's face, she closed her eyes and was breathing roughly.

Seria's arm hugs her body, playing with her chest and genitals. Her vaginal hole had convulsions wistfully, the love nectar seems to be mixed with a whitish fluid. It seems that she's finally about to climax.

「Ah, it's no good yet, Cumming!」

She turned her arm on her chest to knob her nipples tightly, then rubbed the clitoris's area with her finger little by little.

Seria's waist rises.

「Aaah! Cumming! Nnn~~~~~!!」

Seria's lovely voice stifled a smile and her whole body twitched. New love nectar gushed out from insides and created a new stain on the sheets. She finally exhausted herself.

Seria's body stiffened and collapsed in the bed. Then, she muttered to herself being tired.

「What am I doing?...」

「Isn't it masturbation? You don't know it?」

When I appeared in response to Seria's mutter, Seria flew up on the bed.

「Mugu!」

「Don't raise your voice」

I blocked Seria's mouth that's about to shout with my hand.

Seria opened her eyes wide in surprise and corrected the hem of her negligee in panic. When she nodded that she won't shout, I released my hold, then Seria hid her body in the sheets.

「P-please don't surprise me. Also, since when you're here!?!」

Seria seems to handle the trick calmly without any difficulty. 2 If it's normal voice, we don't have to worry as the door is thick.



「When? Just a while ago」

「Y-you saw it?」

「Perfectly」

「N~~~!!」

Embarrassed from being seen, Seria hid her head on the sheets.

If you do that, my inner sadism tingles.

「Starting by herself is just cold hearted princess. Or did you expect me to come so you prepared?」

I brought my face close to the sheets and whispered to Seria. When I thought about the white mountain jumping3, the mountain began to mumble.

「Y-you're wrong. That's not it」

「Then, why are you doing it by yourself? You didn't feel so much yesterday so it accumulated?」

「You're wrong」

「Could it be, that you remembered me and your body ached?」

「.....」

Silence means yes. It seems that it's the correct answer.

「Is that so? When you remembered that I pierced you, your pussy ached. Then, you can't endure it so you touched yourself, then what's next is the slithering. Aren't you cute?」

「...There's nothing cute there. It's embarrassing」

「No, no, you're cute enough. You're too cute that you made me excited」

「Hyaa!」

When I stroked Seria's cute ass above the sheets, the mountain jumped.

「Please don't touch me」

「Nope. I'll do what I want」

「Please stop」

「If I stopped you'd do it by yourself right? Then I'll do it」

「...I won't do it」

「Nope, you will」

「I won't」

「Yup」

「Not」

「Yup」

「Not」

Seria and I repeatedly answered like a kid. Though I repeat, my hand doesn't stop. I massaged Seria's small ass then put a finger on a hole that's not fiddled yet.

「Kya! What are you doing!? That's the wrong one!」

The white mountain pulsated again. I let my hand follow the movement.

「Where do you like it?」

「Anywhere is no good. Please stop」

「Then I'll continue」

I loosened her asshole as is. When I push my finger to open the constrictor, Seria finally interrupted.

「Hyaa! Wait, wait a moment. At least the front!」

Seria jumps out the sheet while holding her ass. She jumped out and met my eyes, then withdrew again with her face deep red.

「What's in front? Continue speaking. Why do you want it in the front hole?」

When I pat her ass again, Seria guarded her anus with one hand as small resistance. I continued to caress her ass on top of her hand.

「There's nothing. Please stop already」

「I can't stop after you show me something like that. Move your hand and leave that. We'll continue」

「No thanks. I'm already satisfied with myself. Shouldn't you just do yourself? I heard that men do this too」

Seria had a strong resistance today. She's used to me on the third day as expected. But, she's not calling anyone, so she knows the line I don't permit.

「Where did you hear about doing oneself? Lululie?」

「It's impossible to ask Lululie about this!」

Well, you can't ask a precious friend about such a thing. If you asked something erotic she would completely understand it.

「Then who? Lion? Or is it some servant over there?」

「...I read it in a book」

「Book? So you examined it specially」

「...Yes」

She's quite diligent. When I looked around, I found a book in the bedside. At the cover 『Ruined county's princess rape play~I'm a caged bird~ Matifa Lau Ell Pito's book』 is written. Hey, isn't this an eronovel?

「Could this be the book you read?」

「.....Yes」

「Ah, I see. Well, it's no question why you masturbated」

「...Please don't say it uuu」

Seria kept quiet after the last word. No one reads an erotic novel, remembers that they were raped and was witnessed masturbating, she can't come out anymore with this.

「I won't think anything bad of you so be relieved. It's very usual to read such novels. There's much more dangerous people in this world」

Especially Cathy. That fellow reads SM-related books and goes in and out of an underground shop. She's the real deal.

However, the stimulation is too strong for a pure princess.

「No. I'll die. Please kill me」

Seria completely turned in negative mode. I'm troubled. It's a good play but I might as well thrust in as a play. It can't be helped.

「Listen up and come out already. If you don't come out I'll make the knights of the table know about this book」

「!!」

When I softly whispered in her hear, Seria showed a teary-eyes among the sheets. Seria clings to me and begs for mercy.

「Just, please spare me from that. Please」

「Then listen to me. First of all, come out. The talk is after that」

「Uu, you're cruel...」

Seria slips out the sheets tearfully and sat down on the center of the bed. Now, it's fun time.

1. 実際に第2王子DesireとMark\_Newt家令嬢Opheliaはそれを計画し、戦力を整えていることからそれは明らかだ。←
2. Seriaは静かに怒ると言う芸当を難なくこなしていた。←
3. Seria hidden in the sheets ←

## Chapter 29: Princess Seria becomes a bit aggressive #

「What should I do?」

Seria came out of the sheets while asking. Since she learned sufficient erotic stuff so I can ask her anything now.

「Would you try to dance naked this for the time being?」

「Please don't joke around!」

She's angry. She's quite angry.

I just thought that it's great to see your breast sway.

It seems to be still too early for Seria. Since it can't be helped, let's do it next time.

I first put my hands on Seria's clothes. I lift the transparent negligee that faintly displays her body line out of her head. I unfastened the panties on her waist and her pussy became bare.

Seria hid her breasts and thighs with her hand as she was embarrassed to be seen naked as expected. However, she can't just hide her voluptuous chest, a deep valley and an underboob came into view

I took off my pants and displayed my erect penis to Seria. Though Seria seems embarrassed she looked at it patiently.

「I'm tired today so I really don't want to move that much. That's why Seria will be the one moving」

I lied down next to Seria and gave her an order. Seria frowned because she's looking at a dark red mushroom growing to the sky.

「Uuu~ Again?...」

「Yeah, suck it again. If it's not lubricated well it would be hard」

「Haa...Understood」

When Seria gave a sigh as if giving up, she lifted her silver hair to her ear and kissed my lips.

「...Eh?」

A light peck came. However, I never experienced a sweet kiss that melted me away.

I leaked a strange voice on her unexpected surprise attack. I didn't think that Seria would kiss me. I was taken by surprise because I didn't think that Seria would move voluntarily according to my order.

If it had been a magic attack I could've responded without problems. But the kiss was too natural, I never felt any resistance or avoidance at all. However, why a kiss? Furthermore, from Seria?

「I was taught by mom to start it with a kiss. It seems that it's the correct answer. So you make that kind of face too」

Seria laughed like a child whose mischief was successful. Are you delighted that you teased me? Or is my face really that stupid?

「You got me there. I did tell that you'll be the one moving」

「I'll still resist. I don't want to be threatened and have sex with you by force. That's wrong. However, I can't defy you. That's all the best that I can do right now」

Seria moves on the gap between my feet while speaking, then she brought her face close to my grotesque penis. Where did the might go? She returned to a timid girl suddenly.

As expected, she's resisting to take the penis which reeks of male odor and is dripping pre-cum in her mouth.

「Uu...I'll put it in my mouth again」

「You studied right? Did this appear in the book you had?」

「It was written. Adults really do such things...」

It seems that Seria had climbed the stair to adulthood.

Usually, knowledge comes first, but Seria had experience before it. However, the knowledge caught up to the experience and she accepted it as common sense. Although the common sense is a bit biased, but there's no problem to push Seria's back.

Seria got down on all fours and made her tongue crawl on the swelling penis. She often hesitated to lick the glans, she extend her tongue to the rod and moved her head. When it hit a good place, my penis throbbed, Seria confirmed the point and felt it without missing the reaction.

When she deliberately licked the back muscle carefully while holding the rod, she made up her mind and put the glans on her mouth.

She moved her tongue on the back muscle and the sensitive part she found a while ago.

「\*Chupa\*...\*Churu\*\*Juru\*...\*Chu\*, *Churururu*... lief thwis?」



Seria looked up asking for impressions while sucking my cock.

Her adaptability and her speed on understanding is wonderful. She still have ways to when it comes to technique, but she's prepared to make her partner feel it. Feelings are important in sex<sup>1</sup> Although I want to teach and bully her if it can't be helped, but it seems she reached it on her own.

She originally has a gentle character from the start, I'm surprised that she's not forgetting the rapist.

「You got better than before. Is this the result of your study?」

「Fonninofuemashia」<sup>2</sup>

「That's an amazing book. Oh well, keep it up」

「okay...\*Churu\*...\*Juu\*, *Chupo*...\*Jyururu\*...\*Rerorero\*...」

Seria resumed the fella again. She sticks to the tip while stroking the rod. Every time she licks the glans with her rough tongue, electricity runs through my spine. Seria doesn't move her face too much, she moves her tongue like a vacuum, rising my sexual excitement.

Lying down on a bed exclusive for royalty, then a cute princess giving me a fella, it's like a dream.

I can't help but pat the head of the lovely princess whose sucking my penis.

「Yeah, that's great. Move your mouth just like that, hold the rod firm and stroke it」

「Okay」

Seria changed the movement of her tongue to wrapping my glans. She

crawls on the surroundings of the sensitive part and she attacks me with a successive stimulation.

Trying and investigating various ways is good.

I want to teach more on the diligent princess, but unfortunately I'm at my limit.

「I'm about to cum soon. Since you did your best I'll let you choose where I would release it. Where do you like it? Mouth or face?」

A reward is necessary for a hardworking child. A reward called semen.

「Puha, on my face please. It's difficult to drink because it smells like fish...」

「Well that's true. Then, do your best and move your hand. If you can't make me cum with your hands I'll do it inside your mouth」

「Yes., Like this?」

Seria squeezes my penis and stroked her hands. The hesitation from a while ago fades away and she's stimulating my penis firmly. It's completely different than doing it by myself, my waist raised naturally.

「Ah, yes. I'm about to cum」

「Uhm, this position」

I grabbed Seria's head and set it in front of my penis. Seria doesn't rest her hand while complaining. Her round pupils are nailed on the pre-cum dripping out of my penis.

「Ejaculating!」

「Kyaa!」

*ByuruByuru* Semen polluted Seria's beautiful face. Her silver hair, the gentle eyes and her small mouth is decorated with a white cloudy liquid.

「Uu, my face is sticky...」

Seria wiped her eyelids of with her finger then looked for something to wipe her hands.

I took off the sheets, negligee and the underwear for the princess to wipe off. Since I thought it's a good thing, I shoved the hand on Seria's pink lips.

「Fugu! W-what are you doing!」

「It's manners to lick semen. If you don't want it, then keep it in your face until you take a shower」

「That's...」

Of course, there's no such manner but Seria won't know it anyway. Let's enjoy the semen decoration today.

Seria scooped the semen down her palm before it fell on her bed, then she reluctantly put them in her mouth.

「It's bitter...the smell...」

The taste of semen doesn't seem to be palatable to the royalty as expected. I can let her drink it often, but unfortunately I have Cathy,

Misha and Matifa around so it's fine. I want Seria to stay hateful of it by any means. It's fun to make a child who dislikes it drink.

Seria is struggling desperately with the semen. As expected it would feel bad if it's in the eye and mouth, but she wiped the dripping immediately from the top. In the end, most of the semen is carried to her mouth.

I get impatient so I reached to Seria's waist.

「Kya, what's the matter?」

「Come to the top a bit more」

I had Seria straddle on my waist. In this position, my half erect penis is grazing Seria's pussy.

Seria pulls her waist away to refuse contact.

「Uhm, it got small so can we end this? Any more than this is no good」

「Don't worry. If you make it feel good it will go energetic again. If you do, you'd feel good too so there's no problem」

「It's full of problems...」

I rub my waist ignoring Seria's complains. Seria's small vagina that's wet from masturbating a while ago is still drolling. Her body is really honest.

「Even if you don't like it in your mouth your body is feeling it」

「N, it's because you're forcing me. I'm not feeling it at all」

「Nevertheless, you're lewd since you masturbate」

「It's a lifetime blunder...」

Seria hungs her head and curls her body. She hid her face with her beautifully long silver hair. She can't endure that she's been seen masturbating. Maintaining this story while playing with her would be fun.

「Then, I'll have the lewd princess insert it by herself」

I request insertion to the depressed Seria while grinning.

「By myself?」

「Yeah, that's right. I've already told Seria that I'm tired today right? That's why you will put my penis in your vagina by yourself and you would move your waist to make me feel good. Incidentally, you would feel good as you move. It feels even better than masturbation」

I won't move and the princess would feel good, it's a wonderful win-win situation. Since Seria would make me a meat vibrator, she would enjoy it as she like, it's easy. I force my penis that became hard to hurry up Seria.

「I can't, ah, do that」

「Why? You won't know if you don't try?」

「No, it was written in the book that the lady that stays on top... That's not it, you can't do this if you're not married」

Seria doesn't give up on convincing me. She's making a speech with her crotch wet, but she's probably serious.

I can give her an idea that there's no problem as long as there's love, but I can't just lip service her. Sex is just a mere copulation. The person

added more meaning to it, and I don't intend to add love to the act of Seria.

「Then I'll expose to the capital that you're masturbating<sup>3</sup> The next time you get out of town, men would look at you with such eyes. Your popularity would rise even more. Isn't that great?」

「!! It's not good! Why are you saying those things...」

「It's because you're not listening to me. I'll really expose it if you're too persistent. You being sensitive on the chest, loves to be poked deep inside your vagina, you loving to drink semen very much」

「The last one is different!<sup>4</sup>」

After a small cry, Seria noticed that her tongue made a slip.

「Then hurry up and do it. I'll go out if you hesitate. Then I will really expose you」

「UU, why am I doing this...」

Seria stretched her hand on my cock that's patiently enduring and lead the tip to her wet pussy.

1. Says the one who one-sidedly raped the princess ←
2. 「ふぉんにのっふえまひあ」If you can read it please comment ←
3. Lmao, who would fall for that kind of blackmail? ←
4. So she likes being poked deep inside? ←

## Chapter 30: Princess' excuse ##

「Nu...」

Seria slowly drops her waist in a hesitating manner then, *zubozubo* my penis is being swallowed. At the same time my penis is wrapped up with a warm feeling, countless folds tangled as if they waited impatiently. Seria's vagina is completely in it feels really good.

Seria can cum with just her breasts but her vagina won't be satisfied with just masturbation. Her vagina that's filled sucks the penis.

「Ooou, this is...」

「Nn...Any further is impossible.」

It's just a bit more before the tip but the tip touched the depths. Seria makes a painfully distorted face and her feet is slightly trembling. When I pushed my waist all the way up, Seria's body jumped.

「Hyaa!」

「Move as you like afterwards. It's okay to push your weight on me」

「Haahaa..., okay, Nnn~」

Seria's hand holds to my chest and awkwardly moves her waist up and down. I can see my penis skewers Seria's vagina from the bottom. Sometimes I thrust from the bottom and Seria's body jumped. Her breast shakes, it's a nice view.

「NN...This, it's deep and it feels good...」

Let her do as she wants for a while, Seria ran out of breath and found a good place. She grinds her waist lewdly, and my glans rub the same place in her vagina.

「Is it good there?」

「Ah! Yes, the other side of my inside is being rubbed, Ahn, getting my insides pierced feels good...」

Seria's face melted away and waves her waist in search for pleasure. She pushed her pubis against my belly, my penis is being swallowed inside tightly.

The figure of someone embarrassed from being seen masturbating can't be seen anymore. It's just a lewd girl whose feeling good from the man's penis.

「Do you really like my penis? Which is better, masturbating or this?」

「Nnn! It's wrong, it's because you're ordering」

「It's not different. So, which do you like better, masturbating or sex?」

「I don't, Nn, like both. This is just, even though I don't want it, my body moves without my permission. Aaahn!」

Seria doesn't stop her waist even though she shook her head. The love nectar increased, and her movement becomes faster.

Her breasts dance intensely as her waist moves faster. In front of me are two grand breasts swaying magnificently. I grabbed those breasts and rubbed it.



「Yaan~. Not my breasts! I'm cumming again. I'm cumming with a penis inside me!」

「It's different right? You inserted and moved on your own today. You're masturbating on my penis」

「Don't say it. I didn't masturbate!」

「Didn't you do it? Don't deny that」

I played with her hard nipples.

She kept shaking her head saying no as she denies my words. I wonder if she involuntarily masturbated.

「Hyaa! You're wrong. Aahn! Because you keep doing this so I can't forget ah! When I read that book, I felt itchy and my hand won't stop! Aaaaah! That's why it's the book's fault!! I'm not feeling, ah, ah, ah, aaaaaaaa!!」

Seria's words no longer make sense. I tested and loosen stopped my hold on Seria's waist but, Seria kept shaking her waist continuously. It's not a movement to make me feel good, instead she moves to indulge herself in pleasure.

Seria is completely drunk on pleasure. She experienced sex, she remembers the pleasure, she turned to a bitch<sup>1</sup> asking for pleasure greedily.

At this rate, she's no different from a bitch<sup>2</sup> I'd be troubled if she turned to someone who opens their legs to anyone. It's necessary to train her a little.

「You look like you feel so good. Are you cumming already?」

「Cumming? Ah! I'm cumming! I'm cumming~! Ah, Cum, cum,

cumiiiiing!!」

Seria bent her body backwards while riding on top of me as she exhaust herself. I didn't touch her chest nor move my waist. Seria felt good and climaxed by her own will. She certainly came on her own.

I called to the Seria that's immersed in the reverberation.

「Seria, you danced while naked properly. Did my penis really feel that good?」

「Fue...?3」

Seria's brain is senile so she can't think well.

「Hey, Look at the mirror」

「Eh?...ah」

Seria looked at herself in the mirror. One girl, sitting astride a man and exhausted in pleasure is reflected in there.

Seria finally understood the situation and her face dyed in despair.

「Ah...I-It's not... I didn't feel...fue」

When Seria noticed that she reached climax, she began to weep denying that.

Seria should've been raped, yet the story changed when she moved her waist by herself and felt pleasure. With this, it's like Seria pushed me down to make herself feel good. Then the victim and assailant got reversed.<sup>4</sup> She's just a a lewd girl.

That's why she can't admit it.

I don't intend to make her admit. In this act, I will be the assailant till the end. The ruler is me and Seria is my toy. I can't allow her to misunderstand it.

I hugged the crying princess and we switched positions.

I talked to the sobbing Seria while in missionary position.

「Seria, listen to me. You are being threatened by me. You must certainly obey what I say. Isn't that right?」

「Hiku...Yes」

Seria nods while crying.

「Even now I pierce and rape you, I'm only forcing you by my orders」

「...Yes」

*Kyuuto*5 Her vagina has reacted

「That's why you don't have to be afraid of pleasure because it's all my fault. I'm raping you so you feel good. You get it?」6

「...Yes」

The pleasure, hate and fear Seria feels is all my fault and only granted by me.

「That's why you did nothing wrong. I'm the wrong one here. I will rape you in this bed before you sleep every night. If your body aches because you remembered whenever you enter the bed at night, it's all because of me. You are just being played by me. You hear?」

「.....Yes」

I carved to Seria's weak heart that she came on her masturbation entirely because of me. With me as her excuse, Seria's hear would be dependent on me. While declining me, it's impossible for Seria to live without me. It's impossible to escape from me.

「I'll move. Since I didn't a while ago, I will cum this time. You only have to think on how to make me feel good」

「...Yes」

Seria, given an excuse became docile. I moved my waist slowly then Seria began to move her waist to match.

I wipe the semen that remained on her mouth and gave her small lips a kiss. I pushed my tongue and opened through Seria's lips to invade. I push the surface of her tongue, I licked from the back to scoop out saliva then Seria did the same and scooped mine. We both soaked our lips and mixed the saliva to drink then mix again.

「Haa, you became assertive」

「It's because you ordered me」

Seria obeys me and decided to use the excuse that I'm forcing her. Her not resisting is boring, but oh well, it's fine for today. Embracing each

other like lovers is also fun.

Although the ejaculation feeling increased when I inserted it, I can still bear it and moved my hips. I rub the place where Seria felt it a while ago, I rub on her insides and pushed my glans on her uterus.

「Here?」

「Ah, it feels good there. Why do you know?」

「You rubbed it yourself a while ago」

「Ahn! But, it was painful before.」

「It's because you were using magic that time. That's why, don't you dare use that magic okay?」

「Nn, I won't use it. I don't want to feel that pain anymore」

「Oooh」

Recalling the fear from the wagon, Seria's pussy tightened around my penis. It tightened the whole penis from the glans to the root so my sperm wells up quickly.

Seria must've noticed the change too.

「Is this good?」

「It feels really nice. I'm gonna release it already」

「Ahn, Me too, I felt good again」

「Feel as much as you like. It's an order?」

「...Yes」

I raised the piston speed. Seria shakes her hips too and squeezes her vagina tightly.

However, it's not enough. I must carve the pleasure in Seria today.

I reached my hand on her twin mountains, pinched her nipples and massaged her breast. I stimulate the clitoris with the other hand at the same time.

「Ah, Ah, Ah, Ah, don't, my voice—」

I attacked the locations I know Seria preferred.

Immediately, Seria's voice grow big that she worried if the voice was heard outside. Even if she can endure this, she can't suppress her voice.

Then, Seria stretched her hand to my head and drew it to her mouth. A passionate French kiss from Seria.

「N...」

I pressed Seria's small body to an impossible posture.

I repeat the piston with a mating press position.<sup>8</sup> I hold Seria down and can no longer move from the piston. However, Seria accepted it and she locked her legs on my waist. It's a love hold.

It stirs up my excitement badly.

I hammered Seria's hips while exchanging a French kiss. Seria's vagina tightens and convulses each time I thrust my penis on her womb.

Soon, we both reached our limits.

My penis pulsates. Seria's vagina trembles at the same time.

Seria noticed it and clings her foot strongly. In response to that, I thrust to the innermost part of Seria's vagina.

Then we both reached climax at the same time.

「Nu!!」

「Nnnnn~::~!!」

*Byurubyurururu!! Byururu* I vigorously emitted sperm in Seria's womb. Seria's whole body convulsed and accepted the ejaculation in her innermost part.

We exchanged a kiss to enjoy the aftertaste for a while, and we separated our mouths when we calmed down.

「Haa, haa, haa」

「Haa, haa, haa」

Both of us gasped for breath. Seria's face is charmed. I'm sure I have the same face.

We separated our bodies to fix our breathing. I moved by myself after all. That's why my body is wrapped up by fatigue.

I looked at Seria who had the same feeling, then Seria looked at me.

「Just like your order, I made you cum. I felt really good too. I became crazy. This and that, are all your fault」

Seria admitted that she felt good while making an excuse. She admitted that she felt good because of me.

But, It's not enough.

「But don't forget it, I'm the one who raped you」

「Yes, I know. I won't forgive you. That's a once and for all kind of thing」

Seria clearly rejected me. She stiffened her loose face, she took the pride of a royalty and faced me.

「That's fine. That's how you should be」

The princess won't forget the pleasure as a woman either after learning it. Her noble and gentle heart, no matter how I dirty it, it won't succumb and continue to remain clean. That's princess Seria.

Normally, it's fine for me to dirty her, but I desperately want that<sup>9</sup>

「Then let's go for another round」

「Eh...Please wait a moment! Didn't I say that it was once and for all!?!」

「That's why I'll do it」

「No! Wait, release me!」

「Guehehehe」<sup>10</sup>

After that, I locked the joints of Seria whose trying to escape then violated her lying back. After all, Seria must be with me.

1. Mesu – Female Animal ↔

2. ビッチ ↔

3. Fueee? ↔

4. Ren is gonna file a rape case against Seria, take that Tumblr! ↔

5. SFX: Tightly ↔

5. Next level NTR denial ↔



- 7. I Ren Kirishima orders you to cum! ←
- 3. 種付けプレスの体勢のままピストンを繰り返す。←
- 3. The gentle Seria ←
- 3. No, seriously, he did say「ぐへへへへ」←

## Chapter 31: Princess knew

「I-I'm tired...」

「Uu...Inside again...」

It was hard to pin down the struggling Seria with so my body is left with fatigue. Thanks to that, my body hurts.

I who finished the act cleaned my body with towel.

Then when I put on my clothes, I spoke to the depressed Seria who is hiding herself in the sheets.

「You, shouldn't be afraid of my thing anymore」

「That's true, after the third time I'm already used to it. And when I thought about the first day, other than doing naughty things with me, you helped me, so I understood that you're selfish. You're cruel when doing H but, uhm, gentle.....」

Seria answered while covering her face. It was hard to hear the last part but she's just shy.

Certainly, other than the rapist, I'm her benefactor. Though, everything is ruined because of rape.

「I did think hard the day before yesterday. Your appearance while I banging semen in your womb, then fainting is miserable」

「Please don't say it specifically! I never want that again, also it's because I used magic...」

The last lines weren't clear as she's mumbling in embarrassment. Certainly, it won't be a tragedy if that magic wasn't used. At first I intend to stop after I felt good.

「Anyway! You cold-bloodedly murdered people, then raped a lady so you're the worst person」

「Certainly」

「Nevertheless, you saved me and you're also investigating. If you didn't help us that time I don't know what would happen tous... At least it isn't worse than the current results」

「That's true」

Lululie would be gangbanned in the place, as for Seria, her virginity would be safe at least. Thinking about it, I'm tolerant as I just took Seria's virginity. I want you to thank me more.

「My brothers are in dispute, I've heard that the castle is divided into two. The only one supporting me are Lululie and Lion. I don't know what other people think」

「Can you trust Lion?」

「Lion is fine. He doesn't take any side since he's too strong, nobody can go near him too. He's trying to protect his pride as a knight alone. If I would say, he's an ally of justice」

「The complete opposite of me」

Lion seems to be trusted. I don't know what this guy thinks in the back, Lion might be just as what Seria said.

That fellow would carry out his ideal. He's not compatible with me. That's why he can be trusted.

While nodding alone, Seria turned around slowly and dropped an oversized bomb.

「However, I don't think that's the case Other worlder, Ren Kirishima-san」

「.....」

「.....」

「.....What?」

Time stopped.

I didn't tell Seria my name when she helped me before. Only those who are close with me knows that I'm from a different world.

Three years ago, when I came over this world and met her we did self-introduction, but my features from those days are already gone. My height grew, my physique grew from thin to something muscular. Also my face changed before I knew it. The only thing remained is my black hair and the no magic.

If I returned on my original world, even my parents won't recognize me.

The human she meet from three years ago shouldn't notice. That's right. This must be a trick question.

「W-who's that?」

「Do you really think I didn't notice it? When I first saw you I noticed it already. You changed so much in these three years, but you still have no magical power at all, also your atmosphere when I just examined Lululie was similar. If observed well, your eyes, eyebrows and your voice didn't change」

「No No No. Why do you remember such a place? We only met once three years ago? Normally you won't remember small details!」

Does Seria have a perfect memory ability? In a world with magic it's not strange if it happened, but I've never seen someone with that kind of ability until now.

However, I understood that it's not a bluff. My real nature certainly came out.

To prove it, Seria began to talk about her memories.

「I can't forget such a strong encounter. When I thought the noisy knight surrounded me, a naked man appeared in front of my eyes. I heard that he was an otherworlder, he told me in detail that I believed that it's true. I also remember all the stories of the otherworlder that time. I wanted to see him all this time, it's regrettable that it's like this」

「W-w-w-w-w-wait a moment. 」 C-c-c-calm down f-for a bit」

「We'll return as is. Please calm down. The knights of the table would notice<sup>1</sup>」

I breathed deeply just as told. I inhaled deeply once again, then the smell of a man and flower trickled my nostril. It's the smell of the semen stuck on her silver hair. Yup, no good, me.

「Sorry, I was confused for a moment」

「That's not a moment」

She retorted with an amazed look. Strange, are our roles reversed?

「Let me organize it for a bit. You knew me three years ago. That's why you noticed my true nature. And nobody knows about me apart from you. Am I right?」

「Yes, that's right. I don't understand so I didn't tell anyone」

I felt relieved.

My real nature shouldn't be exposed to influential people.

Assassin, thief, peeping tom, lingerie thief, rapist, pervert, a huge murderer, a fake adventurer, lolicon, Cathy's owner, flying human, and invisible gentleman or a some dangerous title for the human with supernatural power Ren Kirishima. I'm an unknown presence. I think it's stupid.

But if this comes to light, I would be arrested and would be investigated thoroughly. A torture brainwashing drug medication hell waits for me. Then I would be executed and fall in true hell.

That's why my life would be over if my secret is handed over.

「Absolutely don't tell anyone. If you expose me I'll be sure to take everything important from you」

「Taking my first time is already enough. You too, please don't take anything important from me. Especially, if you lay your hand on Lululie, I'd really expose you」

Seria spoke with a smile

Therefore, why am I threatened?

I can't really lay my hands on Lululie. Then, my elf sisters winning over plan becomes meaningless too. It's a waste not to lay hands on those two beauties.

I think about something. Can I compromise? I need to find my way out.

Should I tell her that Lilith almost got kidnapped? But, doing so she would know that I made contact with the elf sisters. That's not good. I

want to advance my plans in secret.

Let's keep quiet for the time being. I must answer her with something.

「I-I won't do such things」

「That's extremely suspicious. Did you already lay your hands on them? I won't forgive you if you do」

Seria sent a glare. But, I answered in confidence.

「I didn't do anything so be relieved. Also I came here every night to gather information so I have no leisure」

I looked at Seria's eyes and said it clearly. The only thing I can do is intimidation and bluff.

We stared at each other, then Seria broke out.

「That's true. I'll believe your words for now」

「Don't worry. I'm not going to lay a hand on them as long as you're obedient」

「Jeez, I can't honestly believe you say such things」

It's good for the time being.

However, I should take measures when exposed.

First, the king and the two marquis houses. I swear to grab their weakness so they don't interfere when I capture Lululie. If that happens, I won't be afraid even if I get exposed. I'll be free to do what I want.

「You're thinking something bad again.」

「W-what do you mean?」

Not just Misha, but Seria can also read my heart. Is it really obvious in my face?

「I really wish it wasn't clear. When you helped me, I was really scared, but glad at the same time. Yet, when it comes to you, you attacked with your greed, then do naughty things, then threatened me. Really, why are you—」

I felt a faint magic from outside the window. The concealment is almost perfect, but as long as there's magical power, they can't hide it from leaking. Normal people would not notice it, but my sixth sense perceived it precisely.

「Wait, Seria. —Matifa, stop hiding and come out」

「Oh, you noticed even by that much? You prevented Misha's surprise attack but you have a quite a sharp sense」

「Eh, from where?」

The window opened automatically. Then a beautiful half moon is reflected on the other side. But, Matifa certainly exists on a place where nobody seems to be. I hear her footsteps as evidence. Then, Matifa appeared out of nothing.

Perhaps, it's a magic that imitates my ability. Her principle is refraction? She doesn't seem to disappear to substance like me.

Still, that doesn't change the fact that that magic is a very advanced magic. As expected this girl's case is different.



「Seria, You were bad there. Since I heard an interesting story, You made me come」

「Matifa-sama, I don't mind it but...」

Seria looked at me and Matifa alternately. Her eyes are looking for an explanation of our relationship.

「The two of us are acquaintances so don't mind it. The matter is...let's see, who's the mistress?」

「M-mistress? But I'm not going out with him...」

Seria looked at me suspiciously. But, Matifa answered the question faster than I can respond.

「Don't worry Seria. I can't be his first so I'm the mistress. In short, I was rejected once. Can you believe that he rejected this cute girl? His penis really had grown」

「Peni...! Matifa-sama, what are you saying!」

「Isn't that true? Normally one would kneel to propose on a beautiful girl like me. Yet, he refused me. In addition, while we're having sex on the bed. In addition, he declared to stop the mistress matter. He's really a cruel man」

「Wha! What does this mean!?!」

Seria scowls and presses me with her deep red face. Magical power builded up and a silver colored aura boils. Her angry face is also lovely, but the magical power is no joke. As expected of a royalty. Even she's 14 years old her magic amount reaches class-B I'm going to die.

「Wait, suppress your magic. You'd be found out」

「Don't worry. I strengthened the barrier when I entered the room. Both the sound and magical barriers are perfect. Nobody would notice even if you cry or suffer. You can persuade, beg for your life, or resort to force, suit yourself. Yeah, that's right. If you're going to use force, add me」

「Thanks but no thanks!」

Matifa sits on the bed nonchalantly and crossed her legs. She's smirking as she pretends to be a mere speculator. This Witch!

「I'm asking what does this mean. Ren-san. Did you involve others after all? You did lay your hands on women other than me!?2」

Shit. The relationship I build might collapse in an instant. Why did I rush in to this bloodbath?

「Wait, calm down Seria. Don't listen to Matifa. She's a witch. She's just disturbing and amusing herself」

「Matifa-sama doesn't tell a lie. You did lay your hand on Matifa? Even though she looks like a small child!!3」

Certainly, her appearance on the outside is 10 years old. If I laid my hands on her I won't escape from the Lolicon slander.

However, hearing the word 'child' Matifa felt offended. Shit, she's also becoming grumpy.

「S-she's a respectable lady. A man wouldn't be able to refuse if invited

by such a beautiful woman like her. I didn't have the right of veto. It can't be helped!」

Rather, it was me that was played with! I'm the victim! I want to cry those, but I read the mood as expected.

The pressure of the two beautiful girls are fearful. The unpleasant sweat flowed on my back. I want to run away right now.

「Then you admit that you laid your hands on her? You're the worst4 Can't you just leave me along and make Matifa-sama happy!5」

「Oh, Seria you said something good. That's right, you. Make me happy」

Seria raised her fist and made a fist figure repeatedly. It might be childlike, but her magic is in murder class. Will I die if she swings downwards? A red fruit splits open and this room would become a spot of a bizarre looking murder case? You get it?

Since I don't want to die from such a thing, I stand and hold Seria's arm with all my effort. However, I was no match for her power and was pushed. I still manage to induce the power, I held the joint and forcefully stopped the movement of her arm.

Then the aftermath of Seria's magic was stopped somehow. The magic burst out without hitting, then the wind blew away for several meters.

「Kaha!」

「H-Huh?」

I fixed my posture and fell on the floor soon enough. It's a shame that I can't use flight ability in such case. If my body can't take off, I can't use it.

「Seria is bold. If you made a wrong stop he'd be dead. No, Should I compliment him for stopping it without running away? Well, we have to adjust the next thing well. He doesn't have magical power after all」

「Eh, uhm, yes, I'm sorry...」

Matifa rebuked Seria, Seria apologized obediently.

The bottom of the carpet is soft and fluffy. I who got off with a light bruise had my body lifted somehow.

「You get it right? I can't keep up with you as I have no power. I can't win against Matifa on arguments, so I'm not a partner you can't defy. Matifa's words are correct but that's not all. Matifa invited me, then I refused her. Although we had a relationship in body but that's the same for us. It's an adult relationship just like you thought」

「Err, that's...」

Seria looked at me confused. Matifa stood up and walked to me while laughing in satisfaction.

「Well, let's leave it like that. Seria, what this one is saying is true. He refused my temptation. But that's because I'm lonely, so I had him accompany me. That's why I'm not a mistress nor a lover. In addition it's just one day. You don't have to worry about my body. This is much durable than you think」

Matifa used healing magic when she touched me. The back pain goes away in an instant. When the treatment ends, I clenched Matifa's hand and stood up.

「Uhm, I'm sorry. I overdid it...」

「Don't mind it. I'm used to this much」

Seria's mind seems to have settled too. I escaped the dilemma for the time being. I thought I would die.

「Well then, let's go to the main subject」

When I and Seria settled, Matifa butted in. Seria and I confirmed with a nod and Matifa continued her words.

「Ren Kirishima, is it true that you're an otherworlder?」

「.....」

「.....」

Shit. It was revealed on the person I never wanted to reveal. I might really die.

1. What's with this role reversal? ↔
2. Seria is jelly ↔
3. Kono lolicon! Ren no bakaaa! ↔
4. Why aren't you satisfied with me? ↔
5. Ren no bakaaaa! ↔

## Chapter 32: The witch knew too.

「Ren Kirishima, is it true that you're an otherworlder?」

Seria fell silent on Matifa's words. Should I deceive her or tell her the truth.

「What—」

「You don't need to lie」

As soon as I try to deceive her, a hateful magic overflowed from Matifa. Dark aura fills the room and clings to my whole body.

Cold sweat breaks out from my whole body. I can't move a finger. I can't go against her. I'd be killed if I defied her.

My instincts sounds like an alarm bell telling me that I should escape right now. But, where should I run? How?

This monster would chase me anywhere. She would chase me by means I don't know, she would sieze me with magic I can't defy and she'd handle me as she like.

Running is impossible. I can't do anything but say it obediently. I'll be a servant ant behave just as she wish. That's the only way to survive.

But—.

「What are you saying? There's no such thing as otherworlder. Are you believing that?」

「Wha!?!」

When I pretend ignorance while laughing on my nose, Seria raised a voice of surprise.

「Fufu, you're really interesting. That's right, if you ask me if I believe, then what would be your response if I say I don't? I had been studying magic for long but the presence of an otherworlder can't be confirmed. There were people who claimed that they're otherworlders in the past but all of them are just fraud and insane. It's the same in the books. That's why, I did not believe the existence of other world. I thought you can do anything with magic, but there's no such thing. Magic is founded with a proper theory. it's confirmed that an upper world and a higher dimension exists and it's possible to interfere. However, if you look through here, I never found any human in this world that's from the other world. Because I'm a researched, I don't believe on something that can't be demonstrated. However, if you're an otherworlder, I would bend my belief」

Matifa slowly reaches for my cheek. I see an illusion that she's swallowing me. I can't move a finger to go against it.

However, I musn't admit it here.

「Isn't it obvious that it's a lie? A made up story」

「I don't understand why you're lying. I won't do anything cruel since you're an otherworlder. I'll just perform an autopsy and peep at your memory. It's okay. I'll be sure to put you back perfectly so be relieved」

Don't just gloss it over. Or rather, how do you intend to do autopsy?

Matifa's small hand crawls on the line of my jaw. Shivering, the fear and pleasure runs through my back and my heart palpitates. My breathing becomes short and my chest feels painful.

Still, I won't be defeated.

「I really don't know otherworlders. It's just a delusion. It's a shame」

「Fufu, you really won't bend with this? You really get more interesting. True, making you say it easily isn't fair. Also, you seem to dislike me. —— then let's go with business. If you give me information I don't know I will give a thing matching to it. Anything is good, money, or even my body. It would be good to lend my power once. Of course, I demand reasonable information. How about it?」

Matifa shrugged her small shoulders and asked sweetly.

Matifa's proposal is information trading. it's not a bad thing for me.

「Talking about information, it should be fine as long as you don't know it right?」

「Yes it is. The value of information is judged by you and me. When the meaning isn't important to me but it is for you, I'd pay an appropriate consideration. It also applies vice versa. Since it's a contract we can't lie. I want you to be relieved」

Matifa looks into my eyes with a jewel like pupils.

Looking to the botomless eyes, I'm anxious whether I should contract with the devil. She's inviting me to hell. I wonder if I'm being played by Matifa?

But it's the same thing. Then it's better to bind her with a contract.

「Is the contract a thing growing only for my information? Just what information I will get from you? Would it be reasonable?」

「There's no need to force me. I'm the only one with the duty to pay.



However, you may demand something that's been shielded by a contract. It's still quite an advantageous contract for you. I think I'm the one at disadvantage」

Conversely, if I give her information I can ask her anything. The only demerit is the shield of negotiation as Matifa says. But, that's it—.

「Got it. That's good」

「Then we'll complete the deal. Good Good. I was planning to use force in one way or another. Then, do you want something from me?」

Matifa asked me with a smile. Then I decided on what I want.

「Suppress this magical power. I'm at my... limit... 」

My view shakes. My semicircular canals don't work. Is it because I'm standing on the black darkness? Or is it because I've already fallen and I don't know it?

Matifa's beautiful face distorted like the devil.

「Then, why don't you give me some information? Then I'll suppress my magical power」

「Just as I thought! Then how about this. I'm an otherworlder!!」

「Yup, I know」

Matifa blankly declared. After all, she's just playing with me when she's confirming if I'm an otherworlder.

Dammit! She's really a devil.

「Hahaha, I'm joking. I suppressed my magical power so don't worry. So, sleep on the bed」

Matifa suppressed the magical power in the room and laid me down on the bed with her small arms.

Lightheadedly, I take out magical power purification medicine from my waist put it in my mouth. It takes a while till the medicine works, but it should be possible to move with this.

「Uhm, Matifa-sama, is he okay?」

Seria who watched the exchange silently timidly asked.

「Don't worry. it's just magic pollution. Since I took magical power purification medicine I'll be able to move soon. I'm sorry to involve Seria. You we're scared right?」

「That's...yes. It was really scary」

「I see. However you talked to me. Normally, when you feel that kind of magic you shouldn't come close to me, right? After all you have a strong mind」

「No, I'm just used on scary things」

Saying that, Seria looked at me. No no, that person is much more scary than me. I'm a horrific killer, that one is the demon king. Our cases are entirely different.

「Did you overcome the fear of my magical power. That's good, I want to

see such spectacle」

Matifa licked her lips then crawled to me who's lying on the bed.

「Matifa, what do you intend to do?」

「A congratulations for the contract. What? You should just lie down and let me do it」

「Matifa-sama?」

Seria doesn't seem to notice Matifa's real intention. But, I know. This girl intends to eat me here now. Furthermore, in front of Seria.

Matifa hold my pants and pulled out my underwear smoothly. It's quick work that I doubt that she has four hands. *Poron* my withered son is exposed and a lovely scream is heard.

「You.」

「Isn't it okay? I do love you. And you don't hate me either right?」

「There's a time and place for that」

I can't show reverse-rape in Seria's bed. My dignity that fell to the abyss would really be gone. If this happens she won't feel threatened and I won't be able to enjoy Seria.

Seria is overwhelmed by Matifa's reckless action, solidified and can't say anything.

「Aren't those your words. If you don't like it then you should just run away」

「I can't do that. Then I'll tell you something. In my hometown there's a

proverb that says when petticoats woo, breeks may come speed 1 It means that men should be doing it no women」

「Certainly, that's correct. If the woman demanded, man should respond on full force. You'd better lose genital function if you refused. If so, I have to pay some compensation right? Let's see, after I eat you you'd be cleaning up? You'd do it by full force」

「Have it your way」

「I will」

I gave up resisting and relaxed my whole body. Just do whatever you like.

l. <http://www.language-translation-help.com/love-sayings.html> ←

## Chapter 33: The witch plays ##

Matifa took off her goth loli dress and her appearance changed to just black underwear. The unbalance of the girl wearing a sexy black underwear brings a dangerous charm. An untouched jewel, the immorality stirs up the excitement.

「Look well Seria. This is an adult relationship. You may participate if you like」

「Matifa-sama!? You can't do that easily!」

Seria tries to stop Matifa in panic. But, she was repelled away in an empty space.

「Ouch!」

「You can't, Seria. If you disturb my pleasure I won't forgive you. In this world, there are some values you don't know. If you don't know it then you shouldn't deny it. Or could it be that you want to say that he's your man? If so then I'll draw back obediently」

「You're wrong!」

Seria denied strongly. I thought she would be acting dere but it seems to be my imagination.

「Then just be quiet. I'll be showing gratitude for you letting me borrow your place so be relieved」

「That's not the problem...」

Seria still wants to say something but she can't make a sound argument against Matifa so she had no choice but to stay silent.

Upon Matifa confirming that Seria became silent, I extend my hand on the top of my waist.

「You did like this with Seria a while ago. Then, should I teach you the difference in technique?」

The feeling of her flesh is being pressed against my dick over the lace underwear. The half erect penis is inserted in her slit, she slowly moves her waist back and forth to rub the sensitive parts.

She doesn't move her upper body, only her waist is dancing lewdly. Sandwiched between the genital area and the abdomen, even though I don't want it, my penis regained its hardness.

「It became hard. Did you get excited at me?」

「There's no man who wouldn't excited seeing you naked. You know that and you said it already」

I slowly move my waist, then extend my own hands on Matifa's chest slowly. Matifa's chest are too small for my hand. I extend both of my hands, I rub her plump erect nipples in the center with my thumb and index finger.

「Nnn...You can move already?」

「I'm overworking myself. It's not my hobby being the attacked」

「Fufu, that's conceited. But don't move too much. It's not your imagination that your body is screaming」

Matifa made a finger crawl over my body. From abdomen to my chest, to my upper arm. Then she took both of my arms and kissed the back of the hand. That time, an acute pain attacked my whole body.

「Ga!」

「See? You're overdoing it. You fought so much these past several days right? Just how much magical power you bathed in? How many times you almost died? Now matter how much you recover with magic, that's just half baked phony. There's a limit to the effect. I poured just a bit magical power in your body and you're hypersensitive right now. If it's a healthy body, there won't be any impact, but it will clearly come out in the surface if you have an abnormality in your body. The reason you can't move is because the damage accumulated. Leave this to me and rest for now」

My body no longer listens to me at all. Even if I try to lift my arm, just putting a small amount of power sends pain in my body.

Despite that, my crotch is getting hot and excited from the stimulation. Matifa rubs the texture of the hot lace, the stimulation was more than enough.

It's yearning from hypersensitivity, isn't this 10 times more sensitive!?

Does Matifa want me to go crazy!?

「N, Haa... Fufufu, it seems to be working. Your place's pulsating is being transmitted. You want to shoot it out?」

「Uaaa...」

Matifa seems to be saying something, but I can't hear it well. All of my concentration is placed in my crotch<sup>1</sup> I want more stimulation. I want to unleash its desire. I want to shoot it out!

My waist shakes every time Matifa rubs her waist. The sensitive penis is conveying unbearable pleasure.

And, I came immediately. Together with the feeling of ejaculation coming from the depths, suddenly the feeling disappeared from my penis.

My sense wasn't paralyzed. Matifa stopped stroking it.

I'm troubled. This is bad. This is half-kill.

I looked under absentmindedly, I saw Matifa showing a smile on her face.

The penis freed is filled with worldly desires and is pulsating.

「You can't shoot it out. You have to release it in the vagina properly, okay? Fufu, don't look at me wistfully. I want to bully you more」

Matifa smiled bewitchingly as she licks her lips while looking at me suffering.

Removing her underwear on one leg, her white skin and pink genitals displayed when she opened her legs wide. Furthermore, when she opened her flirty meat with both hands, transparent liquid pours down on my dick .

「Can you see it? Just by rubbing it on your penis it got like this already」

Matifa reported it obscenely as if she's drunk.

Then, Matifa slowly sits down on the reddish brown penis that's shining with pre-cum and love nectar.

「Kuaaaaaaa!」



「Haaa! As expected, your penis is big! Naaaaa!」

Matifa's small pussy hole *Rip Rip* opens wide as she lower her waist. The penis that's on the verge of ejaculation had it's tip pressed hard, a voice leaked from my mouth.

Matifa adjusted the angle of her small waist, the penis is swallowed inside little by little. Shaking the waist back and forth, the friction is too strong because the waist moves around, the adult penis is swallowed to the interior of the vagina.

Every time Matifa makes a small move, random stimulation runs to the penis. It could fire anytime however, the tight opening of Matifa's vagina doesn't allow it. Is she using some magic to not let it out?

「Fufu, you're drooling as if you want to release it already. But, not yet. We have to insert it to the innermost precisely」

Then, Matifa's violating starts. She moves her waist clockwise, then counterclockwise. Every time Matifa moves her intravaginal walls rage, it's pressing hard on an organ somewhere. It's a hard bone, a soft sea of folds, rough meat wall. Every single stimulation urges him to ejaculate, but it's blocked on the root.

It feels like heaven and hell at the same time.

「Kuoooooooo...」 Matifa, I can't anymore. Let me shoot it out...」

「Not yet, haaannn~! Not yet. It hadn't reached the deepest part yet. Nnn!! I won't let you ejaculate until all of me is savored」

「Matifa-sama...Amazing...」

Matifa goes down as she shake her waist little by little. She doesn't do

an up-down piston but waving back and forth stirring her vagina.

「Haaaan! Nfuuuuu.... Hauun! Haa. Aaaaaa!」

Matifa eats my penis with her mouth below and enjoys herself. Her beautiful face is warped with lewdness. The connecting part is shut closed but leaks love nectar, the interior is sloppy and boiling, it's telling that it's about to climax soon.

「Haa! Aaahn! Just a bit more. Me too, I'm about to!!」

Matifa is passionately moving. Dancing lasciviously wildly looking as if urging to climax, her small body swallows my penis even deeper. It's believed that the penis won't be able to fit in definitely, yet it swallowed it completely.

「Haaaa, See, all of you ins inside. Ah, Me too, in my deepest place, Nhaa! Let out a lot!!」

The glans is stuck in her uterus, *GuiGui*, the inside of her pussy is raging. Then, the time came at last.

「Haaaaaaaaa!! Cumming! Gonna cum! Cum, Cum, Cumiiiiiiiiing!!」

「Uaaaaaaaaah!!」

Matifa's vagina shut tight at the same time of her ejaculation, the piled up semen gushed out. The glans was half buried inside her womb, *Byurururururu!* The sperm spouted vigorously.

「Aaaaaa! Inside, your hot sperm, It's coming! It's pulsating, inside my womb, it's flowing!!」

Matifa bent her back and came to finish on top of me. A dangerous dance of a dangerous girl, the playing and trampling finally finished. It was really dangerous.

I can finally relax after I ejaculate, we already forgot the existence of Seria who's watching us.

Seria looked at me and Matifa dumbfounded. Her right hand extends to her crotch, *Kuchu Kuchu*, it's making wet sounds. White liquid drips from there, it's probably the semen I let out a while ago.

「You, even though I'm here you're looking at another woman, don't you think that's rude?」

I inadvertently looked at Seria, the connected Matifa raised a complaint.

「No, that's the end right? Your technique was the best. It was considerably hard」

「Fun. That was my intention but I changed my mind. You, when you looked at Seria you got hard a bit. You can still go on. Then, just get it on till the end」

「Ha? Hey, Stop. It's already impossible—」

「There's no use arguing!」

Matifa began to move her waist again to make the soft me hard again.

My too obedient son got got hard from the stimulation, Matifa violated me once again.

In the end, she squeezed me six times before she released me. She squeezed out my semen with different attacks every time. The last shots were already watery. The humiliation.

「Fuu. Let's leave it like that today」

「Haahaahaahaa...It finally ended...」

I who became mentally whited out, covered my own face, trembling in shame. In the end, I wasn't able to resist and was toyed by Matifa.

「Uhm, are you okay?」

「I'm not okay」

Seria anxiously looked at me. My small son, and me shaking like a virgin would be very funny.

But, Seria. She relaxed her guard.

「Then it's Seria's turn next. It's all right. Since you lent me the place I will give you my gratitude」

「Eh?」

Matifa's demon hands extends to Seria. Then, unable to escape, Seria was pinned down next to me.

「Matifa-sama, What are you doing!」

「"What?" you say, it's pleasure. You're not satisfied after looking right? But he collapsed already, it may be audacious but I'll be your partner」

「Hyauu!」

Matifa began to lesbian rape my neighbor. However, I can't interfere with that.

I was able to move somehow and left the bed and readied my clothes. Matifa peeled Seria nude and attacked her.

「Hua! Haa...Hyau! Ua,n! Nn! Ah, ah, aaaaaaaaaaa!!」

She came immediately.

「Yup, you're really sensitive. There's no doubt that you're weak on the breasts, other than that you can feel it just anywhere. It's a developed sensation, but I'm a bit jealous that you're so sensitive. Still, what did you eat to make this breasts this big? I think I have quite the thing but it didn't become this big」

「Nope, You don't have breasts」

Matifa was trying to compete while lifting Seria's breasts, I inserted a tsukkomi. That's not even a competetion. It's not even 1-0 but 100-0, it's clear who's 0.

「You're really rude! Even I don't have now it's still growing! Have some bit of delicacy」

「Yan~! Matifa-sama, Wait, pleash wait!!」

Matifa fiddles with Seria's nipples, venting out her anger. This fellow is really a tyrant. Even if her partner is a royalty she has no mercy.

「Sorry for being insensitive. I'll come back later so I'll leave it to you. Be sure to educate her properly」

「Leave it to me. Look forward to your next meeting」

「Please wait a moment! he-help meeeee!」

「Study well」

I exit the window while ignoring the screams of Seria that became Matifa's doll.

Sorry Seria. I can't have an erection anymore.<sup>2</sup>

1. He's literally thinking with his dick ↩
2. No it's not Ludeus syndrome, He means that he can't join the fun for today ↩

## Chapter 34: Withered Day

My son doesn't react even I see Seria's foolishness. I would just feel miserable if I just stay here any longer.

When I stepped outside, not even a sound can be heard at all.

I cancelled the search today as I won't be able to deal with it because of my physical condition.

I jumped from the veranda and cross over the wall in under the cover of the night and returned home.

When I arrived, I changed to my casual clothes quickly and went to Lululie's house this time. The reason is because I'm currently guarding Lululie's house.

I sneaked out because of the work that was left today. Since tomorrow would be a daytime mobilization, I'd be late on the way back and assume that I fell asleep.<sup>1</sup>

When I arrived I opened the door with the key Lululie lent me, Misha and Lilith jumped out.

「Master, welcome back」

「Onii-san, welcome back」

The two seems to be sleepy wearing those pajama while rubbing their eyes. Misha is stiff as the size doesn't fit her, Lilith's shoulders dropped. Did you get up expressly?

「I'm home. But you guys should still be sleeping」

The time is almost midnight. It's not a time for children to be up.

「I was talking with Mi-chan. Then, Mi-chan says that Onii-san came back」

「I felt Master's presence. ...Master, did you go to Matifa-sama?」

Misha sniffed my smell. It seems she gets it through smell.

「She's the one who came to me. Let me rest because I kept her company」

「Un」

「Onii-san's sleeping place is here」

Lilith lead me to the sofa she prepared in the living room and I lied down. The cushion's volume increased than it was in daytime, it's probably Lilith's consideration.

Lilith brought a blanket and called me.

「Sorry. We don't have enough beds」

「It's fine. Adventurers sleep anywhere and I'm not really going to sleep. Isn't Lilith's bed too narrow with Misha?」

「Mi-chan is small and warm so it's fine. It's fun to have someone like a little sister」

「I see. Then if you may」

「Yes, leave it to me!」



Then the two people disappeared and I started my guard duty. I rest my body while half awake<sup>2</sup> I'm tired today. I must restore my physical strength a little.



I hear birds chirping from the outside of the window. However, peeking out from the gaps on the curtain, it's not yet dawn.

There's a sign of a human.

That sign came from the top.

*Gii*, when the door opened, it was Lululie in pajamas.

「Good morning」

「Good morning. So you were awake」

While lightly surprised, Lululie greeted back.

「I'm a guard so I'm up. Aside from that, is your body okay already?」

「Yes, thanks to you I'm completely energized.<sup>3</sup> I'll go to work again today」

Lululie's complexion improved greatly, it can be seen that fatigue came out. If it's about condition, I'm quite worse. It's no problem if it's like this.

「I see. It's good that you're energetic. Sorry but let me rest for a bit more. If you're going, wake me up so I can go with you」

「Yes. Did you eat breakfast already?」

「Can I ask of you?」

「Then I'll prepare immediately」

Lululie headed to the kitchen with apron on one of her hand. Immediately after, *Ton Ton Ton*, a rhythmic sound of kitchen knife and fragrant smell of roast meat drifts.

While waiting half-asleep, my shoulder was shook by Lululie.

「I'm done」

「Ah, thanks. I'll get up」

I removed the blanket and got up. Even though it's morning, my son is in low-spirits because it was oppressed yesteday. This needs to rest too.

‘Uuun’, while stretching, Lululie stares at my face.

「What's wrong?」

「Ah, No, you seem to be tired」

I check my condition while turning my shoulder. There's no hindrance in movement, but my body feels heavy as expected. Matifa had sex with me and polluted me with magical power and made me oversensitive, there's the effect of magical power purification medicine, but my body still feels heavy burden. I'll have no choice but to do various health care for myself today.

「Yeah, I worked till late yesterday, I'm still tired. But, if it's this much, there's no problem」

「Is that so? Please don't overwork yourself too much. You'll get a cold」

「I'll be careful」

Lululie approached after I finished light stretches. Then, she extends her hand on my casual clothes.

Thinking what she will do, she began to tidy my clothing.

「Thanks」

「Don't worry, It's my kind of work after all...」

Lululie smoothened the wrinkles of the clothes like she's used to it. As expected from a pro-maid. He incidentally felt her like a newly married woman. Newly married woman, that sounds nice.

After arranging me beautifully, Lululie sat on the table where she put the breakfast she prepared. I sat on the opposite side and ate Lululie's handmade breakfast.

It's an orthodox menu with bacon and eggs on bread and a salad. It's an ordinary morning scene where you eat normally and speak normally.

But, I wonder why. My mind is being sting over.

「Did it not suit your taste?」

「No way. It's been a while since I had such a meal so I'm impressed」

Since when this is a normal meal? I have no memory of it after coming into this world at least.

At Master's place they only have simple meals and value nutrition, furthermore it's forbidden to talk. When I got out of there I always eat

alone, just a bread and it can fill the day. Yesterday I ate lunch that Misha had prepared, she cooked it well and simple, but since she's a slave that's disciplined to be attentive, there wasn't an atmosphere that can be called a fun meal.

「Is the breakfast not enough?」

「No, it's not like that, I mean that there's no one who make meals for me after a long time. It's already been three years where I had no memory of eating like this」

「Three Years?... Though I might not understand even if I hear it, but was it harsh?」

「It was harsh and painful but I can't do anything about it. Well, I don't regret it」

There's no regret. Though I don't regret, it wasn't good either.

Lululie showed a complicated face for a moment, then smiled gently.

「Then, please take it easy while you're here」

「I'll take your offer」

Thus, Lululie, welcomed me. Yesterday I was just a total stranger.

We chatted for a while after that, I walked Lululie to the castle even before the morning rise.

The market is still crowded with people early in the morning and the distance naturally comes near. Lilith and Misha are already on friendly terms, talking about what should they make for dinner today and some silly talk, we had arrived in front of the castle gate before we noticed.

「Good luck on your work」

「Yes, I'll be going」

Then, I waved my hand to see her off in front of the castle gate.

This is somehow nice. This feels like in exchange for my super abilities, I lost my daily life, I return to Lululie's house to take a nap while indulging myself in deep emotion.



The two little children that woke up in the morning run around filled with vigor. After eating breakfast, they brushed teeth together and went to the morning market together.

Usually, it's Lululie that does the shopping, but since Misha is here, the work is assigned to the little kid.

In the end, we're here because Lululie has the food expense, I handed them money secretly so they would buy more than usual. If that happened, the amount Lululie eats won't increase but Misha is gluttonous.

Meanwhile I slept for the third time. This time it's serious sound sleep. The body with fatigue remaining quickly fell asleep.

When I woke up, the two had returned and finished the household briefly.

I awaken my drowsiness with water then took out the two children to the orphanage. It's the orphanage Seria visited before.

Lilith can't go to school and the person herself doesn't like being in house alone, she usually is entrusted to the orphanage. There she plays

as the helpful onee-chan, in addition she seems to study together there.

I decided to leave her to Misha since it's special. The director of the orphanage was a good old woman. When she read Lululie's letter, she accepted Misha pleasantly.

「Misha, I'll leave you to guard Lilith」

「Yeah」

「Lilith, try to teach Misha various things」

「Got it」

That said, I feel that the two won't part their hands easily. This is lonely as it is.



I who become alone headed to the Royal Castle Right away. It's to continue the investigation that wasn't done yesterday.

I invaded the place one by one and there was one big harvest.

That's Radom's motive for being hostile on Misumunto Kingdom.

Radom's childhood friend that became his fiancé was lost when they went to war against Misumunto Kingdom. It seems to be revenge.

That woman is Will Gantts daughter, the head of the family, Felix who lost his daughter has the same purpose.

In order to obstruct the friendship, they planned to kidnap Seria.

It's definitely a criminal act but in the first place the army is Felix's It would be reflected on the strong measures.

Aside from that, there's not much other harvest. Everyone waits for Felix's report tomorrow. In exchange, I found evidence of corruption, but will this be useful as expected?

Today, the most suspicious move are the maids hurrying. Apparently, they seem to use the space for the audience for Felix's return tomorrow, they're preparing and cleaning the space to accept the audience which are nobles that will come over tomorrow, considering the sudden increase of work, hands can't be seen turning.

Lululie was one of them too. Although she collapsed yesterday, she's tidying up large quantities of laundry alone while putting away her sweat. Even though there's magic, there's no change in hard labor. Though I'm worried that she might collapse again, but I can't help her, I can only watch over her.

Since she will come back tired today, I'll let her relax slowly that time.

When I look over Seria's state, she seems to be studying on the desk. When I closed up to check, it wasn't yesterday's novel but a politics related book. She's doing her best in her own way. Since I can't disturb her when she shows motivation, I didn't call her out.

As usual, Lion stands before the door. But, there's fewer magical power leaking from there compared to the day before yesterday. It must be thanks to Matifa's strong barrier. It became easy to do various things.

Because I'm curious about Seria's guard set-up, It seems that at Lion is at daytime and two female knights at night. Lion is no problem but the night time guard set-up makes me uneasy. I don't want to rely too much but I can't do anything but to ask Matifa.

Thinking so, I faced towards Matifa's location.

「You came. I'm glad that you came for me」

Matifa greeted me with her usual tone. She seems to be researching magic in her workshop today. There are some old books and suspicious liquid bottles scattered everywhere. Against the wall are some specimens of creatures I don't even know.

After greetings we cut down to business immediately.

「There are some things I want to ask」

「What? Just say it」

「During night, I want you to defend Seria」

「I don't mind it, but it's not for free」

Matifa attach her elbow to the desk and grinned. I intend to use yesterday's contract.

「I know. If you want to know something then listen. I'll tell you whatever you want on the otherworld」

「Let's see. Then, why don't you teach me your world's magic?」

「I don't mind, but basically there's no magic on my world, Are you fine with that?」

Matifa nodded.

「Just the important information. But, there's a concept about magic right? Even myths and legends are fine. Please let me hear it by all means」



Talking about myth...」

I'm not well informed on myths or legends. I've read those manga and anime targeting general public, but it's not wise to tell her that. I can only tell fairy tales or children's story at most.

「Anything is nice. I want to know you more. Therefore it doesn't need to be a accurate myth. I just want you to tell what you see, hear, how you understand, how you feel. Quick. Anything is fine so let me hear it」

「Well, if you say so—」

Then, I told some famous stories.

Interrupting my poor talk, Matifa says「Okay, then?」she nods while listening enthusiastically. Her figure looks like a child listening intently, naturally, my tone gets passionate. So this fellow can make that face, I thought.

Before soon, the prince rescued the princess and the fun time came to an end.

「Un, that was fun. Your world's people sure have an interesting idea of freedom. After all, it's the result of having no magic? I did hear a story in this world that resembles it, I liked it but other people don't model their enemies.<sup>4</sup> But the story from your world seems to be overflowing with dreams. ...Yup, I'm satisfied. You should be relieved because I will protect Seria like the prince」

Those are Matifa's impressions. This girl seems to think on her own way. Not with her usual wicked smile, but she smiled innocently like a child.

「I see, if so, then I'm glad. Sorry to interrupt while you're satisfied, but I have another favor to ask」

「What? Since I'm in a good mood I'll hear anything」

「Yeah, I want to make something...」



When I left Matifa's place, the sun already sank. This is probably the only day where Matifa didn't do ero.

Afterwards, I came to meet the two child and the three of us had gone home while joining hands. The two of them happily talked about what they did and the friends they made today.

「And then and then, Mi-chan is amazing! She can do better arithmetic than ! Even the teacher was surprised that she can do two digit multiplication mentally!」

「Master, Misha, amazing?」

「Misha can do anything」

「Ehehe」

Misha's tail goes straight upward then sways happily. It seems Misha is clever. I won't have to worry with this.

The three of us had dinner when we returned, then the two of them entered the bath. Fortunately, water is abundant but neither I, Misha or Lilith can use fire magic. It can't be helped so I worked as the fire watchman.

「How's the temperature?」

「It's just right. Onii-san, thank you」

「I don't like baths」

「Mi-chan should warm up properly」

「Ya」

Inside were the two children giggling. Peeking from the window, I can see two children with small chest. Their growth phase isn't over yet. I wasn't excited because I'm a foolish sage today.

1. 明日以降は基本的に昼間の行動として、何かあれば帰りを遅くするか寝静まってからとしよう ←
2. Agent 47 ←
3. Thanks to the massage ←
4. この世界にも今聞かせてもらったのと似たような物語があるんだけどね、ボクは好きなんだけど、他の人たちには相手にもされてないんだ。 ←

## Chapter 35: Lululie found out.

When the two children got out of the bath, I came to meet Lululie. This is part of the guard duty.

I waited in front of the castle as it gets dark, then after a while, Lululie came out from the side gate. I waved my hand then she walks to me when she noticed.

「You seem to be tired」

「Yes, urgent jobs pressed in」

I received her baggage that seems to be heavy and we walked along the same way as we did this morning in an opposite direction. The lights were thin so Lululie brought a magic light lantern.

Idly, the illuminated appearance of Lululie is somehow faint, I have a feeling that it will disappear without a warning.

Lululie softly smiles and begins to talk.

「Is Lilith a nuisance?」

「No way. Rather, I'm saved as she takes care of Misha. She's a good little sister」

「That's true. It's my prided hardworking little sister」

Lululie is pleased that Lilith is being praised. She really loves her. She might be hot-tempered towards Lilith, but that shows that they're in good terms.

「But Misha-chan can do anything」

「That girl had some hardships. She became desperate and learned it」

Misha does housework since she was small from the slave house, then she was Matifa's labcat<sup>1</sup> on top of that. It's not a normal life.

I thought about Misha's hardships, Lululie threw a question to confirm it.

「That's why you're spoiling her?」

Did I spoil her?

How I handle Misha isn't something that a slave would understand. I want to spoil Misha because she's cute, but I'd be lying if I said that I didn't feel pity on her hardship up until now. But, that's not the only reason.

The best reason why I spoil Misha is because of Matifa. Now that I'm supported by her, I can't completely trust Misha. Then, I just have to treat Misha to move for my convenience. Therefore, I made her free and made Lilith her friend. But, I shouldn't say that.

「That's not true. She'll have to handle hard work together with me. That's why I want to build mutual trust」

「Is that so? But isn't it alright for a slave even if you don't have mutual trust?」

Since slaves are bound with contract magic, they can't disobey their masters. But, Matifa is the one who applied the magic to Misha.

「Certainly, she's bound by the slave contract magic, but that's not perfect. In case of emergency, I can't match against Misha. That's why I have to look like a good master」

「Fufu, so you pretend that it's like that」

She threw a light laugh She didn't believe in me.

「Lululie too, aren't you soft hearted on Lilith and Princess Seria? If you worked till you collapsed, no one would be pleased」

「Yes, the princess told me that today. I'll take care」

「Please do. It can't be helped to collapse even if you're not a guard」

Thus, we continued to talk in the town of the night. We meet a drunkard on the roadside occasionally, but they didn't pick a fight in particular.

We reached Lululie's house before long. We passed under the door together while greeting "We're home", but the children shows no reaction.

I thought it was strange, but Lilith was sleeping on the sofa. She clings on Misha that she's troubled because if she moves she'll come off.

「Welcome back Master」

「I'm back. You seem to be doing well 」

「Un, Lilith-chi is a friend」

「I see. Then, carry her to the bed」

「She doesn't separate」

Which is better, Matifa or Lilith? Does Misha excrete a pheromone to be liked by girls? If you have, then please give it to me too.

Lululie who can't stand it any longer shakes Lilith.

「Geez, Lilith... Misha-chan, sorry. Hey, Lilith. Sleep on your own room」

「N~.....Mi-chan is warm...」

「Geez...」

However, Lilith didn't wake up. She stayed late yesterday after all. Misha's eyes seek for help.

「It can't be helped」

If this continues, Lilith will catch a cold, I carried the two of them on the room as they seek to be wrapped in blanket.

「I'll leave this to you Misha」

「Master is mean」

「You have superhuman strength so you can do anything」

「Lilith-chi will wake up」

「Then give it up」

「Muuu~」

I ignored Misha's hateful voice and left the room immediately. Misha would manage.

I warm the bath and let Lululie enter ahead afterwards.

While I do fire watch again, a beautiful sound can be heard from the bathroom. She's probably humming, it doesn't seem to be clear, I

thought. 2 Is this a tune passed to the elves? It feels like an ethnic music from somewhere which transmits soothing effect on your mind when heard. I unconsciously lost in thought.

When Lululie got up, I borrowed the bath to wash of my sweat. A plant was planted here so a natural fragrance drifted on the bathroom. I soaked in the hot water that feels like a hot spring and my fatigue came off.

When I got up from the bath, Lululie is on the sofa.

「How was the bath?」

「Yeah, it was a nice hot water. Sorry to borrow your bath」

「No, it's fine. Also, I haven't given thanks when you helped Lilith either」

Saying that, Lululie turned to my back and began to massage my shoulder.

「Ah~It feels good」

「It's my thanks from yesterday」

Lululie's delicate hand loosen the shoulder muscle. The gentle hand heals the body.

It feels like it's a service from the hot spring hotel. Furthermore, it's a service of a beautiful Elf sister.

If Seria isn't here, I would propose to her right now.

「Your body is forged wonderfully. I can't see that much, but your muscles are packed」

「It's because I lose if I don't train. Even with this training, I'm still no



match against a knight with magical power. Well, I can still do it」

「...Just a bit, can you let me hear your story?」

Hesitating, Lululie asked.

After Matifa, now Lululie?

「I don't mind but, I'm not as respectable of a human as you think」

「Yes, I know. You're an otherworlder aren't you?」

「...Eh?」

Why does Lululie know?

Am I that famous?

Or did Seria expose me?

「Ah, sorry for surprising you. I've heard the story about the otherworlder from the princess. Since the name and features match, I thought that it was you」

「Wait a moment. When did you hear that story?」

「Well, three years and over and over again. She says that she always want to meet him but she can't. But, I didn't hear it recently」

Whenever Seria goes to Master's place does she leak it out to Lululie? Then, she doesn't know I raped her. That was dangerous.

「I see. If you noticed, then it can't be helped. That's right, I'm an otherworlder. But that's a secret」

「Yes, I know that. The princess spoke to no one but me」

「Thanks. I don't want to have some eyes set on me」

Like Matifa, or Matifa, or Matifa.

「Yes, therefore, can you talk some story where you can actually tell?」

「Well then」

Most of them are fabricated lies.

Then, Lululie began a barrage of questions.

「Then, where was Ren-san's birthplace?」

「It's a country named Japan. It's a country with no magic but technologically advanced」

「What do you do there?」

「I was a student」

「Student? How old are you?」

「19」

「You're one year younger than me. Since you're mature, I thought that you're older」

So Lululie is 20 years old? Her appearance looks like a high school student, it's probably because she's an elf.

「Don't overwork yourself. When you make light of it, something bad might happen」

「Your constitution is dangerous isn't it? But, aren't you in marriageable age since you're 19 years old? Do you have a girlfriend?」

「Nope」

「But do you have someone you like?」

「If it's that, then there's one」

There's a lot. Seria, Lululie, Lilith, Add Matifa and Misha too. As for Cathy?...If anything, it's like an older sister and a partner. I'm really a man without principles.

「Fufu, you didn't hide」

「I'll hide the name」

「Yes, I understand」

*Kusukusu*, I heard Lululie giggling. Now then, should I make fun of her?

「What about Lululie? I don't know the custom of elves, but in the capital you're at marriageable age already」

「Elves marriageable age is a bit higher. It's around 25~100. Though there are those who marries as early as 20, but it seems impossible for me and Lilith for the time being」

I see. In short, Lululie intends to marry if she can.

「But, there're some nice men in the castle right? If you catch won't you live easily?」

「The castle doesn't recognize demi-humans. Since the princess employed me firsthand, The king had recognized it」

「Ahh, this country uses human supremacy principle after all」

Lululie might've been harassed too. There are those who aren't but you can't trust their sympathy.

「But, you don't mind it right?」

「That doesn't matter for me. Even if it's a human, I hate who I hate, then when it comes to demi-human, I like who I like. I look and decide on the other party thoroughly」

What's important is that the other party is a beauty. If it's a beauty, then I will forgive, if not I won't. My criteria is 50% Face, 20% Body, and 30% Character<sup>3</sup>

「We're grateful from just that. Especially since Lilith has that constitution, we're not wanted even on our elf hometown. If the princess didn't pick me up that time, I wonder what would happen...」

Lululie's hand stopped suddenly. When I turned back in worry, Lululie's eyes gone distant. She's probably seeing the time she met Seria.

「Lululie, let's switch. I'll listen to your story this time」

This time, I let Lululie sit down on the sofa and rub her shoulders.

「N, okay then. What do you want to hear?」

「If you don't mind, please continue your story. Why did you get out of the elf village? Furthermore only with your little sister」

「No, we were with our parents first. However, we were attacked by

demons and they died... When I was at loss, that's when I met the princess and I became her maid. That's why I don't raise my head on the princess. I came to the capital for the medicine and money. That's because Lilith's treatment cost a lot of money」

Lululie talks about her harsh past.

Because it's impossible to live in the elf village if you can't use spirit magic, her family had gone to the capital five years ago. But, both her parents are elves and didn't have good work with income, they did dangerous work outside the wall.

The father died first. The father himself is an adventurer that hunted demons with the bow on his arm. But, one day he was the one hunted instead and died. A story commonly heard.

Next was her mother. The mother was helping farming outside the wall, but unfortunately, it seems that the field was attacked by a group of demons of poisonous insect. All the workers were destroyed. Lululie's mother is no exception.

Losing both parents, Lululie and Lilith were taken to the orphanage. But, unable to buy Lilith's medicine, Lilith collapsed in fever. Seria appeared there.

Seria wanted some helper, Lululie wanted to work. Seria consulted the King and Lululie was taken to the castle as Seria's maid. Then, she purchased Lilith's medicine using the advance payment, the two were saved.

「I've been with the princess since then. Princess is really a kind-hearted person」

How Lululie thinks of seria was transmitted from her tone. My heart ached a little.4

「Hey, whay I'm telling such things」

「You must be tired. When you're tired your complains come out. Didn't you want someone to hear it?」

「That might be. Somehow, I feel something similar from you...」

That said, Lululie fell silent. Are Lululie and I alike? Both of us were helped by Seria but what we did after has heaven and earth difference. Lululie supported her, I violated her due to my lust. I can hardly say we're the same. The strange air flows between two people.

Unable to endure the mood, I pushed down Lululie.

「Uhm, what are you」

「Lululie, I'll massage your whole body today」

「Eh?」

「Hey, lie down」

I lied down Lululie on the sofa forcibly, then applied pressure on her back.

「How's it? does it hurt?」

「N...It's okay. I'm sorry, I should be the one doing it」

「Don't mind it. I do it because I want to」

I push her whole back with my palm then firmly massage her waist. When it was done, her neck, shoulder, hand. Lululie relaxes her whole body and accepts it.

「Fuu...It feels good」

「Next would be your lower body. If you don't want it, just say it」

Continuing I did a top down order from her her ass, thighs, calf, to the sole of her foot. If it's the usual, I would mix it with my wicket heart, but today I'm different. Completely innocent, I only thought of earnestly healing Lululie's fatigue. When it ended, Lululie closes her eyes pleasantly.

「Lululie, wake up. If you want to sleep, sleep on your own room」

「N...u...」

I shook her shoulder but there's no sign of her waking up at all. The sister are very much alike in this part. What's up with that?

It's easy to wake up<sup>5</sup>, I felt a bit sorry to see her seemingly happy sleeping face. It can't be helped so I carried her to the bed. I feel sorry for the sleeping Lululie but don't complain.

「Lululie, if you won't wake up, I'll carry you to the bed. You hear?」

「Un...」

As expected, Lululie didn't react.<sup>6</sup>

I held Lululie's thighs and princess carried her. I carried her like this that time. I remembered her small breast that time but my sex drive isn't springing. How did I end up like this.

Then, when I began to walk, Lululie's body suddenly stiffened up.

Shit. She woke up.

「Lululie, you awake? If you want to sleep, then go to your room」

「N...」

When I thought that Lululie opened her eyes, it was closed immediately again. But, it's clear that her body has been strained when she woke up.

Lululie feigned sleep. But, for what purpose?

Isn't that obvious? It's to accept me. She feels that I have affinity with her that she doesn't mind being carried like a princess.

My plan to win over the elf sisters was better than I expected.

「Lululie, I'll carry you to your room. If you're going to sleep, then sleep there」

「N...」

As expected Lululie doesn't get up. No, she's awake but feigning sleep. I carried Lululie's thin body to the bed.

Then, when I entered Lululie's room, I was shocked by the spectacle.

The spirit world was there.

Ivy is crawling on the circumference on the lattice set up on the wall, strange flowers blooming here and there. Disgusting potted plants, indescribable plants were growing, I hesitated to approach.

Did I come to a tropical jungle?

There's a fragrance drifting on the room I can't name. It doesn't stink. It doesn't stink but the fragrance confuses my mind.

Is this possibly Lululie's hobby?



I decided not to mind too much for the time being and lay down Lululie on the bed. I put the blanket on her and escaped the room quickly.

1. Wat da Meow! ↔
2. 鼻歌なのだろうが、とてもそうとは思えない澄んだ音。↔
3. And the winner is miss Colombia! ↔
4. Poor Seria, she was being used by her brother ↔
5. Ren doesn't know the feeling of someone who does his thesis! ↔
5. Please don't go here 'The fine bros', I don't have the money if you sue me ↔

## Chapter 36: Morning Recovery ##

Next morning, Lululie woke up before dawn just like yesterday. You might think that yesterday was repeated but, there's one thing different.

After a full day rest, my son has finally revived.

My son who's rejoicing on the revival stretches a tent. Lululie who just woke up had her line of sight naturally drawn there.

Lululie gulps her saliva. It's a physiological phenomenon, I said it as an excuse, she ran to the kitchen after greeting me. Sad.

When my son calms down, it would be the same as yesterday. The two of us walked to the town in the morning and I saw her off on the castle's front gate.

Then, when I returned to Lululie's house, an incident<sup>1</sup> occurred

「Onii-san, it's terrible, terrible! Mi-chan wet on the bed!」

「Master, I'm sorry」

When I thought the two children were noisy getting up, those were the first words I heard. Misha was unable to separate from Lilith and go to the toilet last night, it seems she had leaked out this morning. Both of them had their pajamas wet

「For now, go to the bathroom. I'll bring you hot water」

「Yees, we'll wash first okay」

「Lilith-chi, I'm sorry」

Misha who had her cat ears and tail down had been taken by Lilith to the bathroom.

I set fire on the kitchen and heated water by putting the pot on the flame. When it got warm enough, I went to the two people waiting.

The door of the bathroom was open. When I peeped secretly, a dreamlike paradise spread from there

The two girls in their birthday suit plays with bubbles. Holding bubbles on both their hands, they spread it on each other's body. The important place is hidden behind the bubbles, but their tender ass is completely exposed.

Especially Lilith. I wasn't interested yesterday but I can easily understand that she's a child birthing type. Loli's pure ass is subarashii2!

It seems the bubble is coming out from the soap stuck on the water tub. Laundry were scattered all over the place.

But are they tired of washing? They seem to be crazy on the bubble play.

Misha who had bubble on the tip of her nose takes a stance by scooping the bubble out of the tub.

「Eii!」

「Kyaa!」

She wave her hand with a shout then bubble flew to Lilith following the inertia. The bubble jumped into Lilith's arm, flat chest and her stomach.

But, Lilith didn't lose.

「Comeback!」

「myaa!」

Lilith threw the bubble this time. Misha hit it with her tail. However, the bubble still hit her, Misha's eyes were hit directly. Unable to endure, Misha turned her head.

「Wawa, Mi-chan, are you okay?」

「...Eiii」

「Wa-Kyaa!」

Lilith was worried so she approached, Misha replied with a bubble. Both hands has bubbles and are forced to Lilith's washboard directly.

「Ahahaha, it tickles!」

Lilith twists her body trying to escape Misha's offense, but Misha moves skillfully so she doesn't miss. The flat chest were rubbed by both hands, her areola is stimulated by the finger drawing a circle.

「ahahahaha! Mi-chan, wait, wait! I said it tickles」

Lilith tries to stop her but Misha doesn't comply. As expected from someone who was educated by Matifa. She doesn't hesitate to do naughty things at all. The way she use her hands gradually gets intense.

However, should I only watch? No, it's not good.

My son finally revived. I'm not a man if I hesitate here.

I took out the item that I got yesterday from my pouch.

It's a long slender cloth with stripe pattern having a pointed shape. That's right, it's a perverted gentleman purveyor item, a necktie.

I manage to persuade Matifa yesterday, it's a secret item that I got in exchange for the information of my invisibility. It's name is transparent necktie. It's loaded with Matifa's original invisibility magic.

However this magic is different from my ability. In other words, this magic overcame my biggest problem in my invisibility which is 『Unable to touch others』

This also has some faults. Neither smell nor sound is hidden, it also don't give effect on the clothes you're wearing. However, Matifa's cursed panties are exception. Therefore, if I want to be an invisible man, I have no choice but to wear a tie.

When I looked at Seria's room, Matifa's clothes disappeared, those had some various hard control, but it was impossible to achieve it by an improvised item.

But, that's fine, rather, that's what I want.

I put on the invisible tie and undressed. The necktie hides my groin and also my whole body. What a reassuring necktie.

The preparations are complete with this. Let's begin the mission immediately.

I invade the bathroom stealthily tiptoeing.

*Piku.* Misha's ears caught me. *Kun Kun*, her nose moved. As expected, even if I'm not seen, it's impossible to deceive the sharp senses of a beast-man.

But I have my own invisibility ability too. If I used that, even Misha won't find me.

I turned on my own ability and sneaked around Misha's back. If I used it for just 10 seconds, the recoil isn't that much, one minute and I would be able to use it again.

Misha still fiddles Lilith's body. She's tickling her sides right now. I reached out to Misha's defenseless breasts.

「Myaa!??」

I checked the *Funi Funi* feeling. Misha is really a child. There's not even a swell, a chipai. Still, it has some soft feeling on it, her future looks promising.

「Mi-chan, what's wrong?」

Seeing Misha raising a sudden voice, Lilith wondered and tilted her head.

「Just now, something touched. It's probably master」

Tsk, this one exposed me quickly. But, Lilith looked around her surroundings and didn't see me anywhere.

「Onii-san? He's not here?」

「Uuun, He's hiding」

「Where?」

「I don't know」

fufufufufu. Isn't that obvious? No one can find me if I hid Seriously. That would be the same even for Misha.

Meanwhile, I sneaked around Lilith's back. The next washboard target is this one. I reached out my hand the same way.

「Hyawa!」

The feeling of her rib is transmitted to my hand. ...Hold out a bit more.

「No, What's this? Scary!」

Lilith holds my hand from above. There's something she can't see. Lilith feels fear.

Misha reached her hand to protect Lilith who's afraid. I withdrawn my hand before that, then I used my invisibility ability again.

「!, He escaped」

Misha looks mortified. Fufufu, You won't catch me.

Now then, my next target is the ass. Lilith's pure ass should be touched by my hand.

On contrary to her chest, her ass is big and plump. Under the constricted part, her wide backbone draws a gentle curve on her welling ass meat, it has a round shape that never drops. It would be very worth seeing her dance in carnival clothes.

I caught her ass without mercy.

「Hyawa! This time it's my bottom!?!」

There's nothing to criticize on the touch feeling. Her supple skin sticks to my hand, the elastic ass meat of hers pushes back the finger by a moderate sexual feeling.

Cathy's ass is the best so far, but this girl has a talent beyond that. Lilith, be relieved. You have a good thing even you have no chest.

「No! Mi-chan, help me!」

「Leave it to me!」

Getting sexually harassed by an invisible man seems scary, Lilith clings to Misha. Misha plunges straight to me. As expected of a remodeled beast man. She seems to be able to grasp my location even she can't see my body.

「Master, captured—Nya!?!」

However, she can't see my movements. The arm that tries to catch me is twisted and I caught her instead. Misha, you were defeated by me due to the same failure.

I must discipline the rebellious Misha. I hold her down on the floor and stroke her ass.

「Muaaaa! Master, you can't! Lilith-chi is here」

「!, Mi-chan, is that really onii-san? It's not a ghost?」



Lilith asks Misha anxiously.

「Un, there's no doubt. This scent is Master. Also, the only one who can do this is Master」

「Somehow, that's an amazing reason. But, I see, It was onii-san」

When Misha asserted, Lilith leaked a sigh of relief. Meanwhile, I keep stroking Misha's ass.

Misha also has a round cute ass like Lilith. This one has a elastic muscle, and erotic flexibility. When I placed my penis, it feels good.

「Mu~ Master is lewd! Hentai! Savage!!」

Misha's booing feels good.

My son gets even more energetic as I rub it, Lilith asked Misha.

「M-Mi-chan? What's going on?」

「In my ass—nya! Myaaaaa」

Since Misha was about to say something unnecessary, I grasped her weak point, the tail to shut her up. Misha. You already lost to me. Give it up.

「U~ Master, that's unfair」

I stroke Misha's tail, she lost strength in a blink of an eye. She can't suppress it any longer.

When I checked her pussy, it was starting to get wet as expected. I poke my finger and and *Jubo Jubo* stir inside her vagina. Since my finger is transparent, her insides are completely exposed. The pink folds of her vagina squirm, I can see the appearance of her love bubbly love nectar well.

When I see it, I felt like I want to put it in. But, Lilith is here. I won't hesitate if I wasn't found out, but Misha exposed me.

Sexual harassment is just as bad as the actual act, but when I looked at Lilith's state, she's looking at Misha anxiously.

「M-Mi-chan? Are you okay?」

「Myaaaa... I'm okay, I feel good...」

「You're not okay at all?」

「Lilith-chi run away. Master is dangerous today」

「I can't possibly run away Mi-chan!」

What a beautiful friendship. Did you become like this just after a few days. That's what I thought but it seems it's not that much.

「Also, if it's onii-san...I don't mind being attacked」

Lilith puts her fingertips together while fidgeting. It's lewd pink as expected. Are you okay with me attacking you?

However, I'm hesitating.

I can attack anytime without reserve, or rather, I already attacked Misha but, handling Lilith is delicate.

The problem would be my promise to Seria and the guard contract with

Lululie. My promise with Seria is to not attack other women including Lululie. Of course, Lilith is included in the subject. But, for Lilith, it can be said as a romantic relationship as she fell in love to the one who saved her in crisis. If she consent, then Seria can't do anything.

My guard contract is to protect Lilith's body. It's absurd for the guard to be the attacker. If there's such a person, he should die right now.<sup>3</sup>

However, the guarded wishes for it. I intend to respect the employer's intention to the maximum.

Therefore, I approved by a unanimous vote. Itadakimasu.

「It's a secret to Lululie」

「Wa, it's really onii-san's voice! Okay, it's a secret to Onee-chan!」

Lilith gladly answered. It can't be helped since she's happy.

「Lilith-chi, sorry. I couldn't protect...」

Misha seems to be dissatisfied. Lilith seems to be much more important than her master. I have to discipline her.

「Lilith, wait for a bit. I'll show Misha as an example」

「Okay, but please don't cover it up if she doesn't like it」

「Don't worry. This one loves naughty things」

「Is that so?」

「Mu, I don't deny it」

「She didn't...」

If that's decided, then let's begin quickly.

I hold up Misha from the back.

「Wa, Mi-chan floated!?!」

「Nyaa, it feels new」

Misha seems happy as she doesn't see the one holding her. I carried Misha on the mirror just like that.

I sit on the chair and adjusted the unseen penis using intuition. Then, without a notice, I dropped Misha.

「Nyaaaaaaa! Suddenly!?!」

Misha is shocked as she didn't see the sudden impact, the hair of her tail stands out and her thin foot extends erectly.

Though it expanded from the last time, Misha's hole is narrow as expected. Still, using Misha's weight, it's forced to enter deeper.

「Wa! No way, Mi-chan's place is spreading!?!」

Lilith was agitated with the sudden event. She should be. Thinking that Misha was suddenly raised from the surface, then something unseen penetrated her pussy. Just what kind of person wouldn't be surprised on it? No, there's something wrong with my head.

I'll think about it later, for now I'll enjoy Misha's hole.

I turn my hand on Misha's knee and shake her up and down. Misha's pussy is excreting love nectar, my penis is wet and the shape surfaced.

Misha reflected on the mirror looks shameful. A long stride opens and discharge love nectar while panting alone in midair. If I adjust the angle a little, the inside is completely exposed.

Her pink vaginal walls shine as it shut and open, that spectacle was absolutely indecent. I was able to confirm the uterus that's resisting inside Misha. It shuts hard as if trying to refuse the invasion of the transparent penis stubbornly. I was abnormally excited that I thought I might throw semen right now.

「Myaaa! Mashter, wait! Misha's inside is seen, myaaa!」

「Yeah, it's a beautiful pussy that's not rough at all. Well done」

「Umyaaaa. Masthter, hentai!」

「That's a compliment」

I hit her insides while Misha exchange some foolish impression with me, Lilith spoke from the back.

「Mi-chan, are you okay?」

「Mya, mya, I-I'm okay. But this is embarrassing. Don't look」

「Waa, Mi-chan is showing a dirty face...」

「Un, my crotch is attack rapidly, it fels good, myaaa...」

Lilith seeing Misha feeling pleasant, she feels relief. She didn't see it stop in particular.

Misha feels good too. She relaxed her body and faced backwards, I made my tongue crawl on her neck. As expected, even if you can't see it, you can approximate.

Seeing that, Lilith extends her hand to me.

「Wawa, there's really something! This is onii-san?」

「Yeah, that's my back」

「Eeh, I can't really see anything. How do you do this?」

「That's a secret」

「Fuun」

Lilith repeatedly pressed and touched my body to ascertain. If seen in the mirror, it's like she's pantomiming, but I'm there. It's a strange scene.

「Misha, how does it feel to have an invisible partner?」

「Myaa! It's a bit scary, but I can smell master so I'm fine」

「It must be nice, Mi-chan. I know how you feel」

Lilith looks at Misha being licked and tells that she's jealous.

Certainly, Misha's adaptability is amazingly good. There should be a considerable amount of courage to believe in an invisible partner. Misha is a cute slave as expected being able to accept it easily.

I can't help but to throw out on that cute pussy.

「Misha, shooting it out. Look firmly」

「Myaaa, okay. Mashter, let it out!」

*Pan Pan*, the sound of two meat banging each other. The breathing of the Misha in midair becomes rougher.

Seeing that, Lilith muttered.

「W-what's happening?」

It seems that the spectacle is too quick for Lilith. Well, if she understood it correctly, she won't be able to calm down.

That's fine as it is, I concentrated to Misha. *Zubo Zubo*, love nectar and white bubble is flowing from her pussy. Seeing the deepest part, it can be seen that her folds are wriggling.

Even if it's not seen, my penis is penetrating Misha and the feeling goes tight.

Her uterus loosen as I thrust persistently. My invisible glans open the hole. That moment, my excitement reached the climax.

「Cumming!!」

「Myaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

*Dopyu! Byururururu!!* Semen is shot inside Misha. The white semen shot out accumulated inside her vagina, it's being poured inside her womb.

Misha's small womb is filled with syrupy semen.

I moved my penis for the last time and applied it on her small vagina.

「Myaa! Mashter's is entering...」

Misha looked at the spectacles with her body twitching as she's exhausted.

1. Who you gonna call? Reimu! ↔
2. Wonderful ↔
3. Kill yourself Ren, Imao ↔

## Chapter 37: Lilith's first time #

When I pulled out my penis, semen that was released inside Misha spilled. Misha scooped it with her finger and put it in her mouth.

Seeing that scene, Lilith's eyes widened.

「Mi-chan, what are you licking!？」

「N, Master's sperm」

「Isn't that dirty?」

「It's delicious. Lilith-chi, want some?」

Of all things, Misha recommended semen to Lilith. This person's brain is really flying. Just what kind of special education Matifa gave her?

「No, after all that's...」

「If you drink this, your breast grows big」

「Is that true!？」

That's definitely a lie. But, Misha calmly lies.

「Really, it's true. With this, Lilith-chi would be bayin bayin, boing boing. It's certain」

「Bayin bayin and boing boing...」

Lilith naturally touched her small breasts. Only the feeling of her ribs and her nipples can be felt there. She originally has no fat.



*Suka Suka*, Lilith grasps empty space.

「Got it! Mi-chan I'll do my best!」

「Un, Lilith-chi, do your best」

The pure Lilith was deceived.

Misha made a V-sign on where Lilith can't see. She's toying with her friend.

「But, I'm a bit afraid to lick it...」

「It's okay. Women have guts」

Misha scooped semen and thrust it at Lilith. Lilith stepped back.

Should I help Lilith soon?

「You guys, don't forget about me」

I removed the necktie and appeared in front of them. The two's glance goes to my crotch.

「O-O-O-Onii-san, that...」

「N, Master's penis」

「Mi-chan, that kind of thing entered you!?!」

「Un, it feels good」

After saying it, Misha cling to my son and sucked it. The semen that

remained in the urethra is sucked up completely.

「M-Mi-chan!？」

「Lilith-chi, want to try?」

「I can't!」

Lilith rejected with teary eyes. It seems that the stimulation was too strong.

Well, it should be as it's her first time. Misha is the strange one.

But, I have to show that she doesn't need to be afraid. I have to show that Lilith should be relieved.

「Misha, I'm fine so make love with Lilith」

「Got it」

After licking most of the semen off, she turned towards Lilith. Then she hugged Lilith from behind while holding her chest. The small hand strokes Lilith's small chest, the small nipple is being flicked.

「Wahya! Mi-chan, what are you doing?」

「I'm making Lilith-chi feel good. Don't worry, leave it to me」

「Wawa! O-Onii-san don't look...」

Lilith feels embarrassed when she sees me. She's resisting desperately by hiding her completely exposed skin up until now.

I can't just leave it all to Misha so I joined in.

「Lilith, close your eyes」

「Eh, Ah...Un」

When I brought my face close, Lilith closed her eyes in embarrassment. A well proportioned face approaches before one's eyes. Lilith lightly pushes out her thing pigmented lips, her body posture waits for a kiss.

I quietly pushed my lip there. A soft kiss without putting my tongue in. But, it was enough for the child Lilith. Her face became bright red then steam rose from her head.

「Is that your first kiss?」

「U, Un. My heart is beating so fast...」

It seems that kiss has a higher rank than naughty things for Lilith.<sup>1</sup>

I kissed her several times just like that.

「Lilith, Do you know what to do? I'm gonna touch you」

「U, Un」

I made my hand crawl on Lilith's skin. It's different from Misha that's completely a child, it's a body of a girl that's in the middle of growing up from a child to an adult. The smooth skin is slippery as it was coated with bubbles. Since this soap is made of magical materials that are gentle with skin, there's no need to worry about rough skin. Stroking the chest from the side of her shoulder.

Lilith's chest is a magnificent no tits. It's to the extent that her stomach can't be identified.

While supporting Lilith from the back, Misha asked on her ear.

「Lilith-chi does it feel good?」

「Un. When Onii-chan touches me it somehow making me shiver」

Lilith looks intoxicated by the feeling of touch.

When I lowered my stroking hand, Lilith opened her mouth.

「Onii-san, I have a request」

「What's wrong?」

「You see, I want you to rub my breast. I heard that it becomes big if it's rubbed by your beloved」

I remembered her quarrel with Lilith the day before yesterday. Surely I had thought that it was just a lie told momentarily, it seems that it's different.

「Wasn't that a lie?」

「Un. It wasn't really from Seria-sama but from the uncle on the pharmacy.<sup>2</sup> Since there's no medicine to make your breast bigger, I had him teach me」

「Okay, next time I see him I'll kick his ass」

Capo's foolish face floats in my mind. He just told a deliberate lie.

But I guess it's not necessary to destroy a child's dream. Maybe it might have a placebo effect and get really big.

Thus, I rub Lilith's chest due to her quest. No, is it better to say pushed? I stimulate her mammary gland that should be there gently with my finger

「N, Fu...it's somewhat ticklish」

Lilith feels ticklish and frowned. It seems necessary to develop it tightly from feeling her chest.

As I gently rub her thin pink areola with my finger, I kissed Lilith once again.

「N...Chu...」

Lilith's body stiffened from tension. But it seems that she's sensitive at the same time, her nipples get stiff little by little. I kissed Lilith again and again, her body was showered with kisses.

「Ahm nuu...」

Lilith's body squirm in pleasure. I kissed her nipple kindly successively. Just with sucking, her nipples are already pointed hard.

It seems Lilith loves kisses. When I sucked her nipples left and right alternately, it became completely erect.

「Misha wants to kiss too」

「N,...Chu...Churu...」

Misha is really merciless. Turning Lilith's face around and forcibly stealing her lips. Lilith seems to receive it pleasantly, but her reaction changed when Misha put her tongue in.

「N—!? N—Nn—!!」

Lilith resisted in surprise, but it's impossible for Lilith to get away from Misha. Us who have no magical power is no match to the Misha whos physical strength received body reinforcement

Misha thoroughly enjoyed Lilith's mouth, the mouth was separated after she was satisfied with the exchange of saliva.

「Puha, Mi-chan, just what was that!？」

「N, an adult kiss」

「Mi-chan is an adult!？」

Reacting on the word Adult, Lilith's glance was sent to me. It seems she wants me to do it.

Just as she demanded, I also kissed Lilith with my tongue penetrating her. I poured saliva and licked the backside of her teeth. Then, when I stick my tongue, Lilith also extends her tongue and entwine it. I receive Lilith's tongue and intersect deeply. Soon enough, her breathing turned rough so we separate our mouths.

Then, Lilith puts her hand on my back and she kissed by herself this time.

「N...Chupa...Churu...Chu...」

Lilith's twines her tongue aggressively with her face enchanted. The sweet saliva is poured and my saliva is being stolen. Until Lilith is satisfied of doing the way she wants it.

「Lilith, how was a kiss of an adult?」

「Un, it felt really good. Am I an adult now with this?」

「You'll be an adult if this place is done」

Saying that, I rubbed Lilith's belly gently. If I opened this up, Lilith will splendidly become an adult.

Then, Lilith looked up asking.

「Onii-san, can you make me an adult?」

A too cunning behavior. Lilith knows the creature called man even though she's just a child.

Surely this person survived just by using this facial expression. Then, she manipulated me too.

「Leave it to me. But, you have to loosen first」

「Un, please」

I spread Lilith's legs and her hidden place is revealed. Her mound of venus has a beautiful vertical line. I made my finger crawl there, then a soft feeling is returned. After gently patting it several times, I opened the crack to check inside.

A beautiful pink labia and a swelling clitoris. In contrast to her chest, this one is very womanly.

「Hawawa, Onii-san is looking」

It seems that she's embarrassed being seen. Lilith tries to close her legs. However, Misha didn't permit

「Lilith-chi, you can't」

「M-Mi-chan!?!」

Misha moves her hand from Lilith's back to her knee, an M posture is made forcibly. Lilith's soft hip joint is opened splendidly.

「Yada~ Wait, Mi-chan. This is embarrassing」

「It's fine. Master is pleased」

When Misha said that, Lilith gently asks my expression. I answered Lilith with a kiss instead of words.

「N...chu...chupa...」

While I kiss Lilith, I caress her genitals. I opened up her flirty meat and rubbed inside the labia carefully. Lilith's pussy is soft. When I rubbed harder, my finger is buried and was sucked in by the entrance.

「N...Nu...Nah!」

Lilith raised her voice as she was unable to bear it. However, her vagina is seeking my finger as it swallows it deeper. Not resisting the movement, it's been taken to the base suddenly.

Lilith's vagina wraps up my finger gently. Despite my finger feeling the



pleasure, I pulled out the finger slowly.

However, Lilith raised a voice in objection.

「W-wait. Don't pull it out」

「What's wrong?」

「I want to feel more of Onii-san's finger. That's why, don't take it out」

Lilith looks uneasy.

「Don't worry. I won't pull it out」

I slip in my finger as Lilith's request. Then I bend my finger inside and gently massage her vaginal wall.

「Wawa, Onii-san's finger, inside me, it's moving」

「Lilith-chi, how does it feel?」

「N, it's rugged, it feels really good. But, I want more...」

「Then, Master」

「Roger」

I added another finger and turn it around inside Lilith's vagina. There's still a room to spare inside Lilith even with two. The flexible folds and the vaginal wall tightens well as it changes form to the finger's shape and doesn't take it away. It's even swallowed further inside.

The vagina wishing it greedily, surely she feels good from the insertion. But, one doesn't satisfy her, Lilith doesn't want the finger to be pulled out.

But, in the end I began the finishing touch.

「Onii-san, what are you doing?」

「I'm going to do what Lilith likes」

I brought my face close to Lilith's open pussy.

「Y-You can't do that place! Onii-san, wait!」

「I won't wait」

*Pukkuri*, I tasted her swelling clitoris. *Bikun*, Lilith's body jumped.

「Hyawa, Onii-san, that's like an electric shock!」

Kissing it kindly several times, hanging saliva and kissing it, then tasting it from the skin on the top.

The love nectar gradually overflows from the inside. I licked it, it had a faint sweet taste.

Her vagina shrinks and my finger is tightened up gently.

「Awawa, what's this! Onii-san is sucking my pussy!」

「Lilith-chi, you're suspending your waist. Does Master's mouth feel good?」

「Unn! When he sucks it, when he licks it, it feels really good! Hyawa! something amazing is!」

「Lilith-chi is cumming?」

「Unn, Cumming. I'm about to cum!」

Misha hugs Lilith's back as her waist trembles. Then, both of her nipples were pulled mercilessly.

「Hyawaaa! Mi-chan, you can't! Noooooooooo!」

「It's to make Lilith-chi's breast big」

Lilith's body is making big convulsions. I also sucked her clitoris at the same time.

「Hawaaaaaaaaaaa!」

Lilith raised her waist violently and reached climax. My finger is swallowed up further and her vagina wind violently.

I pulled out my finger and lips from it then I kissed Lilith once again.

「N...Chupa...Juru...Rero...Churu...」

The vacant eyed Lilith extends her tongue as if seeking me. *Powa powa*<sup>3</sup>, her consciousness seems to be blown away.

When I looked at her, Misha seems to be interested with Lilith and began to touch her own pussy. In the end I don't know what she retaliated but Lilith's genitals were pinched.

「Hyowaaaaaaaaaaa!」

Lilith wakes in an instant, Misha pretends ignorance while not removing

her hand. This girl is burning in jealousy.

1. Holding hands is definitely the lewdest ↩
2. Damn you oji-san! Don't defile our Lilith-chi! ↩
3. GET THE POWER ↩

## Chapter 38: Lilith and Misha 3P ##

Coming to her senses, Lilith shook her head. Then, she met my eyes.

「How was your first cum?」

「Ah, err, it's somehow fluffy, it felt really good」

It seems that Lilith remembers the feeling well. Then, her eyes looks like she wants more.

「Master, hurry up and make Lilith-chi an adult. Then Misha's next」

Misha raised her impatient voice. I seem to have made her wait when I played with Lilith. This person is just horny.

「I know. Lilith, are you okay?」

「Un, Please, Onii-san. Please make me an adult」

「Leave it to me」

Lilith opened her own pussy with her fingers and begged., Pink folds on the side, the nectar pot is dripping saliva from it's open mouth.

I quietly held my penis there.

「Hauu! Wawa, Onii-san's, entering!」

My penis is pushing through the soft meat, it's pushing in deeper. When

I broke the small resistance of her hymen, it was naturally buried.

Lilith's vagina gently wrap up the penis, it's being sucked deeper inside.

It was swallowed up to the base just like that, the point bumped against the mouth of her womb. Her vagina shuts hard and tightens the whole penis.

Lilith's pussy is a deep gentle pussy. My thing is wrapped in a pleasant sensation.

「Lilith, did it hurt?」

「Eh, Un, it doesn't hurt that much, I guess ...Hey, Onii-san, did I become an adult?」

Lilith asked anxiously. Don't worry Lilith, you became an adult. The evidence is the small amount of blood flowing out from the part where we're connected. That's why, I answered to reassure her.

「Yeah, you're already a splendid lady」

「I see, I became an adult... Hiku」

Then, Lilith starts to shed tears as she was overcome with emotion.

「Lilith, what's wrong?」

「You see, I was anxious that I won't be an adult before I died because of my constitution. That's why I'm glad that I became an adult」

Her constitution? It's probably her magic deficiency disease. Children without any magical power die early with just a slight sickness. That's why existence such as me and Lilith are always having fear of death.

Then, Lilith began to tell me her feelings. Misha and I silently listened to her story.

「Everyone things of me as pitiful. Especially onee-chan. I hold everything by myself, I don't take anything. I'm not good at anything, I'm always ill, I thought that I would just die as I'm a nuisance to everyone」

Lilith felt helpless from her powerlessness.

That's true. Lilith right now is similar to me when I just came to this world.

I have no power, the weakest existence that can't do anything but to depend on other person for living. I have my superabilities, but Lilith doesn't. That's why she's weak even now, if not for Lululie and Capo and for the granny director on the orphanage, she might be unable to live.

「But you see, when I met Onii-san, I thought that I could do something too. Onii-san is the same as me and beaten those bad people and is now protecting me. I don't want to separate with someone like Onii-san, I thought of how can I be useful to Onii-san with all my might」

Lilith seems to like me seriously. I induced her to be like that but, it seems that Lilith thinks of me as a wonderful person more than I thought.

There's no such thing but, if Lilith is glad with that, then shouldn't continue lying altogether at her.

「And you see, Mi-chan and onii-san decided to take care of me. And because I heard that the man loves naughty things, I have to do my best. But, my breast isn't big, so I thought that I may be useless but, I want to give it to Onii-san. We kissed, then I became an adult. ...Onii-san, thank you. I love you!」

Lilith confesses with a smile on her face, she clings to me demanding a kiss. Of course, I accepted it.

I hold Lilith's knee while kissing. With our skin touching, Lllith's temperature is transmitted. I slowly shake the body while feeling the pleasurable warmth.

Though her body writhes in agony at first, she never tries to separate her mouth. We separate to breath occasionally, but we stick back immediately.

Then, her lower mouth was the same too. Lilith's honey pot sticks to my penis and never tries to separate. It's wrapping up warmly to the base and the whole vagina strokes it gently.

The positive girl heals me warmly, that is Lllith.

「N...puha, Onii-san, it feels good?」

「Yeah, it feels good. How about Lilith? It doesn't hurt anymore?」

「Un, I'm okay. The connecting part with Onii-san feels so good I'm about to fly」

「I see, then I'll make you feel even better」

「Un, I'll do my best too. Nn」

While being slowly shook as it is, Lilith's voice begin to be colored sweet. I never attacked her intensely, we took time to raise our feeling to each other.

「N, Master, Misha too」

Lilith stealing me, had Misha raise her dissatisfied bored voice. I



beckoned Misha and gripped her tail which is her weak point.

「Nya! Master! That's no good, myaaaaa...」

Misha lost all of her strength. She fell and rested her back on Lilith. Catching that, I made love with the two.

I hold Lilith with my right hand, and massages Misha's ass with my left hand.

「Myaaa... Master is unfair」

「Sorry Misha. But Lilith is my priority right now」

「Mu, it can't be helped」

Misha gave up and started to grope Lilith's small chest. Then, staring at Lilith's elf ears shaking, Misha bit it. Biting sweetly, she made her tongue crawl inside the ear.

「Hyowa! Mi-chan, thatsh!」

「Kapu...Rerorero...chu」

Lilith's body lose it's strength. Placed in between of me and Misha, unable to do anything but receive pleasure with her body.

「Ah, ah, ah, ah! You can't, Onii-san, Mi-chan, I'm flying! My head's going blank! Ah, Ah, Aaaaah!」

Lilith is approaching her limit, her vagina is winding up as if squeezing

semen out. The stimulation is too vigorous like masturbating, her waist began to move selfishly.

「ooooooo! Amazing! Lilith, it feels really good!」

「Un! Onii-san, I'll make you feel better!」

「Sorry but i can't stop my waist. isn't it hard?」

「Uun1, It feels really good! Onii-san, move as you like! Aah!」

Lilith gives my pleasure a priority. I thrust even deeper inside Lilith's vagina and began the last spurt.

「Ah, I'm about to cum! Misha, support Lilith!」

「Got it!」

「Hyowa! Hawaaaaa! Aaaaaa! Aaa! Aaaaa!」

Lilith can no longer utter a word entrusted herself to Misha. Then, slipping under Lilith, I pointed my penis to Lilith's mouth before I ejaculate.

「Lilith, it's the end. Kiss my penis!」

「N, Un! Chu...Churururu...」

Though Lilith was afraid earlier, she didn't resist this time. My intention was understood immediately, the grotesque penis smeared with blood and sexual fluids is tasted. Then, after learning the adult kiss, she licked the glans clean.

「Gu, Coming!」

「Nnn~~~~!!!!!!」

I ejaculated inside Lilith's mouth.

Lilith doesn't separate her mouth and her cheeks puffed with semen. She believes Misha's lie that if she drinks semen her breast will grow.

I pulled out my penis when I finished ejaculating.

「Lilith-chi, don't worry」

Misha's guidance entered immediately. Lilith opened her mouth just as she was told and showed the semen inside. In spite that this was the second time this day, the sticky and syrupy semen forcibly dirtied the mouth of the loli elf.

When I told her that it's good, Lilith tries to swallow it but she couldn't swallow it well. Then, she was choked. The semen she wasn't able to swallow drips out of her mouth and falls to her thigh.

「Lilith are you okay?」

「I'm, okay. *Cough*... But, I spilled it」

Lilith looked at the semen she wasted, Misha licked it.

「Hyawa! Mi-chan, that tickles!」

「Picha...it's not wasteful」

The semen is licked by the two nude women. The scene was too lewd

that it stirs up my excitement.

「The two of you, stand up. Thrust your hand on the bathtub and put face your ass here」

The two stick out their asses just like I said. Lilith's soft pure ass and Misha's tailed loli ass is lined up. Lilith spills blood from the deflowering, Misha's used pussy spills semen. Thinking that both of these asses are mine, I'm unable to endure it. I inserted the penis that just came inside Lilith's pussy.

「Hyawaaaa! Onii-san's thing entered again!」

「Lilith didn't came earlier right? I'll make you cum this time」

「Un, Onii-san, do as you like!」

I stood and penetrate Lilith's ass with a big stroke. The deep soft vagina hole won't be expected as a loli virgin just a while ago, the adult penis was gently accepted. A sense of security is felt when the penis is wrapped pleasantly.

Lilith's back bend as she's enduring the pleasure given. I had endured it to the limit earlier. It's not strange anymore if it ended.

「Ah! ah! Ah! Aaa! Onii-san, you're gentler than earlier」

「Isn't it hard?」

「Naa! I'm okay. it feels really good!」

Lilith saying that it's okay, pushes out her pure ass while tiptoeing.

While nailing my waist there, I play with Misha's ass at the same time.

Rubbing the perfectly round ass, I stimulate her fully exposed anus with my finger.

「Myoooo! Master, that place!!」

*Piin*, Misha's tail extends. Misha seems to be sensitive in anal. Though she doesn't like it, I continued to do the surrounding of the entrance.

「Myo! Myowa! Nyowaaaaa!!」

Misha's body writhed intensely. It seems she feels quite comfortable.

The two's voice echoes in the bathroom is a delight on my ears.

As expected, loli is obedient and pretty. My scar from the fake Loli Misha is healed. My lost confidence is regained.

Showing my gratitude, I instill pleasure to the two of them.

「Hyawa! Ah! Aaah! Onii-san, I'm, Uu!! Hyowaaa!! Don't! Cumming!!」

Lilith seems to be reaching the limit. Clinging to the bathtub, her body is twitching.

「Very well, Lilith. Cum just like that」

The walls of her vagina is rubbed by my glans, Lilith is about to climax. Then, Lilith reached her limit immediately.

「Unnn~! I'm cumming! Cumming! Nnnnn~::~!!!!」

Lilith's body jumped greatly. My violent penis enjoys the pleasure of her vagina, I stopped moving my waist and patted her head gently.

Lilith's expression looks enchanted and seeks a kiss. I answered it in the end and pulled out my penis.

Lilith falls to her knees. It seems that her waist lost power.

She sat on the floor and 'Hawa~', she's befuddled. It seems that she's satisfied.

Satisfying one pussy, I thrust in to the other.

「Nyaaaaaa ! Master, violent!」

「Isn't it the usual? Also, you're about to cum. Endure it」

「Mu~」

Misha's pussy is tight as always.

*Pan Pan Pan Pan*, the piston repeats. Misha was somehow or another spoke, she's pleased that I'm thrusting as she sticks out her ass.

Though slow sex with Lilith is nice but, this violent one is good as expected.

Seeing that intense sex, Lilith asked Misha.

「Mi-chan, does it feel good?」

「Nya, Un, Master's thrust feels good. What about Lilith-chi?」

「Un, I love it. It felt really good」

Lilith's ecstatic expression floats. It seems she likes sex.

I also like Lilith's pussy. It's deep and soft and very comfortable. When I got bullied by Matifa again, I'll have Lilith heal me again.

But before that, I have to say it properly to Lilith first.

「Lilith, just like this, don't reach your hand on anyone. Don't regret this now」

Lilith said that she likes me. But I don't intend to focus down on one person. It's already entered a so-called harem state, and I intend to increase it in the future. Normally, one wouldn't permit.

But, Lilith accepted it and removed my worry.

「It's fine. Onii-san is cool so everyone will come for you. Also, I'll definitely die early so Onii-san should take a lot of women so you won't be lonely」

For Lilith, it's a natural thing. She's not useful to anyone so far, so she wants to be useful for me. Lilith is really a cute and convenient girl for me.

「I see, then, best regards Lilith」

「Un!」

I draw Lilith's mouth and kissed her again. With this, Lilith is mine. She'll never part with me.

「Nya! Master got bigger again! It hurts a bit, Nya, nyaa!」

「I'm about to cum so endure it」

「Myaaaa! Mashter, cumming?」

「Look, it's the finish. Cum too!」

「Myaaaaaaaa! Master! Intense!!」

I put my hands on Misha's waist and did a high speed piston. A solid object shaves Misha's vaginal wall, love nectar is scraped out from the inside. Misha secretes love nectar to defend herself, the sliding improves steadily. And, I increased the speed even further2

「Myaaaaa! Mashter, wait! thish ish amazhing! Cuming, cumming, cumiiiiing! Nyaaaaaaaaa!」

「Ooo, Misha, I'm cumming!!」

*Dopyu! Byururu!* I threw my semen inside Misha again. At the same time, Misha bend her back and reached climax.

When I pulled out my penis, semen from the two shots come out from her small ass.

Lilith watches is shyly.

「Waa, Mi-chan is too naughty. Are you okay being released inside?」

「Well, since I don't menstruate yet it's fine I guess」

Misha's not on the age where she can get pregnant so it's okay. I'm free to creampie her.

「Onii-san, what about me?」



「It's dangerous for you as your body is growing」

Lilith already had menstruated. If she gets pregnant while she's normally weak, I don't know what will happen. Since I don't want her to die, unfortunately but I strictly prohibit creampie. Elves has long safe day so I won't hold back at that time.

However, Lilith seems dissatisfied with the answer.

「Eh? I'm already an adult aren't I? Also, I want Onii-san's child!」

「Breast becomes big if you get pregnant. If you do, you'll win against Lululie?」

「Au, that's no good. Definitely no. ...Got it. My breast will be bigger than Onee-chan!」

「That's the spirit. Hey, lick this」

「Ah, Un. 」

When I showed Misha's ass, Lilith showed hesitation. However, she made up her mind and licked it, *Perori*, she licked the semen.

「Nyaaa! Lilith-chi?」

「Picha... It tastes Mi-chan and Onii-san」

*Picha Picha*, Lilith licks Misha's crotch. Because she licked me and swallowed up my semen, her resistance disappeared.

Then *Kushun*! A sneeze echoed.

The source of the sound is Lilith. It seems that her body had gone cold as she was naked the whole time.

This is bad, we ended our naughty time and washed off our body in a hurry.

I and Misha hurriedly wiped Lilith's body, when she put a change of clothes, Lilith became hot.

Since Lilith's futon can't be used, I laid her down on Lululie's futon. Though I'm worried if she could sleep well on that demonic field, it seems that Lilith is accustomed to it.

The doctor came immediately after I called him, it was diagnosed as cold.

I and Misha reflects on our lack of consideration and swore to ourselves not to do naughty stuff in the bath.

1. No ←

2. It's at 3000RPM! ←

## Chapter 39: Matifa's betrayal

I left Lilith who caught a cold to Misha and I walked around the outer wall alone. Felix should be arriving soon.

When I finished my deliberate preparations and stand watch the west of the town, a horse rider appeared raising a cloud of dust. It's a big black horse instead of the usual horse, aa middle aged man is straddling over it. It's the head of the Will Gantt marquis family, Felix. It's just a single horseman as the other can't follow him.

It's appearance has an air of a dignified character. He's the manly commander who repeatedly tries to aggress the Misumunto Kingdom army on the frontlines His ability is assumed to be just lower than A-class, he's the strongest knight before Lion appeared.

The sword is as manly as the user, it was said that when he swung the sword against the troll it was smashed to pieces.

At the entrance of the town, several horse carriages had been prepared, waiting for the aristocrats. Felix transferred to the carriage as soon as he arrived and he went straight to the castle. A confidential talk will be carried out.

The carriage arrived at the castle before long, Felix went to the throne immediately.

The conference room isn't used as it shows importance of the king. Felix giving in to the pressure for a bit has some ulterior motive I guess.

I became invisible and sneaked in with Felix.

The throne, in a nutshell is luxurious and gorgeous. There are some

glittering decorations and flags lined up on the wall. A huge chandelier dangles overhead, on my feet is a red carpet spread over the marble pavement.

The leaders of the country are gathered in here.

King Ortiz sits down on the throne magnificently. From the back, the seats lined up against the wall have the royal family, Queen Angela, first prince Radom, second prince Desire sitting on it. The vacant seat on the edge seems to be Seria's/

Getting down, standing on the track of the carpet is the prime minister Pienta and several cabinet members.

Among the cabinet, there is the head of the Mark Newt marquis house, Trovas. Though he has a figure of a pig, but if you turn your head around, he's a man with a first class magic skill. Despite that, his appearance is sore to the eye. If you removed the magic skill of Matifa, who's holding both a cabinet position and the imperial court mage, it is said that the imperial court mag would be a bright person. 1

In addition, there are several knights not less than Lion as guards. The beautiful grey haired woman wearing a black mantle and a three-cornered hat is standing still. Her appearance is different the magical power is without a doubt, Matifa. Why having an adult appearance?

I moved to a blind-spot and removed my invisibility, Matifa sent her eyes over here for an instant. As expected, she noticed me.2

Then, the meeting started immediately. The communication sticks with the formalities to moderation, then, it was Felix's turn to report. A considerable lie should be mixed by my expectations.

「I will begin to report the investigation about the attack, when the first

princess Seria went to the the neighboring country, Misumunto Kingdom the other day. The time of attack was estimated to be the afternoon of the fourth day, All of the 20 assailants were dead. The situation of the attack—」

Felix indifferently briefed. The assailant's figure is uncertain but they speculated that it's a bandit based from the equipment. There were traces of fights with the knights, the corpse were scattered on the road. They seemed to have tried to escape to the fort but the road was blocked by the landslide. All of the remainder corpse was confirmed at that place.

「Though it's thought that the corpse died in the fight along the way, it seems that on the landslide site, the death of the 5 knights and 16 bandits were done by a different person」

「Then, who is that person?」

Felix's way of speaking is assuming importance, Ortiz urged him as he's unable to wait.

「Assassin 『Beheader』」

「Wha! Beheader!?!」

The audience in the throne room became noisy. Apparently, the first report was received by Will Gantt house earlier in secret. I heard some disturbed voice here and there.

「Did he kill 21 people alone?」

「No, it should be impossible as expected. Assuming that Beheader is a B-class, but his battle power is C-class right?」

「That's right. There's no way to win against 5 imperial guard knights」

「Then, Seria-sama's scream is...」

「It's probably that. Pitiful child」

The cabinet had their own selfish expectations and delusions inflating.

Only Radom fell silent calmly. But, his eyes is burning with anger, it's as if he's cursing someone that's not here to death. Surely, he's angry at me who disrupted his plan. The offender being angry at the victim.

Only Matifa is the one laughing happily. She seems to be scheming something not good and it makes me uneasy.

But, the participation of the Beheader was recognized by the superior of this country.

In truth, it's supposed to not be known by anyone, but it can't be helped if it turned out this way. They don't know that I'm related to the beaheader, Master won't say anything so I'm okay.

「Silence!」

Silence returned in an instant when Ortiz scold the noisy leaders. It seems that it's the first time they saw Ortiz like that.

「Felix, Continue」

「Yes. The wagon Seria-sama used was burned on the site. Seria-sama's steps after that were unclear. We had investigated the it even before leaving the territory, we still don't know how she came back to the castle」

After Felix's report ends, Ortiz asked to confirm.

「Then, the Beheader broke in during the fight of the bandits and knights and killed all of them? Then, you say that he sent Seria back the capital afterwards」

「Or perhaps, the Beheader captured Seria-sama and brought her to the capital, then she escaped by herself?」

Ortiz closed his eyes and pondered.

Felix's report makes no sense at all, it's impossible to be satisfied with just this. But, I guess that's the difference in authority as he doesn't blame him on public.

Trovas broke into silence. A noisy voice was raised from the bottom of the huge belly.

「Felix-dono. Isn't your attitude to his Majesty impolite? What is that report? Though Seria-sama was attacked in your territory, you don't understand anything? In the first place, bandits can't attack a carriage guarded with knights. There's a rumor that the assailants were your own troops. Someone rescued Seria-sama? Aren't you just putting the blame on some invisible assassin? Your Majesty, Leaving this matter to marquis Will Gantt and his knight troop is dangerous. Us, Mark Newt House will investigate it!」

One sided denunciation and claiming of non-existent right. But, only Mark Newt house is the only one who can oppose Will Gantt, It's a natural flow that they will join the investigation. Afterwards, the fabricated evidence of Will Gantt house was diminished, Will Gantt house screamed to hinder the investigation. If things go well, no one will be able to steal the credit for my plan for performing meritorious deeds by saving Seria

Also, it would be implied that they are more dominant in performance than the Will Gantt house.

They really are in bad terms.

Felix completely disregarded Trovas' provocation. He just waited for Ortiz's word silently. The surrounding noble were a bit noisy, but they fell silent immediately and watched Ortiz.

Ortiz wrinkle up his forehead, he's thinking about something patiently. At a glance, it looks like they surround and overpower the from the throne, but I can only think of it as the defendant's seat. Because the pressure given off by the two noble is quite strong. It's like a subordinate being blamed by the boss, I sympathize a bit. \

Before long, Ortiz opened his mouth.

「I want to ask Matifa-dono. Is it possible to transport Seria from the border to here in half a day?」

Matifa who was called stepped forward and expressed her opinion aimlessly.

「You asked the same thing the other day. My answer won't change. It's possible for me. Also, the flying dragon party of Misumunto and the fast footed tamed monster would be able to. However, it's difficult to do it without anyone finding out. Even if I use magic seriously, the person near me would notice immediately, you would also be alarmed immediately if it's a flying dragon. It will be witnessed in the highway if it's a beast. If Felix investigated, the possibility would be low. That Beheader surely has an amazing secret transportation skill. —Perhaps, he might even be here?」



Matifa ended her talk happily. She's definitely thinking of something no good. Does she intend to sell me out!?

「!! Matifa-dono, do you have a basis for that?」

Felix reacted to Matifa's words immediately. Only this fellow knows the truth. Namely, the beheader that slaughtered the 21 people to hinder kidnapping, bringing Seria for half a day. That's why, he can't ignore Matifa's words.

Matifa answered proudly.

「Of course. Actually, there's an intruder in the castle for these past several days, he easily escaped the barrier that I have put. I throw in a familiar but the tables were turned on her too. Even I don't understand what his ability is. He's really amazing. It's a first time for me too. If it's him, he can surely bring back Seria」

Matifa told it like it's nothing.

Oi, don't joke with me!

What an ill-natured woman!

I feel really irritated on her grinning face!

She knows that I can't meddle in so she's doing it on purpose!

This what Master probably told about!!

It won't change no matter how much I curse her. It keeps turning worse instead.

Next, It was Lion who reacted. The moment that she said 'intruder', his hand was already on the holy sword on his waist.

「Matifa-dono, can you see where he is!?!」

「Of course. It's that shadow of that pillar」

Matifa didn't hesitate and spoke my location. Lion began to run the next moment.

Teleport—Too late!

I used the boost of flight and jumped out of the shade with all my power.

「Haa!!」

After a moment, the sword cuts the space where I was into two. Does this fellow intend to kill me!?

「!! You avoided it? Then!」

Lion continued to pursue. His speed is a bit faster or equal than Misha.

If it comes to this, I can't make a grudge on the ability. I concentrated on evasion with all my might.

Lion calmly jumped horizontally, rising up almost touching my feet. A slash was fired from that shining blade and the thick pillar was cut into two.

I push out a dagger to Lion while sweating cold, he bent his face and avoided skillfully. But, that's within my calculations. I controlled my

altitude with flight ability, I let out a back kick from an impossible posture. The blade sticking out from the heel approaches the back of the head of Lion.

「!!」

Lion who caught the attack from the blind spot didn't even flinch. The damage hadn't reached his skin but it's only to a degree where it cut his beautiful long blonde hair. His defensive power isn't normal.

I fell as my flight ability is cancelled because I touched Lion's back.

Lion turned back and mowed his sword. I stuck to Lion's back to evade the blade part, but his arm hit and blew me off. The arm I used to guard hurts terribly.

「Majesty, permission to use magic!」

「Permitted. Catch him alive!」

Ortiz surrendered his life to Trovas' shout. Meanwhile, I become desperate and continue dodging Lion's pursuit.

When I was hit, I wrapped around a wire in Lion's arm and I throw the other out the chandelier. Lion regains his balance after cutting the wire.

I want to use teleportation but there's no chance to concentrate. I can run away with invisibility, but I was damaged with a even if I'm not seen, furthermore, it's no good if my judgement becomes dull.

A small injury is all right, but it's fatal in this situation to become stale even for a moment.

Lion switched tactics from big swings to fast movement. A two-consecutive attack was lunch instantly, I wasn't able to dodge it so my

right arm and left thigh were significantly cut.

Blood spouts out vigorously from the cut the arteries. I'm already helpless when I lose mobility. I was unable to endure and ran away in the air.

「Flame Arrow」

Magic rushes on me who flew up. Trovas fired out 48 flaming arrows A magic that will become a fatal injury if you got hit with one. I fly around at full speed on the pillars lined up as shield. The pursuing arrow hit the pillar and ceiling and were scattered in pieces. The speed is equal. Just a small mistake in the course and it would catch up.

Sometimes, the fire arrows have Lion's slash mixed with it. I dodged everything with a paper-thin difference while going to the escape hatch. But, when I approached my path of retreat, Matifa summoned many low-class demons.

「Matifa you Traitor!」3

「That's upsetting. This much is nothing for you right? Please show me more of your power」

Matifa twist her mouth happily.

It's difficult to convince Matifa in this situation. I gave up escaping on the window and turned around.

From the back, Lion chases after using the wall and stone pillar as foothold. Just letting off guard for a bit, his slash flies immediately. Furthermore, Trova's fire arrows and Matifa's summoned demons hinder me. I can't lose my spirit for a moment. My field of vision grows hazy because I loose too much blood, my concentration has declined too. There's no more room for tricks anymore.

Furthermore, more enemy joined.

The moment I avoided Lion's slash, Radom appeared in front of me. He raised his fist and strike at me.

「Diee! Beheader!!!」

「Ga!!」

I made the dagger intersect, it wasn't enough to receive it and was broken. Though I was able to evade a direct hit in the body, Radom's fist crushed my right arm bone. I fall to the hard floor while spinning.

「This is the end!」

Radom raised his fist with the look of anger. In addition, the fire arrow floats surrounding me, and Lion is waiting with his sword on the outside. I can no longer escape. It was the moment I thought I died.

「Waiiiit!!!」

Ortiz's roar rang between the throne.

Radom, Lion, and Trovas stopped moving. I quickly throw a smoke ball and used teleportation.

- 
- Ⅰ. 現在は大臣職と宮廷魔導士を兼任しており、Matifaを除けば魔法の腕は宮廷魔導士で一番だと言われている秀才でもある。

- 2. Matifa isn't qualified to be a Senpai
- 3. Traitor!

## Chapter 40: New Commission

I teleport to my room and that's where I lost consciousness.

Next thing I know is I woke up on the bed. Cathy was next to me.

It seems that my life has been saved.

「Sorry, I was beaten badly」

「No, don't mind it. It's good that you lived, let's think of that for now」

Today's Cathy is unusually gentle. When I looked at my own body, my wounds were treated and had bandaged applied.

「My wounds...」

「Master came and cured it. However, please take a rest tonight」

「Master... What did he say?」

「He said that you lost just according to the schedule」

「...Dammit, everyone is just toying with me!」

I swung my fist down to the bed.

Even Matifa, Even master, just what do they think of me?

Matifa absolutely enjoyed that situation. Though I don't know what she's thinking nor her plans, there's no doubt that she exposed me for her own entertainment.

Master is being Master. Knowing that this will happen, he sent me to

guard Seria. Nevertheless, he drove his disciple to death without any warning. I wonder if he thinks I'm better off dead.

「You seem to be quite angry. Could you tell me what happened?」

Cathy only asked me calmly. Thanks to that, my brain cooled off a little.

「——Got it」

Then, I told Cathy the daytime events. What Felix reported in the capital. The leaders of the country and strong men gathered together in a place, then Matifa's betrayal. Then, taking an all-out attack, and having barely run away.

「If Master didn't go all out at you from the beginning, you might've died. It seems that it's not Lion's full power, as expected it's useless to fight someone with that class」

「Well, that's true. If you can do that, you'll be a Hero」

Hero——A person who can get over any hardships and rescue many people. If someone can force to hold down that situation, it's not impossible for him to destroy or rescue a country.

「You must be joking. I'm not a hero but the one being beaten by the hero. Rather than that, what's the current situation?」

Just how long was it after I fainted? What happened after the meeting? What's the state of the castle? Is Seria safe? What about Lululie? Did



Misha betray me too? Various question runs through my head.

「It's been half a day since you passed out. The date is about to change soon. I took over the guard duty you received from Lululie. She was surprised when I went to the castle gate to meet her, but that's probably okay. Elves hate and are wary of dark elves, but she was convinced when I said I'm an acquaintance of Ren. I told her that you're injured and is taking care of something」

「I see, sorry about that」

「No, I'm your assistant after all」

It seems Cathy had dealt with Lululie. She may be useless in some places but she's much more experienced than me. There's no need to worry.

She's really a reliable elder sister.

「You know Misha's state?」

「It's that cat girl beast right? She seem to have noticed me but she didn't take any strange behavior. But, we must be cautious」

「You're right. Should I check on that?」

If it was decided, she can't enter. The wound still hurts but I didn't mind it. I can't say so sure that Seria, Lululie, and Lilith are safe. I must move.

However, Cathy holds me down.

「Please take some rest」

「Like hell I can. After seeing Misha's state, I will check Seria's safety. Then, I'll interrogate Matifa. I'll leave you to guard Lululie. Please keep

watch whether Misha is doing bad」

Matifa is already an enemy. I don't think I will win but it's clear that she had betrayed me. I could destroy the research building at minimum. If it comes to this, then it's do or die resistance.

Cathy looked at me angrily and sighed. It seems that persuasion is impossible already.

「Even if I told you you won't listen. Then, Ren, there's an additional commission from Master」

Then, Cathy took out the parchment and parcel which is rolled on the nearby stand.

「Additional commission is the assassination of Matifa Lau Ell Pito. Master gave this as this is necessary」

A pair of dagger was taken out from the package. It's a cursed black sword with ancient characters carved into it.

It's different from the fake the three idiots<sup>1</sup> have. The magical power dwelling on it is the real thing.

「This is...」

「It's a cursed sword that absorbs magic. Though it's a top class cursed sword that sucks up the magical power of the owner, it doesn't matter to you. It's an order that you will use that and kill the witch of supreme time」

Cathy described it cool-headedly.

Basically, master's orders are absolute. If you declined, you'll go through a fearful experience. Still, it's better than dying.

This has an entirely different reason from guarding Seria. The reason why I risk my life is because I want to protect Seria.

But, what's the meaning of this commission.

No, is it possible in the first place?

「...Do you seriously think I can?」

「At least Master thinks you will」

Cathy answered my question in an instant. I think it's not just master but Cathy as well think it's possible.

Can I kill Matifa? That's difficult in two meaning.

First, the difference in overwhelming power. She has a vast amount of magical power and bottomless magic. It's impossible to break up in front.

She probably has some measures against surprise attack kills. I can't go in using teleportation. And, I have no chance of winning in direct combat.

Next would be my feelings. The woman who slept with me betrayed me. I became attached to her. Can I possibly kill her?

Thinking what to do, Cathy talked to me, pressing for answers.

「It seems you're worried. However, your body is in danger if you don't do it. I honestly don't know what the witch called Matifa can do. If this escalates just like that, you'll die the following day. Isn't it wise to kill her as master said before it's too late?」

「...That's true」

The talk ended with that. Though I didn't make a clear answer, I received the cursed sword.

I felt the cursed sword handed to me awfully heavy.



After talking to Cathy, I turned up to Lululie's house to see how Misha is before going to the castle.

I entered quietly to not wake someone but Lululie is already awake in the middle of the night.

Lululie noticed me and called out to me with a surprised voice.

「Ah, Ren-san, you were safe!!」

「Were you up and waiting for me?」

「Yes, I feel uneasy. Lilith and Misha-chan were awake until now, as one would expect, they're put to sleep」

Lululie stares at my body intently. Then, she noticed the bandage wound on my arm and she touched it gently.

「You really are hurt. Are you all right?」

「I'll get better as soon as the treatment ends. Sorry I wasn't able to pick you up today」

7「No, please don't mind it. I'm relieved that you're safe more than anything else」

Lululie felt relieved. Though she heard from Cathy that I can't come, she waited for me specially.

「Sorry to worry you. But, are you fine without sleep?」

「I'm so uneasy that I can't sleep. As I mentioned yesterday, my father died when he was attacked by a demon...」

「You did say that. But, be relieved as I'm alive」

It seems that Cathy pretended that I was attacked by a demon. If that's the case, Lululie's worry is understandable.

That time, my stomach grumbled. Come to think of it, I hadn't eaten anything after breakfast.

Lululie giggled silly.

「Ren-san, have you eaten dinner yet? Should I make a light midnight snack?」

「No, you should sleep already. You have work tomorrow right?」

「It's fine. The injured person should take a rest」

Leaving that unsaid, Lululie disappeared to the kitchen. I confirmed Misha's state meanwhile.

Misha is lying down on the bed with Lilith. The blanket was off and her belly is exposed. Seeing her sleeping face, I can't see her plotting something.

If I kill Matifa, what would Misha think? Will she get angry? Or sad? She might even come for me as revenge.

What about if I got killed? I think she'll be sad but the possibility of her being glad as he was freed from being a slave isn't zero.

What should I do?

Lululie returned to the living room with the midnight snack she made for me.

Lululie seeing me threw out a question.

「You look gloomy. Are you worrying about something?」

「...Does it really come out of my face?」

「Yes, a face that's facing hardships. You can consult me if you're okay with it」

Lululie sits down, looked straight to my eye and asked. Words naturally leave my mouth.

「Just a bit, I was betrayed by someone I thought is a companion」

「Betrayal is it? Then you were injured with that. Do you know the reason?」

「She2 probably means no harm It's like a child prank. But, it's not a prank on a permissible level. Depending on the case I will...」

Kill. I didn't say it. When I said that, it will be denied certainly. If that happens, I won't be able to put my hand on Matifa anymore

It's easier to run that way. But, what's most important isn't Matifa. I mustn't make a mistake on my priorities.

Lululie listened to me then pondered. Then, she began to speak slowly.

「Is it a child's prank? Lilith often plays prank at me too. I do scold her but it does not heal easily. After Ren-san came she became docile but she's originally lively. But, that person isn't a child but an adult isn't it? I think an adult must atone properly」

Lululie express her honest opinion.

Certainly, that's correct as an adult. Even if Matifa has a form of a child, her inside is still a splendid adult. If it's her, I have to draw the line properly.

However, Lululie continued to speak.

「But if Ren-san suffers from it, then you don't have to do the impossible, right? For example, I think the best method would be to cut all your ties with her」

Lululie was worried about me till the end. A way for my fear to escape my body was presented.

Cut off relations with Matifa. But that means giving up on Seria and not entering the castle at all. I can't do that.

At the point where I got related to person called Matifa, I can no longer prepare an escape.

However, What Lululie said isn't meaningless. She's an outsider who knows nothing. Therefore, I will receive her sentiment for now.

「That's right. There's also that method」

「Yes, that's why, please don't force yourself too much. You can always consult me anytime, I'll even hear your grumbles」

Then, the talk ended. I took over the cleaning of dishes and I forced

Lululie to sleep.

I decided to do nothing about Misha for now. I tidy up while she's sleeping, Misha doesn't seem to be a hindrance.

---

1. Aal izz Well! ↩

2. It's a pronoun game, he doesn't mention the gender ↩



## Chapter 41: Worry

After Lululie slept, I went to the castle alone.

I thought that I might not be able to pass through the barrier of the castle anymore, but I passed through without problems. It seems that Matifa still intends to welcome me.

I go around the nights yawning in the castle. The uproar during daytime is probably the reason of the increase of personnel. I won't make a mess to be caught in this degree, but it doesn't chance that it's a troublesome thing.

Then, I reached Seria's room slightly later than usual.

There's no changes here in particular.

I thought that she's already asleep but she's lying in the bed idling.

I used a key to open and check the window. Entering while paying attention to traps, Seria noticed me and turned over.

「So you were alive!」

「Y-Yeah」

Seria talked to me vigorously in surprise. In addition, she jumped out the bed with an angry look.

「I heard it from father. It was you who sneaked in the audience, right!? And you were injured greatly. When you didn't come in the evening, I thought you have died!」

「What? You're worried? It should've been convenient for you if I died」

「I-I'm not worried at all! ...Then? Is your injury already fine?」

For some reason Seria is showing tsun-tsun. It seems that Seria is worried about me.

「Yeah, the treatment already ended, I'm fine. But, since I can't do extreme movements, let's postpone for the other day」

「You seem to be energetic enough to make a joke. Geez, it became hard for you to evade because you came here in succession」

Seria turned away while speaking in an angry tone.

I stubbornly asked what happened after the audience was over. Ortiz have questioned the two brothers and Lion. Still, Seria doesn't know what passed through.

「If you've got a complain, tell that to Matifa. It's all her fault」

「I heard about it. I don't know the reason but it was unfortunate. However, it's no good if you do something bad. I was deserted the day before yesterday, and only cruel things ahead of that. Additionally, you sneaked during the audience, you can't complain if you got killed」

As expected, Seria being my foremost victim won't be on my side. I reap what I saw so it can't be helped.

「Also, weren't you the Assassin named Beheader who's making a ruckus in the streets, aren't you? Just how many people have you killed? Just how many bad things you'll do before you get satisfied?」

Far from being an ally, Seria has started to sermon suddenly. Why am I being scolded by a younger girl?

「No, that's...」

「I didn't think of you to be that kind of person. Somehow or another, I thought of that because you saved me. But, I was wrong. I was disillusioned as you're an assassin who killed many innocent people. Is it right in your world to kill a person? IS the peaceful country you talked about three years ago a lie? Hey, what is it?」

Seria kept talking without hearing my excuse. She began to mind my wrongdoings after knowing my safety. It seems she's really angry. Or rather, isn't the change in her attitude from the other day too fast? Where did Seria's fear of me go?

「Calm down a bit. My story doesn't matter anyway」

「It's not! I decided! I will absolutely reform you. Then, I'll make you say sorry!」

Seria thrust her finger out. Her heavy breast shakes at the same time.

There won't be a problem if I just apologized but Seria seems to be serious. Her way of thinking that's sweeter than sugar is one of her qualities.

「This won't finish the story with just a sorry I guess...」

「Still. You should apologize properly and make up for your crimes. First of all, Apologize to me. But still I won't forgive what you did to me」

「No, don't forgive me. Also, I won't be able to play with you if I apologized, right? I'll never apologize」

「Then I won't forgive you either. I might expose you just like what Matifa-sama did」

「You're different from Matifa. You can't do that」

「You don't know that」

「No, you can't. I can ascertain that」

「Mu...」

That's right, that's the decisive difference between Matifa and Seria.

Seria dislikes to hurt others. That's why, she can't imitate actions which exposes others to danger. She'd rather sacrifice her own instead of doing that sort of thing. I don't know what will happen if she's really cornered but, normally, it's unlikely for her to expose me.

But, Matifa didn't think that far. She's an egoistic person that does what she wants and doesn't consider the danger for others. The result, the surroundings display various suffering. I almost died this time. Perhaps, she might've damaged a lot of humans until now. Then, if I leave her alone she won't stop with me as a victim.

Even Seria the other day, had been played by Matifa after she dried me out. Though I didn't see it because I returned, she still had some hard time.

「Hey, from your point, how do you see Matifa?」

「How?」

「Yeah, I see her as dangerous, but how do you see her?」

「Let's see...」

‘Uun’, Seria put her elbow against her hand and pondered.

「I'm a bit envious of Matifa-sama. Matifa-sama is strong, beautiful and a free person. I often think if I have that strength. Especially, recently it's large」

Seria stared at me. Don't stare at me so much

「Also, Matifa-sama is my teacher in magic. She teaches me strange magic occasionally but she's usually a good teacher who teaches thoroughly」

Could it be that magic is Matifa's work? She's really good.

But, Misha is also good, so I guess she's good at taking care of someone. I guess it's the elderly-grandchild precious theory I guess.

「But, there's a place I couldn't think about. Though she's talkative and is speaking on us royalty casually, she never spoke her real feelings. However, it was slightly different when she was with you」

「In what way?」

「It's the first time I saw Matifa-sama getting so emotional. Normally, she's cold. Also, did you notice it to? When your interest is directed at me, Matifa-sama is really angry. Her anger looks cute but she's serious. I know that as a woman」<sup>1</sup>

Seria confirmed that it's certain.

Certainly, she was dissatisfied but I didn't think she's angry to that extent. But, I guess it's different for Seria.

「She's angry? I only see her acting playfully with me」

「Yes, she's angry. Although I can't understand it in the slightest, Matifa-sama seriously love you. Yet, you lust over this and that... Do you intend to make a harem? If you do that you'll be stabbed by someone like Matifa. Though she said that she's fine being a mistress, I can't possibly think she's satisfied with that」

Seria began to say something incredibly horrible. Certainly, she might've squeezed me dry because I made angered her. But, being dried out is merely a result ?

Seeing me shudder, Seria continued to talk.

「Also, there's something that still bothers me」

「What?」

「Matifa-sama's magical power. It's not of a human's. She seemed to have lived for a long time, she might've been burdened with such a big thing. She showed it to you, she wants you to know」

「She wants me to know?」

「Yes, she did. It's said that when a woman shows her ugly self it has a big meaning. It might be a test to make you feel relieved but I can't think of anything else other than that. I don't know it's meaning but, surely this must be connected to today」

What does Matifa want me to know? If I can know it, can she be understood?

But, I can't understand it at all. I can't come to understand.

Matifa doesn't say the important thing, so I can't guess it well.

Then, Matifa doesn't speak to me who can't understand, the same thing repeats. One day, I'll seriously die.

「Hey, who do you think would win if I and Matifa fought?」

「...What are you saying so suddenly? Do you intend to fight Matifa-sama?」

「Just answer」

「Geez. Please don't fight no matter what. One of you will definitely die. I don't want to see that. You should become Matifa-sama's pet rather than fighting her. I'll be at peace if you do so, and it would solve everything」

Seria judges that I would seem to win against Lion, and I'm equally matched against Matifa.

Also, being Matifa's pet is rejected.<sup>2</sup> It'll be insufficient no matter what.



In the end, I left Seria's room without doing anything. I'm alone right now, staring at the starry sky from the castle's roof

The starry sky seen here is different from Earth. There's no Orion belt, Scorpio nor the Dipper. However, only the milky way flowed through the starry sky of this world.

While immersing in a nostalgic mood, I remembered what everyone said.

Master ordered to kill Matifa. I don't understand the reason but it's Master. He's probably thinking about a foolish thing like world peace.

Cathy also agreed. In her case, it's because she's worried about me. In other words, Cathy judged Matifa to be dangerous.

Lululie said that I should cut our relationship. I agree with that, I think that's the best method. Matifa is the type that gets conceited if you let her do more. But the real situation, there's no effective way to break off

our relations.

Seria told me to become Matifa's pet<sup>3</sup> That's bullshit.

Also, I didn't hear anything from Misha who knows Matifa the most. Though there's the possibility that Matifa has a hidden reason, in the end I ran away because I was too scared to hear the answer. If I got betrayed by Misha, I would be hard for me to know what to do. Therefore, It's necessary to conclude it tonight while Misha is asleep.

「What's up with that...」

This is the first time I got worried about killing someone. It's natural for a human to die, I grant death for granted.

But, what about Matifa?

She betrayed me, I almost died. That's enough reason for me.

It's too dangerous to keep her company any longer. What that girl can do can escalate further. If that happens, I clearly won't be safe. If I think rationally, I should take care of her before it's too late.

But, she cooperated with me. Making me pass through the castle's barrier helped me very much.

It's fortunate that her interest is poured into me. She shows no behavior of attacking anyone other than me for the moment.

Normally you would attack Seria who's a rival in love. If Seria had died in an accident and she treat me kindly, I'm confident that I would easily be deceived. She's really a sick person to the core. But, I didn't see that behavior from her. Does she really love me?



I remembered my first time meeting Matifa. She was lonely. She's seeking a person's warmth after living for a long time alone. Her figure is artificial but her content is a human.

However, I wonder if she's looking at me? Did she just see me because I and my ability were special?

My doubts are endless.

In the end, I know nothing about Matifa<sup>4</sup> Thus, I can't come into conclusion no matter how I think.

「I don't think about these things before...」

I headed to Matifa's place without reaching conclusion.

---

- 1. Woman instincts, scary ↩
- 2. Thank you. I don't want to drop this just because you submitted to Matifa ↩
- 3. Dammit Seria! ↩
- 4. Ren Snow ↩

## Chapter 42: Farewell

I finally arrived at Matifa's research building. Should've noticed that I have come. I opened the door to Matifa's room while being careful if there are traps or barrier.

「Hi, welcome. For you to be able to move with that wound, you seem to have an excellent healer as an acquaintance」

Matifa didn't receive me timidly, instead she welcomed me in her usual tone. Her appearance is the adult woman. Although her nice chest is boldly exposed, I'm not in that mood today.

「Matifa, what do you plan to do during daytime, Depending on your reply, you might not get out of this unscathed.」

I threw my words with bloodlust included in it. Matifa parried it calmly.

「Oh? Are you angry? I was just playing around. I want to brag about you that it slipped out of my mouth. That's because they doubted your ability. I can't forgive that. Isn't it natural for me as your woman to think that you should receive recognition? Also, you won't die with just that. Actually, you lived and visited me even」

There's no change in Matifa's attitude as expected. If Ortiz didn't stop them that time, or if Cathy and master didn't treat me, I would've died without fail. But, despite that, this fellow only think that it's a small degree.

「Matifa, you're not willing to repent?」

「Of course, I'm reflecting on it. When I thought that you would be killed by Radom, my heart's beating stopped. I overdid it. It was my bad」

Though she said that she's sorry, there's no signs of remorse in her attitude at all. This fellow will surely do the same thing again.

I fear that it's likely true up until now. When she likes a man, she probably play around and beat them until they die or run away.

This is the true color of the Witch named Matifa. If left alone, I would also be lead to the road of destruction. I must stop right here right now.

「Are you really sorry?」

「I think so. Also, even if Ortiz didn't stop them that time, I would not let you die no matter what. That's because I can't think of losing you. That's why, don't worry. As long as you're in this castle, you'll never die」

Matifa's hand wrapped in black gloves extends to my cheek. Then, she stroke it gently like admiring a treasure.

But, I don't think I would be entangled by this snake. Unable to bear it, I removed her hand.

Still, Matifa's attitude didn't change.

「Were you able to be close to death? Also, when you revealed my identity, I'll definitely be captured and killed. Yet, you think that you can convince me with those words?」

「Of course, I understand. I even thought of running you away that time. 1 I'll defend you without fail」

Matifa is making a plea while spreading both her hands. Of course, I won't yield to that temptation.

「You're just cornering people. Are you disregarding my will?」

「I respect your will at most. That's why I didn't obstruct your date with Seria, aren't you managing inside the castle freely? If you'd like, I can protect you along with Seria. You two can just flirt at a safe place until the internal matters settle down. Even if Lion came, I can do something about it」

I moved and Matifa approached me. She embraced me and pressed into her soft chest. It seems that a poison of seduction is loaded to her every action and gesture, I raised my vigilance.

「What do you want to do?」

「What do I want to do? Didn't I just say it? I want to learn everything about you. I got a considerable amount of data of your ability from today's battle. It was meaningful and I found out something new. For instance, you can't use two abilities at the same time」

「I didn't hear that. Why are you here? For what are you living for?」

「My purpose on living? That's quite a philosophical question. Let's see... nothing in particular, maybe? Although I do like magic research, that's not my purpose for living. It's merely killing time. When there's nothing to do, I often just sleep through the years」

Matifa seems lonesome in some respect. Living for such a long time, she doesn't have a purpose for living. Then just what is supporting Matifa for her to put up with the hundreds of years up until now?

「But, I'm having fun right now. Because you're here right now」

Matifa whispered in my ears. Her hand coils my back and her legs entwine. If this goes on, I'll be eaten by this witch.

「I can't understand. You're living because you don't want to die? Or is it that you can't die?」

「There's no such thing. Although I overcame my life span, I'd die if I get killed.<sup>2</sup> But because I'm afraid to die, I don't think I can kill myself. Also, there was no one who was able to kill me in the past. That's why I am still living to this date. But, I'm able to feel you this way because I'm living. I love you. <sup>3</sup> —Ah, I see. I'm sure I was born to meet you」

Then, the embracing Matifa moved to the bed.

I don't understand what Matifa is thinking. But, I do know that she wants me earnestly, but I don't understand what makes Matifa attracted so much.

She's like this from the beginning. Appearing suddenly, demands me one-sidedly, then exhaust me. The exchange of words keeps escalating more and more.

Matifa surely doesn't look at me. She's only feeling the me who has an unknown ability, true colors, just man who came from the other world with a unique history and special nature.

She's not seeing me as a sole person but a sign of a special existence. Otherwise she won't like someone like me.

「Matifa, why do you want me?」

「That's quite an ambiguous question. I wonder if you want to make love

right now. Although I saw your body fall down today, it hurts but it can't be helped. It's been a while since I had an adult form and I thought that this body would delight you. It seems that you like those who have big breasts」

Then, Matifa threw me in the bed then pressed her indecent breast. The elastic chest changed shape when it was squashed.

I still can't comprehend her words. The things I and Matifa see are too different. I do not know what she seeks. She surely has gone crazy.

「That's not it, Matifa. What are you expecting from me?」

「Expectation? Let's see, I expect from you... But, I'm hesitating whether I should say it to you. You are fine as your own. There's no need to worry about what I say」

Saying that, she kissed me. The sticky saliva and tongue were sucked in. The soul seems to be sucked together with the saliva, fear boils up. The groin was groped at the same time. If this continues, I'll be squeezed and wither just like usual.

I separate my lips from Matifa then made a last question.

「Matifa, could you stop it? I'm not in the mood right now」

「What? Even though it's rare for me to take an adult form, you're so cold. If there's an injury I can back-it up so there's no need to worry. Or are you still angry on about earlier? If so you can vent it out on my body. It's okay, I'll accept it all」

Then, Matifa stuck her mouth again.

I convicted myself as my mouth is being violated. It's already too late

for Matifa. She's already broken and mad. Even if I associate myself with her, I can't accompany her as I'm only a human. Even if she thinks that I'm a special, I'm just a nobody. Also the lowest class that raped a woman.

There's only one thing I can do for Matifa. I will bring an end to her long life.

This is for mine and for her sake.

I pulled out quietly the dagger I received from Master.

If this dagger negates magical power, then it won't have a problem against Matifa's absurd magical power.

I turn my hand and hugged Matifa like a lover.

Matifa who's absorbed in the kiss doesn't notice at all.

I can kill her right now.

There's no time but now.

I'll do it if it's me.

There's no one who can do it but me.

I swing the dagger I'm holding backhand.

There's the feeling of the blade piercing soft meat.

Without the resistance of the dense magical power, the point of the blade sank deeply.

Before long, I damaged the lungs and reached the heart—

「You can't do that Master!!」

My hand was held down by Misha who appeared suddenly. The blade stopped half buried. But, there should be a fatal wound—

「...You, I wonder what this is?」

Matifa who separated her mouth had her voice echoing from the bottom of the earth.

The red blood dripping from her mouth stained my lips. Though it should've been a considerable critical hit, Matifa doesn't mind the wound and glared at me with pupils dyed in darkness.

「Shit!」

I tried to swing down my dagger while swearing but my body doesn't move. Matifa dominated my body in an instant.

Matifa's hand extends to my neck.

「I want to hear what you're doing. I wonder why you attacked me. I do love you. I even gave Misha as a present, I also lent you my power. I gave you my body. Yet, why can't you respond to my love?」

「Wait, Matifa-sama! Master too!」

Ignoring Misha's precense, Matifa lifts up my body. It's impossible to resist. The assassination is a complete failure.

「T-The first one who betrayed was you! If I associate with you any further I would die! It's already impossible!」



「Didn't I tell you not to worry? Also, if It's you, that degree shouldn't matter」

「Where are you getting that confidence! What do you know about me!? You aren't seeing a single bit in me! You're pushing your own ideals selfishly!」

Matifa is only seeing her ideal in me. She's imagining me as a perfect person, she's convinced that I'm that kind of person. She trusts that I'm a hero-like existence that can overcome no matter what kind of problem there is.

But, I'm not that sort of human. I'm just an ordinary person who lives filthily. I'm not a splendid human who stands up no matter what kind of wound is inflicted. I can't endure the trial Matifa imposes.

「That's not true. You're obviously a special human. If you'd like, should we prove it?」

Saying that, Matifa smiled wickedly.

「What do you intend to do」

「It's simple. I'll be keeping your most important thing. You will show that you can recapture her back splendidly from me. What? If it's you, you can do it. Just like I told you, you're a special person」

「Wha! You, Seria is unrelated!」

「The limit is until daybreak. You will cure your body and take Seria from my hand. If you can't, Seria's safety isn't guaranteed. Even if you did it, lecture is waiting for you」

Matifa threw me to the bed and went out of the room without hearing

my response. It's possible to go ahead with teleportation but it's useless to get ahead because my body can't move. Even if Seria was freed, I can't go out of the castle. It's the worst situation.

While I was grinding my teeth, Misha moved instead.

「Master, are you okay?」

「Dammit! What do you think you're doing! Also, what happened to Cathy!」

「Since Master is acting strangely, I followed secretly. The dark-elf onee-chan is okay since I just ran away」

Misha answered indifferently.

I felt disturbed as Misha got up and followed me unnoticed.

「Why did you stop me!? You're Matifa's ally after all?」

「No. I stopped Master because he's mistaken. This is the medicine」

Misha took out the magic purification medicine and shoved it in my mouth. With this, I should be able to move after a while. But, that alone won't make it easy to take back Seria from Matifa.

Continuing, Misha looks after my body. Then, she noticed the bandage wound on my body.

「Master, you're injured」

「I was close to death earlier because of Matifa!」

「Un, then I'll cure it」

This time, she took a black cloth from the pouch. It's Matifa's panties that also has some healing effect. Misha covered my face with it without hesitation.

「Stop! Don't cover me with that thing!」

「No, treatment is a priority」

Misha defied my order, her face distorts as the slave contract brought pain.

There's no power left for me to resist now.

---

1. そのときはボクのところに逃げてくるといい。↩
2. Yes, that's Emiya Shirou ↩
3. キミを愛せる。↩

## Chapter 43: Misha's Feelings

Matifa's cursed panties has three effects.

To be able to slip through the barrier of the castle, to be able to heal wounds and recover stamina, and compulsory peerless effect.

My son got mad when I was covered with it. Despite it not reacting when Matifa caressed it earlier, because of the cursed panties, it got erect forcefully. 1

Misha noticed it of course. Then, she took action just like what a slave should take. In other words, she began to comfort it.

「Master, I'm sorry. But endure it for now」

Misha rubs my son on top of my pants. In the end, it's the same as Matifa.

Now's not the time to drown in pleasure. I have to know Misha's true intention and take back Seria from Matifa.

I asked before Misha's hand come under my pants.

「Misha, why did you stop me?」

「Because Master is trying to kill Matifa-sama. That's why I stopped you」

Misha's answer was simple. However, Misha's master isn't Matifa anymore but me.

「That's for me to decide. It's not for a slave like you to decide」

「It's not. Master has misunderstood Matifa-sama. Matifa-sama is the same. Actually, there's no need to kill」

「That's because you don't know what just happened!」

「Un, Misha doesn't know. But, I know. At any rate, Matifa-sama overdid it and Master was angry」

Misha's attitude speaks like she knows it. I wonder if this turned out as expected.

「If you know then why did you hinder me? At this rate I will die. Is that your aim?」

Though Misha is a slave, if I, who is her master dies, the binds would disappear Furthermore, Misha is strong right now. She won't fail and fall into slavery again.

But, Misha shook her head to my question.

「It's not. If it's Master, you won't die. Even if someone else dies, Master would be fine」

Misha looked at my eyes confidently.

「What's your basis for that? Why are you saying something so irresponsible!」

「If it's Master, Matifa-sama should know. That's why, Matifa-sama can be stopped. Also, if it's Master, no matter how strong the opponent, you won't lose」

Misha is speaking absurdly. This fellow is the same as Matifa, they're having blind belief with me. That's why I denied Misha's words.

「I don't know what she's thinking but if I lose I die! You're pressing your own ideals just like Matifa!」

「Wrong!!」

Misha shouted. It's a shout that made me think that it tear off my eardrums.

It's the first time I heard such a voice from Misha. Her expression is always shown by her ears and tail and she spoke indifferently in her mouth. She put her feelings in her words right now, Misha spoke with all her might to convince me.

「It's wrong! Master, you don't know a thing about Matifa-sama. Master. Never knew a thing about Matifa-sama! Even though you two love each other, you can't become lovers! That's what I don't understand!」

Misha is pleading while crying.

「Misha you see, I know Matifa-sama before Master met her. Matifa-sama always looked so bored, so lonely, in pain. Although there's no tears, Matifa-sama is always crying」

She cried all the time before I came. I'm sure it's true. Matifa lived alone all this time, she had cried in solitude. Even the fool of me can imagine that.

「It changed when Master appeared. She looks like she enjoys it, so happy, everyday she kept saying that she wants to meet you sooner. When will he come again? She plays with Misha everyday while saying that」

Even so, I can't understand. She found me and moved her expectations to me. Then she expands her delusion selfishly. Surely, during the seven days I travelled with Seria, Matifa's delusion has swelled that it's impossible to control anymore.

「Then, Master came, Matifa-sama is overjoyed. But, when Master came to Seria-sama's place, she fell down. Depressed, angry, she ordered Misha to kill. Matifa-sama was serious that time. Matifa probably doesn't know but she seriously intend to kill Master」

Maybe that's the reason why Matifa was mad that time. Matifa's hatred made her pour out her confined magical power, she start to move as if wanting to kill me. Then, when I got serious, I knocked down Misha.

「But, Master didn't lose against Misha. Even Matifa didn't think I would lose. Then, when Matifa-sama appeared, Master didn't run away. Even bathing with Matifa-sama's magical power, you didn't run away nor go mad. Usually, everyone goes crazy if they bathed in Matifa-sama's magical power. Just Master is the only one who can speak with Matifa-sama equally」

Seria said the same thing too. Certainly, Matifa's magical power is abnormal. Especially the magical power she shoots out the first time we met isn't normal. Understanding the strength of my opponent, that magical power can make someone go mad. Even I can't calm down. But because everyone around me as a stronger magical power than me, I got

used to fear.

「Misha, certainly, I spoke to Matifa normally.. But, that's it. I don't understand Matifa, Matifa doesn't understand me either. There's no way we can understand each other」

「That's not true! Master should be able to understand if you took a step further. Because Master was able to notice Matifa-sama's suffering from the first time. Also, Master hadn't seen it. That's why you torment Misha in anger」

That was said when I had sex with this two for the first time. That time, I was so irritated by Matifa's long talk so I threw my resentment to Misha.

Did I notice Matifa's true nature that time?

I should've...noticed. Her words were clumsy, she doesn't understand a single thing about me and yet she spoke as if she knows me well and it was very irritating. Was I thinking that she's a pitiful fellow? But that's the first mistake.

「Misha you see, I thought that time that Master understood Matifa-sama. I thought that Matifa-sama's rampage would stop. But, Master doesn't understand at all. Master, doesn't know Matifa-sama's true nature. Matifa-sama doesn't want to die in the slightest. Master, think about Matifa-sama properly」

Misha appealed to me desperately. Misha must've known what Matifa yearns for. But, she doesn't tell me. I'm sure that it's something that I have noticed already. If I understood it, will I and Matifa understand each other?...

Misha issued a hint to me who guessed badly.



「Please remember. What kind of clothes Matifa-sama is wearing?」

「What? Isn't it the goth loli dress?」

「Where was Matifa-sama?」

「Where? She's at the research building. 」

「Where is it?」

「It's in the castle」

「What does Matifa-sama Like?」

「What? I don't know but for the time being, me. What about other magic?」

「Asides from that, did you hear anything?」

「Also, she wrote an erobook, she also likes fairy tales...」

「Something else coming into your mind?」

「And...」

Misha made me remember it one by one. Where and when Matifa appears, her speech and conduct that time, likes and tastes, she combined and made me remember each and every trivial gestures and clothes. It's like a puzzle where the piece is joined together one by one, something hidden inside is guessed logically. It's a simple suggestion game. Then, the conclusion I arrived at is—

「...Ah, got it」

One word emerged in my head. It's such a childish answer. It's too childish that I laughed.

However, it is convincing given the action and words of Matifa. The meaning of all of her consistent unreasonable action she had taken.

Perhaps Matifa herself doesn't notice it either./ No, she noticed but she

looked away. That's why it has become an inconsistent thing.

Misha had finally transmitted her smile of joy as she looks at me who arrived at the answer.

「That's right, that is Matifa-sama」

「You, you did know this before?」

「I haven't heard it, I noticed it. I knew it by looking at Matifa-sama」

Misha answered easily but, who can struggle against that outrageous witch to arrive to this answer? Misha is much wiser than I thought.

Though I doubted that she can read my mind before, but now I'm convinced that she really can read my mind. It's not a magic trick, with her strange perception, she can analyze a human heart.

Surely, this is why Matifa liked Misha. Maybe, she's expecting this to happen so she gave me Misha.

「If it's Master, you can do it. You'll definitely help Matifa-sama」

「Yeah, I don't feel like losing against her anymore. It's all thanks to Misha. Thanks」

「Ehehe... Was Misha useful?」

「Yeah, very. Misha did well」

I praised the happy Misha while patting her head. it seems that I'm finally able to move my body. Just a bit more and I'll go to Matifa's place. But, before that...

「A reward is necessary for Misha. Do you want something?」

A reward is necessary for an excellent slave. I'll give whatever she want right now. If she wants half of the world, I'd go down and kneel in front of Maou.

I had those thoughts while waiting for her answer, Misha had her glance fleeting between my groins.

「You see, Misha, wants to do naughty things with Master」

「Ha?」

Misha suddenly started pleading.

「Are you sure? We did it this morning. I can give it to you anytime though」

「Un, because Master hadn't properly done ecchi with Misha. 2 Misha, doesn't want to be defeated by Lilith-chi and Matifa!」

Misha shows her willingness with a clenched fist. Certainly, Misha is always just an extra to Matifa and Lilith, I hadn't made her as a proper partner yet.

Misha can't settle with it.

I see, Is that so? If that's the case, then it can't be helped.

「Okay, Misha, Strip. You'll be my partner in front of Matifa」

「Un!」

The one in my groins covered by my pants went mad and I faced Misha declaring so.

---

1. That's called viagra ↵

2. Please be reminded that Misha is always at 3P ↵

## Chapter 44: Misha's anal experience ##

「Misha's first time was here too」

「Un, Master was too intense」

「My bad for being rough that time. Did it hurt?」

「It's fine. It's fine as long as Master feels good」

Misha and I embrace each other naked.

I think it's bad to use Matifa's bed without permission but it's her fault this happened. Even if she sees this, that girl won't do anything to hinder us. If so, then we'll show our love-love place to that witch.

「Misha is really cute. I love you」

「N, Misha loves master too.1 I love you2」

「I do love you too」

Confirming each other's love, we French kissed. The tongues entwine with each other, we exchange our saliva and drink it up. The surroundings of our mouth is already sticky, I and Misha kissed over and over again.

Misha understood me in the truest sense and helped me. There was no one who was able to understand me up until now, but Misha is different from them. She's an irreplaceable partner.

「Misha, I've always suspected you as Matifa's tool. But, it was not at all. My bad」

「Uun3, It's fine. Misha knew that. Also, it's natural to doubt」

Misha accepted my apology and forgave me easily. She's really a good girl. She's too good for me.

「Thanks, Misha. I'm going to do you affectionately today」

「Un, Misha will do her best」

Then, we kissed again. The warmth of Misha's chest comes through. It's too lovely it's irresistible.

Is Misha glad? Her tail is coiling around my waist. It seems that she doesn't want to let me go.

I embraced her back gently while kissing. Both skins are glued together, I can feel all of Misha's warmth and pulse. Misha also happily clings to me.

「Master, you see, Misha loves kisses. Since the first time we kissed when Master gave me the medicine, my heart was throbbing hard」

「I see, is that so? I'm going to give you lots of kisses if that's what you want. You can just ask whatever you want」

「Unn! Master, kiss me」

「Come」

Then, we kissed again. My hand caresses Misha while we kiss.

Misha is developed by Matifa so she can feel it well anywhere. Just gently stroking her spine makes her body react with a twitch. I turned my hand to her round ass and enjoyed the soft flexible feeling.

「Funyaaa, Master, do you like ass?」

「I love any part of you. 5 Ass, breasts, legs, armpits, I love all of it」

「Then, what about Misha's anus?」

Uneasy, Misha proposed anal play. I don't have experience in that either but there's no way I can refuse Misha's request.

「Very well. I'll do anything. But, why anal?」

「You see, since Misha's pussy is small, Master's penis can't get all of itself in. That's why, I thought of entering my anus. Also, I played with it this morning and it was good」

What a pleasant thing you say.

It seems that she's dissatisfied being compared with Lilith, her vagina seems to be smaller. It can't be helped since she's a child, I do like to expand a tight pussy but that explanation won't do I guess.

「Ok, got it. Then I'll loose it firmly. I don't want to damage Misha after all」

「Un, but Misha is fine?」

Certainly, when I thrust my penis inside Misha it won't be on the degree of it being ripped off or breaking. But, the problem is the feeling. Even I want Misha to feel good, it's my pride as a man.

「Ah, but what about enema?」

「Misha knows it」

Misha got off the bed, she looked for something in the shelf in the wall while shaking her healthy ass. Then a bottle with a suspicious liquid and

a syringe was took out.

「That's...」

「I learned it from Matifa-sama. Wait a minute」

Misha said that and disappeared somewhere. She's probably going to put on enema. I can't move my body so I can't help her yet so I waited for her silently.

Misha came back with a refreshed face after a while.

「Thanks for the wait」

「Should we start then?」

I lay down Misha on the bed and raised her waist. I placed a pillow under her waist and brought my face close to the anus<sup>6</sup>.

「Master, is it dirty?」

「It's fine」

I extend my tongue to Misha's anus. I didn't invade it yet, just licking the area and turning it around. The anus who's thin pink colored shut tightly. It had faint bitterness along with the sweet and sour good smell. It's as if it is letting out a pheromone to invite men. While I enjoy the smell that may become a habit, a fine wrinkle expands from her small hole, I licked it deliberately.

「Nyaaa. My ass itches. Master, do it more」



Misha shakes her waist as she's not satisfied. Answering her request, I made my finger crawl in her pussy while licking.

Misha's small pussy closed tightly, blocking my finger's invasion. I stroke her slit gently and made her body open up naturally.

Then, after caressing it for a while, I heard wet sounds from her pussy. When I pushed the meat through with my penetrating finger, her love nectar dripped. I lick her anus further.

「Nyuuuu, Master, you see, whenever Master touches Miisha, my chest goes poka-poka7 It feels way better than Matifa-sama, why is it?」

Misha questioned entranced.

「I wonder why? But, isn't doing naughty things with the one you love feels really good?」

「Is that so? Then, Master too?」

「Yeah, I want to do it with Misha so hard that I'm rock hard already」

Saying that, Misha grasped the stiff and erect penis, then she began to stroke it slowly. It's not a movement to make me cum, it's a soft touch as if patting.

'I won't lose', then I attempted to invade Misha's anus. I pushed my finger wet enough with love nectar on her anus, then it was buried little by little.

Then, Misha started to make a strange scream.

「Nyo, o, o, o, o, ooooo!?!」

Misha who had her mouth look like a triangle made a shriek. Her hair and tail stands up at the same time.

「Are you okay?」

「I-m-fi-ne! Something awakened!」

Misha answered as she breaths roughly. I think she resemble a shepherd but I guess it's my imagination.

Misha's anus opened easily, the finger went inside.

In contrast to the hard entrance, the inside feels squishy, soft and nice. Was this washed beautifully? There's no texture of excrement. The clean intestinal wall is loosened slowly.

「Myoooooooo! Master, dashamazhing!!」

In contrast to the time when I fiddled with her tail, she's getting even more aroused with her ass. Misha shook her ass in search for stimulation.

It seems that a second finger will be no problem at all. Misha's ass hole which should be something that takes out keeps swallowing my finger.

The shallow place of her anus had two fingers enter easily. The soft and flabby elasticity feeling is quite fresh.

Then, I piston my finger, unable to bear it, Misha raised a lovely voice and bend her waist back and forth. It's a reaction I've never seen before.

While enjoying that situation for a while, Misha was unable to endure it at last.

「Myoaaaaaaa!! Mashter, More!! Please give me your penis! Faster!!」

Misha used her own hands to spread her anus and begged. It seems that it feels really good.

「Got it, got it. Wait a moment」

I half raised my feet and grind my glans into Misha's vagina hole.

「Master, wrong hole!」8

「I have to wet it first」

I thrust into her pussy just like that. The pussy wetter than ever accepted the penis smoothly. This seem to be fun even more than usual but the completely aroused looks dissatisfied. She protests as she was looking forward from her expanded anus.

I pulled out the penis that's wet enough, then I thrust it into Misha's anus just as she requested. Misha watched the scene with eyes filled with expectation. The glans pushed into her anus.

「Myoooooooooooo!! My ass is spreading!」

「O, Ooo! This is!」

Misha loosened the constrictor and easily accepted the thick penis. When the glans entered, it was easily dragged inside. Passing through the limit of her pussy, it settled to the root without problem. The anus tightens up to the root, the intestines wrap up to the sticky glans. It's a feeling I've never felt before, my waist feels like melting.

「Myowaaa! Amazing! Your penis hits so deep inside! Master, all of it

entered Misha! How's it!?!」

Misha asked in unusual high tension. Her eyes are spinning and her consciousness is about to fly. There might even be a dangerous brain substance coming out. I'm also the same.

「Somehow, this feels very strange. It sticks viscously and it's pleasant in itself」

「Misha too! My pussy goes powaa but my ass goes biribiri! Hey, master! Move, Move!」

「Okaay, Master will get to it then!」

Misha is frolic like a child in an amusement park. She's impatient, wanting to feel good I guess. It seems she likes anal.

In response to Misha's request, I slowly pulled out my penis. The penis put in without resistance was pulled out. Finally, it was caught in the cheerfully tightening muscle. That moment, Misha's legs stretched and she screamed.

「Myooooo! Myaaaaaaa! It's getting stiff and bigger! Misha's anus is tearing off!!」

The anus strangling my glans feels good.

The anus wriggles as I pull out my penis then I buried my penis once again. When I spread the intestines that came off the anus, Misha yelled once again.

With the piledriver position, Misha suppressed the back of her knee and spread her feet wide, she pushed her own ass pussy with her own weight.

「Oooooo! Misham can you see it? Your anus is amazing!」

「Myaaaa! Misha's ass, Mashter I'm going crazy! Misha's turning stupid!!」

「Very well Misha, become stupid! I'll be a fool too!」

「Nyaaa! The same with Mashter! Misha's going to be a foooooooooool!!」

Both I and Misha indulge into pleasure while panting. Misha's healthy anus accepted my piston easily, my penis is attacked in reverse.

I dig into her ass as a payback so I won't lose. Misha's thin stomach is being stirred by my thick penis, she turned over in pleasure.

「Haha! Misha is a pervert for feeling it from her ass!」

「Myaaaa! Because masther is a pervert too! Misha became a pervert-san too, nyaaaa!!」

Misha is sweating oil<sup>9</sup> in her whole body. The excretion organ accepts a foreign substance, what's normally impossible made her feel abnormally excited from the stimulus.

She's accepting the sexual stimulus from me happily, Misha is feeling pleasure like never before. This broken midareru-sama<sup>10</sup> is enough as a proof.

「Misha, I'm about to cum soon! I'll make your stomach drink lots!」

「Myaaa! I'll drink lots! Masthter, I will drink with my ash!!」

Misha tightened her muscle hard. At the same time, her intestines coiling to absorb the semen first hand.

As if sucking it up, the sperm rise up deep inside.

「Ooooooooo! Cumming, Misha! 」

「Come, master!!」

「Cumming!!」

*Dopyu! Byururu! Byururururu!*

Misha's beautiful ass had a penis stuck deep inside, the semen was dumped inside. At the same time, Misha reached climax with her ass.

「Myaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Her pussy blew a tide, Misha face befall. Misha sticks out her tongue while blowing out a tide, it's lasciviously lewd that you won't think she's a child.

When I pulled out my penis from Misha's anus, the semen flowed out from the anus that was left open but the absentminded Misha doesn't mind it.

「Misha, how was anal?」

「Nyaa. It was the best. Masther, let's do it some time again」

Misha has completely fell into anal sex. It wasn't my fault though. I thought of doing it with Seria next time, I borrowed enema tool from Matifa's room.

Now, then, next would be Matifa's capture. I don't intend to lose but I can't be careless. I should brace myself.

---

1. Daisuki ↔
2. Aishiteru ↔
3. Uun = No, Un = Yes ↔
4. Just like Kashima ↔
5. Lit: I love anywhere ↔
5. 菊門, this one took me hours to find out Imao ↔
7. Pleasantly warm ↔
3. Lit: Not there ↔
3. I don't know why but it has oil in the raw ↔
3. Disordered ↔

## Chapter 45: VS. Matifa – 1

Matifa kidnapped Seria and she's waiting for me somewhere. I guess it's that place.

The same throne earlier this day. It's the place that triggered the farewell, it's the place Matifa would be attached the most.

I went there together with Misha, a repulsive magical power is showing emitted from the other side, she's waiting for me to come.

I made a strategy guide against Matifa inside my head. I can no longer escape nor hide. 'Fair and square', I opened the door to the throne room.

The rubble that were inside during the battle was removed beautifully, a torn off red carpet and the stone pillar here and there near it.

Then, deeper inside, Matifa arrogantly sits down on the throne which normally is only for the king to seat.

「Hey, you came without running away. I was somehow worried when you didn't come and thought that you would run away from fear」

Adult Matifa overlooked us from above. Though it looks like that composure was regained after sometime but it was only the surface. She's furious inside, it's clearly seen from her magical power.

Next to her is Seria that's been suspended with a chain that extends to the sky. Her skin has a faint blush in it, it seems that she's been raped by Matifa earlier. The amount of love nectar dripping down on her legs tells that.

Thinking what caused it is unnecessary. She vent out her anger as I ignored her and played with Misha.



「You peeped at everything anyway. Listen up and give up already. Then, I'll also forgive what you did during daytime」

I was dying because of Matifa. Matifa almost died because of me too. We're now equal. Seria is the only person involved as a victim. It's the usual. It would've been done with forgive and forget, but I don't care about it at all.

But, I know that's not the case. As expected, Matifa brought her eyebrows close in irritation.

「You, that attitude is unacceptable. Certainly, this is a trial I imposed to you, but do you think you can get away safely? If you underestimate me that much, then should I get serious too?」

「Then get serious. I don't want to hear an excuse of you not getting serious when you lose after all」

If she's not serious, I'd be troubled instead. The significance of my win will arise if she's beaten when she's serious.

Matifa gets further frustrated to my underestimating attitude.

「Tell me. Where did you gain that confidence?」

「Thanks to Misha. Misha taught me about the true you. Knowing that, I'm not scared anymore. Matifa, do you remember your contract with me?」

I pat Misha's head and she snuggled me gladly. I showed to Matifa our intimacy then Matifa pursued the matter ignoring us.

「I'll present you something in exchange for information?」

That's the contract tying me and Matifa. It's a contract where Matifa gives me something as a compensation for information she doesn't know.

Though I suspect that it was a contract with the devil that time, but actually the devil is the one who contracts with the witch. In short, I'm the demon. I'll let Matifa know that.

「That's right. I'll tell you an exceptional information right now. The compensation is you yourself, Matifa. Are you ready?」

「Information equaling me? There's no such thing as that. Listen, There's nothing that can substitute a value of a person. There's a slave system but It's impossible to buy and sell people in the first place. It's because no one can measure the value of a person<sup>1</sup>」

Matifa declared confidently. But, she doesn't know the value of information.

Information is usually neglected in this world. An example is the long distance information transmission.

However, depending on the situation, information can steal away people's life, it can also be used to save in reverse. There are times when people's life are changed.

Matifa who studies magic should understand the life of a human but this girl's sense of values has concluded itself. She doesn't the impact of the information brought by others. That's why, she made that contract. It's a contract of a demon.

By the time she made the contract, my victory was confirmed.

That's why, I told Matifa.

「I see. Then, you don't have complains. Listen, this is the first

information. You'll be defeated right here and become mine. This is a fixed information in the future」

Proclaiming my victory, Matifa swung her fist and stood up from the throne.

「Could you stop that bullshit!? There's no way I'll accept that uncertain thing! Even the contract is——」

Then, Matifa's words were interrupted.

「What happened to the contract? Isn't it effective?」

Throwing my words to the surprised Matifa, she shook her head in disapproval.

「Foolish! There's no way!!」

「Listen, in my world, information about the future has an absurd value. It doesn't matter whether or not it's true. Even unclear prediction has a value. It's even above oneself. Then, hearing it means that alone would mean your defeat. Do you understand?」

「Don't joke with me! There's no way I'd accept that!」

Matifa is enraged. It seems that she didn't think that information has value.

Matifa has to pay the compensation in consideration to the value of the information given. It would harm the contractor if she didn't pay then the contract itself will be broken. She can't do that as a witch. That's why,

Matifa can't kill me unless she paid the price.

The start is a success.

「That's a shame. Contracts are absolute for a witch right? No matter how much you yell, the result would never change」

「Even so! It would be easy to weaken you without killing you! That's why there's no way for me to lose!」

「You'll understand when when it happens. I'll make the play with this. Isn't it too tight for Seria now?」<sup>2</sup>

I cast my eyes on Seria who's been silent on our exchange since earlier. Though she's looking down, I can understand that she's conscious.

「Fun! Seria, do you want to say something?」

The questioned Seria murmured.

「...As expected」

A small voice of anger shut itself up during the audience. Then, Seria looked up and cried.

「You're really the cause after all! Don't say something so foolish and apologize to Matifa already! Then, release me already!!」

No doubt, she scolded me. She's telling that it's all my fault. I ignored her stupid opinion.

「What? Even Seria thinks I will lose?」

「You might win but in the end you're at fault!? You definitely did something that made her angry. Hurry up and apologize already!」

「...Seria, I'll punish you later」

「Why!?」

Seria completely thinks of me as the bad guy. Certainly, I'm the bad guy but Matifa is also at fault in this case. Nevertheless, she blames only me as the bad guy. I'll be looking forward to later.

I also asked Misha.

「Misha, do you want to say something?」

「Uun, I'm fine. I believe Master」

There's a great difference between these two people. She's obedient and pretty cute.

「I see. Then I'll ask for you assist」

「Un」

When I and Misha nodded to each other, I faced the angry Matifa at the throne.

「Well then, Matifa, should we start?」

I pulled out Master's cursed sword.

Matifa saw the sword when she was pierced earlier, she now spoke curses as provocation.

「Fun! That's a dagger of a national treasure class isn't it? Is that the source of your confidence?」

「This? Very well. I can go through your magic defense」

Showing it off, her face keeps distorting beautifully.

「I know. Combine it with your ability and it's heinous. It's impossible to evade nor defend. But, I prepared some countermeasures」

Saying that, Matifa invoked her magic.

A dark color of magic fills the throne room. The shadow begin to take a shape of a human. The black haze becomes a lump and the outline gradually became clear.

Then, the finished one is the leader of this country. It's a jet black figure of a person of ministers and knights of this country. The audience during the daytime was reproduced.

The jet black Ortiz sits on the place Matifa was sitting a while ago and it spoke in Matifa's voice.

「This is my double. Where's the real me? You'll never know? This way I'll be able to seal off your movements. It's better not to use invisibility. At that time, an indiscriminate attack enough to not kill you will be released at all directions」

I feel magic identical to Matifa's appearing on each shadows. Their appearance may be different but they're all Matifa's double.

Matifa's double transformed into another. Perhaps, it's not just their appearance that resembles them. The ability should resemble their respective originals.

「Can you see it Misha?」

「Uun, the smell and sound is all Matifa-sama. The difference is only the appearance. 」

It seems that Misha can't distinguish the real one. But, Misha and I am not worried. We looked at each other and nodded. We were able to understand each others thoughts with just that. Destroy everything.

I and Misha took posture then Matifa handed down a question.

「Can you know where's the real me? Can you find the real me before you fall? If so, I'll return Seria to you」

It seems that Matifa hadn't recognized me as enemy yet. This is a trial Matifa imposed to me or so she said. She's underestimating me in all respects.

「Don't say such a half hearted thing. Come at me seriously」

「You're really conceited. There's no need for me to get serious at you. It's the same thing to Misha. You'll never be able to match me」

「I see. Then I'll make you do it by force. 」

「Un, Matifa-sama, get ready」

Then, I and Misha and Matifa started the battle.

---

1. Wow, that's so fucking philosophical ←

2. いい加減Seriaもきついだろうしな」 ←



## Chapter 46: vs Matifa – 2

It was Lion's copy that moved first. He thrusts his dark colored sword straight to me.

「Do you intend to repeat what happened during daytime?」

「That's right. How will you overcome the crisis from daytime this time around?」

Fake Lion speaks with Matifa's voice. The speed is equal to Lion, I also evaded it with my flight ability just like in daytime.

Fake Lion's sword cuts air. Not just the speed but the movement is identical too. I'm amazed that just a double can reproduce such absurd strength.

However, I experienced this battle once. And thus, it won't be the same this time.

「There's no need to overcome it. There's no way I'd lose against a fake after all!」

When I shoved my dagger, it was avoided splendidly. But, that movement was seen already. I adjusted my track according to his evasion and slashed fake Lion's head.

It's spouting blood.

I shouldn't bathe in this. This has Matifa's magical power soaked in it. Matifa was able to take control of my body easily a while ago, it was because I bathed in Matifa's blood. When I first met Matifa, she manipulated me by sending her magical power to the cursed panties. That's why I would be manipulated the same way from a while ago if I

bathed in the blood.

However, it's impossible to evade all the blood. So I had no choice but to be invisible.

Dirt doesn't stick to my invisible body. It's the same thing for blood. The blood that sticks to me fell on the floor. I moved to a position where it won't stick and removed my invisibility immediately.

If I used it for a long time, a full blown attack will come from Matifa. That's bad.

As soon as I returned back, I was attacked by a light headache.

Taking that advantage, fake Lion attacked with his last struggle.

This is the biggest drawback of my invisibility. My mental state becomes unstable after releasing my invisibility. My thoughts simplify and my judgement becomes dull and I make openings. Therefore, this ability can never be used when I'm alone in battle. That's right, if I'm alone.

「Master, leave it to me!」

The slash was prevented by Misha who cut in. After Misha competed the black sword with her reinforced nails, the attack's orbit changed and flew to the day after tomorrow. It broke a hanging flag and it disappeared at the stone wall.

There will be no problem as long as there's Misha's cooperation. Even if I got defeated by an enemy once, there's no anxiety at all.

「You got down easily. Also, you avoided the blood, did you notice it?」

「Isn't it obvious? You're manipulating me through body fluids. There's no way I'd bathe in it」

Fake Lion talks while bleeding. The doubles don't die even if they're killed<sup>1</sup>, this is really absurd. But, we have to deal with this gap. Any more than this and we can't attack anymore.

「Fun, you seem to have raised a difficulty a bit. Look, it's the next one. Can you endure it now that your movement is dulled?」

Fake Trovas's magic flew next. He shot a black flame arrow that was double than what it was in daytime. It's power is adjusted to the degree where I won't die but if I got it, defeat won't be avoided.

This is also the repetition of the daytime. I flew to the sky and Misha avoided it with her prided speed.

「You'll never win by running away. Or are you analyzing which is the real one?」

Matifa provokes the me who runs away desperately. It seems that she's thinking that she's still in advantage.

If so, I'll respond quickly.

「I do know where the real one is」

「...What did you say?」

This time it was fake Trovas who has a pig face wrapped his face in hate.

While freely flying around the audience, I disclosed my real intention to Matifa.

「Matifa, I guess you're envious of Seria」

「...What are you saying so suddenly?」

「You pressed your panties to me not to tease me. I guess you opposed it when I stole Seria's panties?」

「...」

Matifa didn't answer. Seria made a commotion instead.

「Wait!? What do you mean by that!! You, did you steal my underwear!?!」

「Yeah, I just borrowed it. Don't mind it」

「I do! Please return it! RETURN IT!」

Seria is worrying about something so trivial this late, I continued to talk to Matifa.

「Also, you meddled with Seria. You handed her a ero book even though I didn't ask you to, you trespassed and showed yourself when she was having sex with me, in the end you kidnapped her. Other than me, Seria is the only one you put your hand on so far. Even if your favorite is Misha, it's too suspicious」

Seria is special to Matifa. Since I'm obsessed with her, she's burning with rivalry with Seria, but that's not all.

「You're envious of Seria. It's because she has all what you want. But, you hid those feelings. You pretend that you're not aware」

「...What are you talking about?」

Matifa answered feigning ignorance. This girl doesn't admit it yet. Or, she doesn't want to admit it?

Well it's fine, I'm not going to talk long anyway. While I'm speaking in this way, I was exposed to all of attacks. I and Misha avoided with paper thin difference, the audience in between becomes ragged instead. There's no need to increase Lululie's work anymore.

「Matifa, it might be early but I'll give you my answer. I can't use my teleportation for more than once right now. I'll be able to guess your real body in this one use」

Since I used it twice during Seria's masturbation appreciation and when I escape earlier today, I'll be able to use it only once right now.

But, there's no problem with just one chance. I only need to make the correct answer once.

「That's a bluff. There's no way for you to find it that easy. Also, I know that you need time to concentrate to be able to teleport. Do you think I'll give you that time?」

Fake Trovas' attack increased in severity. A black flame arrow spread pursues me and attacked me from all sides. The speed and control is the real deal. If Matifa is serious, Trovas' magical power won't compare to her. It's certain that her magic is the best in this country.

Dodging it to the limit, I brushed off the arrows I can't avoid with the dagger and continued to talk. Although my body hurts from the impossible movement, I need to endure it a bit more. The chance will come certainly.

「It's not a bluff. Also, it's easy to buy time!」

「Is that so? Then let me hear it. Your answer」

「Matifa, you want to be found by me. That's why those irrelevant guys for you are excluded」

I have to find out the real thing from Matifa's challenge. In other words, she's hoping that I would understand her feelings. I'm sure that she's hiding restlessly right now.

「You have lived for a long time. You stayed at the Kings castle. But, your reason is not to contribute to the country, it's clear because you've never done that so far. You're not fond of this country. You don't eye on the knight or minister in particular. That's why, those are excluded」

「It is. I'm not interested in this country」

The knights and ministers vanished like mist along with my answer.

「Next, Lion. This fellow is the first one who attacked me in the beginning. But, this fellow isn't important to you at all」

「Yeah, Lion is worthless for me」

It's obvious that it wasn't lion from the time of his first slash. This fellow disappeared like mist too.

「Next is Felix. This fellow is a criminal who, just like you, attempted to kidnap Seria. You're eavesdropping anyway, aren't you? If you changed to his shape, then it won't be during the battle during daytime, you should've joined up during Seria's kidnapping situation. That's why, it's not this guy」

「If we returned to Seria's kidnapping, certainly, there's no need to take

this measure. You killed 21 people? Then assassins with the same number should've been sent in.

Felix is also one of the two marquis houses, He should've went to Matifa. Though he's the mastermind of Seria's kidnapping, he's unrelated to Matifa right now. Felix disappeared too.

「Though Trovas is also a partner who attacked me but for you, this fellow's magic is just a childish act. This fellow isn't different from the others」

「True. If his face is a bit thin, his value should rise a bit」

The head of the Mark Newt marquis house, Trovas. This guy attacked me with his magic during the daytime, but it goes without saying that Matifa's magic is above that. Even if he disappeared, the magic he shot off didn't. Probably because he's not a practitioner. 2

「The remaining is the royalty and your real self that hides. The second prince Desire is just a simple idiot. There's no way you'd sit there as your pride is high」

「I completely agree. Desire is just a fool」

Desire fades away while striking a strange pose. Matifa seems to hate this fellow.

「The first prince, Radom. He's the guy who came to deal the fatal blow on me. If this trial is to overcome my loss during the daytime, he's the most appropriate. But, the essence of the trial isn't there. It's not this guy」

「That's right. I did thought of knocking down Radom in the trial

actually. But, I was angry. There's no way this would end easily」

The fake Radom attacked me without disappearing.

This is probably the trial Matifa originally thought. Defeating Lion, Trovas and Radom, overcoming my defeat during daytime. Therefore, there's power in me, I'm certain that she intends to say that I shouldn't get angry to this degree.

「Misha!」

「Un!」

Misha comes with just one shout. While jumping freely, the fire arrows that were moving to attack were mowed down with her nail. Then, when it reached near me, she increased her speed and all of the fire arrows that were rushing into me dropped. At the same time, I cleaned up those that leaked out of Misha and when the artillery barrage thinned, fake Radom attacked.

If it's not a surprise attack, fake Radom's attack is simple. Though he's forged along with the knights, he can't defeat me with his conventional movements. The only note to take is his herculean strength that crushed my bones lightly.

Fake Radom jumped in the air. He put up his right fist ready. I shouldn't receive that from here. This cursed sword may not break but the impact would be transmitted to me.

To match Radom's right straight, I rotated my body like a spinning top. Letting Radom's attack flow and having him replace where my body is and I moved to his back. Fake Radom who can't fly can't do this movement. I threw my magic sword and it skewered his heart from behind.

Fake Radom that fell on the ground became mist and disappeared.



「The serious you has no mercy. Though you're not fast, your movement can't be predicted. ...No, it's different. Your movements betrayed my predictions. That's why it felt faster than the original speed. Your flight ability, it's not something that manipulates wind and gravity. The foundation is spatial control, isn't it? Show it to me more」

Even if fake Radom was knocked down, Matifa's composure isn't disturbed. In exchange for the black flame arrow, this time, several small demons were summoned. Their size is estimated as the size of a small man. Big wings grow from their back, they also have a spear with three points.

Their strength is the same from the knights. There's no need to fight so I devote myself to running away again.

Then, I resumed my interrupted answer.

「Next would be the Queen, Angela. Her hysterical point is the same as you」

「You, are you making a fool of me?」

「But, this person is a stranger who just married. A senior like yourself doesn't care about it」

「Are you ignoring me? Well, you're right though」

Matifa erased fake Angela easily What's left is the shadow of King Ortiz and the Black Matifa.

「Last would be King Ortiz. He's the top of the country but, oh well, it's only to that degree. For you, the throne doesn't matter」

「If so, there's no more candidates. Are you saying that I'm my own

double?」

Black Matifa steps ahead.

「Also, there's the guy who hides in the pillar The me during daytime」

「You noticed it. Certainly, he's hiding there. Is this your answer?」

There's no presence but I'm sure that Mtifa's personality won't overlook minor details. In the end, she would just say that the last enemy is myself. But...

「That person is just a fool so leave him alone」

「Isn't that yourself? Then, where am I?」

Matifa asked with irritation and expectation mixed in her voice. This girl really wants me to find her. This girl really has a troublesome character. But, that's cute too.

「You know it already. You already noticed from my answer」

「Then say it already. If you tease me too much, I'll attack you with all members next」

「Ha, you say that but all of them are fake」

「!!」

Matifa's attacking hand stopped for a moment. Finally, the chance appeared.

I'll charge at the real body just like that. I became invisible and sneaked

in, I would be attacked if I approached I guess. It's highly possible that I would be attacked to the extend where I won't die. I have no choice but to use teleportation the moment I announce it.

I hang a wire on chandelier and made a sudden break. At the same time, my flight ability is cancelled and my body made a huge swing.

The low-class devils that were following me were left from a distance. Then, earning the time, I activated teleportation.

「The real one is you. You idiot!」

「Ouch!」

I dropped my fist on Seria's seat that has nobody. There's the feeling of feedback on my hand. Then, removing her magic at the same time, the child Matifa that's about to cry showed up.

- 
1. A segi no mikata needs to talk to Matifa ←
  2. 術者ではないからだろう。←

## Chapter 47: vs Matifa – 3

「W-why did you find out that I'm here?」

Asked the Matifa in her usual goth loli appearance. Anger vanished from her face and she returned to her original condition completely.

「It's easy. Actually, you wanted to be a princess, not a witch. That's why you stay at the castle wearing a beautiful dress, you're waiting for a prince to release you from your suffering. There's no other special seat for the princess but here. You wanted to sit down here」

Perhaps, Matifa didn't want to be a witch., After all, she's a girl who keeps admiring the princess in fairy tale. That's the true form of the witch named Matifa.

That's why, in order to save herself, she calls out to find a hero with a special ability at the beginning. It was me this time.

「J-Just that made you convinced that I'm here? Didn't you think that it would be different?」

「In fact, I only thought that it would be here. You're envious of Seria, Seria is the real princess that I've saved. Also, you pushed your own panties to me and embraced me. Also, when you came at Seria's room, you used the other worlder topic as excuse, in truth you can't just watch me meet Seria in silence, aren't you? Also, you want me to embrace you on the bed of the princess and pushed me down. There's also the insinuate to Seria. You even squeezed me to my limit that time」

She feels bitter so she took up my time, she pushed me down forcefully.

She's conscious of all of Seria's actions. She wanted herself to be rescued more than Seria.

However, this fellow isn't docile and can't ask to be saved directly, she did it in a roundabout. She tried to pull me, and tried to make me notice her real intention.

That's why she hid herself, I knew she's here.

Still, Matifa doesn't recognize it yet.

「T-that's too farfetched!」

「Are you still saying that. You entrusted me Misha who's most important to you, you left Misha, the only one who could understand you, to me, you believed that I would understand you didn't you?」

「Wrong! I said it that time, you were weak!」

「That's not wrong. You're a timid girl who dreams to be a princess being saved by a prince. And yet, you took figure of the witch and you hid your weak self desperately. I know everything」

She's really a troublesome woman. In the first place, there's no woman who calls herself with boku.<sup>1</sup> If you change the wording thoroughly, such words isn't used.

「T-then what about it!? Are you saying that you're going to save me!? If you don't have that ability you're just a normal person, are you saying that you can release me from my suffering!?!」

「I can. Since I can, you're attached to me. That's why, it's already fine. Admit your defeat, matifa」

「There's no way I'd admit that! In the first place you don't even know what I'm suffering! That's why you stabbed me to death!!」

Matifa is still whining. It seems she doesn't forgive me for stabbing her.

That's equal to a betrayal for Matifa that wished for salvation. Since Matifa betrayed me before that, I don't mind it anymore, but is lip service needed here?

「You're right. I thought that it's best to put an end to your long life. But, I was wrong. I'll honestly apologize about that. I'm sorry」

「Then what are you going to do? Everyone runs away from knowing they can't kill me. Are you going to run away from me too?」

Matifa asked anxiously. She probably experienced it a lot in the past. She's just a foolish woman for learning nothing from there.

I hugged Matifa and whispered in her ear to reassure her.

「I won't run. Though I'm confident in running away, I won't escape from you anymore. I'll be with you until I die. There's no need to be afraid any longer」

「T-T-T-Then you have to prove it!」

「How?」

「C-Contract! A contract that we'll be together for lifetime!」

「Very well. Look at me, let's do it quickly」

「Are you really sure!? You'll never be run away from me anymore?」

「Didn't I tell you? Hurry up」

Matifa prepared a contract in a hurry. She prepared a cloth of suitable size with magic, she wrote a letter with a quill pen taken out from somewhere. Blood from the fingertip is the ink.

A contract of being together for the lifetime, it's a contract where we

can't go away from each other, we always have to meet every after three days, etc, some bothersome lines were written in a row. It's like an oath of a married couple in marriage. Just how unconfident is this girl to make a tie with this contract.

The final drip of blood dropped, Matifa presented the contract to me.

「T-this is a contract of blood. It's the heaviest among witch's contracts. Your life will be taken if you betrayed. Are you really sure?」

「Look」

I also dripped my blood there. And the preparation was complete.

「Got it. Here it comes」

Matifa chanted some sort of magic. Then, when her chant ended, the contract burned up and didn't leave even ash. At the same time, the content of the contract was carved in my mind.

With this, I can no longer run away from Matifa.

And, Matifa can't run away from me—.

「Thus, the completion of the contract. You can no longer part from me. You hear?」

Matifa approached gladly. Our mood is like of newlyweds. She had a man who understands her for the first time, I can see her go round in festivity.

Seria and Misha also had relief in their faces. This girls are really optimistic.

「Very well. We'll be together forever. ...By the way. Matifa, how old are you?」2

The air froze.

It's the number one question you shouldn't ask a woman. Matifa worries about it in particular. Boos and Magic would've flied in an instant. BUt, there's no reaction.

「W-why did you ask such things?」

「Just tell me」

「!...years old」

Matifa answered softly. But, I can't hear it well.

「I can't hear it」

「...1489 years old!」

Matifa shouted in desperation.

1489 years old——This fellow is close to 1500 years old. Her 300 years in this country is just really a part for her. The experience accumulated is unimaginable for me, she must've suffered.

But, that doesn't matter to me anymore.

「Ha, did you live that long? 1489 years?~ ~~1489 you say. Fuuun」

I annoyingly spoke her age in repetition, Matifa's mood worsens in a



moment.

「You, what's funny?」

「No, because I guess it is? 1489 years old, if you say that I imagine an old hag. To think that you yearn to be a princess— Pupu」

「You! What do you mean by that? What do you want to do by making me angry this late?」

「I don't intend to make you angry. I was just a bit interested. Haa, Still, 1489 years old~」

「Can you shut up already!?!」

Matifa's face is dyed red as she endure the embarrassment. However, she's already at her limit.

「Ah, Sorry, sorry. Because, thinking that a 1489 years old witch wishing for a prince to help her— I can't stop laughing」

「——!! I told you to shut up!!」

Dark magic spouts from Matifa. It's Matifa's real serious magical power. Bathing in it would be dangerous as it's filled with malice. Though it's sucked in by the cursed sword, it won't last long.

「Are you losing your temper because I'm telling the truth? Or is it bulls-eye? Elderly are really hot-tempered~」

「Stop this bullshit!!」

Matifa's black magic begin to take shape. It's a shadow of an ugly woman. It's size is double of an adult but it's body is as thin like a dead

branch. It has a disgusting appearance with it's whole body is entwined with ivy.

Also, it's not just the appearance. A strong thought flows nearby it.

—Envious. Envable. Beauty is enviable. Youth is enviable. Happiness is hated. I want to be beautiful. I want to be young. I want to be popular. I want it to be easy. I want to be happy. Unfair. Unfair. Unfair. Give me beauty. Make me rejuvenate. Don't take the man away. Return the man. Break up happiness. You're just unfair. Hate. I'll curse you. O I curse you. Suffer. Suffer. Suffer suffer suffer. Go mad. Go mad. Go mad go mad go mad. Break. Break. Break. Die. Die. Drop dead. Go mad and fall to hell—.

The ugly woman screams envy. An ordinary man would go insane hearing it.

This true nature of suffering Matifa is understandable even if it's unpleasant. Matifa had lived up until now burdened with envy of women who's not burdened.

「HI! What's this!?!」

「Mu, Master, that's dangerous!!」

Seria used all her power and fired her magical power to protect herself as she can't move in order to resist. Misha also came down and went to my side.

「Don't worry. Also, Misha, I'll borrow it」

「Mya?」

I removed Misha's choker smoothly. Then, I turned to Matifa once again.

Matifa stared at me with her dark colored pupil. Her face is just as ugly as the monster in the back. It's prominent that it's repulsive because the origin is beautiful.

「Matifa's true character finally showed up. It was easy to trick. Did I look like a prince? There's no way I'd be」

I throw a joke at the enraged Matifa. Whatever kind of monster would appear, my superiority won't change.

「I finally understood your nature. I was foolish. You merely played and teased me. I guess you not being able to use your teleportation is just a lie? Making me angry, you intend to break my mind. Your ways are cowardly. —I don't care, you can kill me right now!!」

Matifa's surrounding has a cursing magical power blowing violently.

I made Misha step back and I confronted Matifa one-on-one.

「Well then, Matifa. I'll say it again. You're defeated by me and you'll be mine. This is the fixed future. Then, I'll be saving you in the truest sense」

「Don't lie!」

「Your contract can judge whether I lie or not. If you think it's a lie, then attack. You can't right? If I got killed, you can't pay me」

Matifa hadn't paid for the information yet. And her compensation is piled up from the start of the battle.

It's not just the prophecy of Matifa's defeat. Matifa who hadn't noticed the real intention of me sharing information about my ability, I tied Matifa's behavior with various things that became debts.

Furthermore, earlier, we had signed a contract with unclear meaning of us being together as always. It's possible to end this one-sidedly.

「Why!? Why I can't attack!?!」

「I told you right? You can't attack me. In my world there's something called 'A curse will rebound on yourself as well', the curse returned to yourself too. Isn't your contract also one kind of Witch's magic? Since you bound me up, you yourself is also bound. If you think of attacking me, you must pay a compensation first. It's a compensation to get the future you desire」

「Are you telling me to give myself up to you!? There's no way I can do that!」

「It's not about whether you can do it or not. You have no choice but to do it. You're a witch that can't break a contract. And, I already told you the information you wanted the most, the method to save you. No matter how much magical power you summon up, it's the reason for your defeat」

That's right, it concluded from the beginning. What's left is the finishing touches.

「Is there such method to rescue me!?!」

「Well fine. You won't understand it no matter what I say. That's why, I'll do it by force」

I made a step to approach Matifa. The dense magical power's curse can eat a heart. A magical power to curse people with jealousy and envy. My head is attacked and disturbed by an intense headache.

Cold sweat spouts from my whole body and I began to tremble.

Seeing me suffer, Matifa shouted.

「There's no way you can! You do not understand the essence of the thing called magic!!」

「Then tell me. What is this ugly monster?」

「It's an incarnation of jealousy. It's magic distorts the world itself. Uncertain thing, fantasy and delusion, in other words, illusion. It takes form from collective thoughts, it's magical power doesn't have a form from the distortion of the world<sup>3</sup> If the clear substance and natural phenomenon is used as basis, a realistic phenomenon occurs. Then, if pure emotions gather, an incarnation of divine spirit is born」

What's on Matifa's back is the jealousy of minds all over the world that was born into existence. No doubt it has a suitable ugliness and power.

「I was born beautiful. Furthermore, being the incarnation of the rejuvenation magic and eternal youth, I have gathered the envy all over the world. Then, the incarnation of envy resided in me. This is my source of power and my life enemy. There's no way an ordinary man can do something about it!」

Matifa screamed. A woman who received envy, her heart continued to be ruined. She probably broke in the past. And, Matifa asking for help was born. As she's unable to die, she kept waiting for someone she doesn't know when will appear.

「If you listen to it you'll understand. It's a noisy fellow. Annoying」

「If it's annoying then end it!」

「I'll do. You probably don't know how to deal with envy from those

guys.」

If I know the true character, there would be plenty of ways to deal with it. Envy receiving praise, laughing it off, ignoring it completely, or being famous around. But, I don't like those methods. Those methods makes you look down on your opponent. To the lowest human, does the lowest method.

「What are you going to do!?!」

「I'll do this」

Then, I covered myself with Matifa's cursed panties.

- 
1. I did mention it before, she refers herself with boku, it's usually used by young boys ←
  2. RUN! RUUUUUN! ←
  3. 形を持たない世界の歪みは魔力となり、思いを集めて形を作るんだ。←

## Chapter 48: The lowermost worst winner #

「Wha! Are you joking with me!?!」

「Wait, what are you wearing!」

「Master?」

The three women raised their voices in astonishment.

Is me wearing panties so surprising? Misha and Matifa had already seen me do this already though.

「I'm not joking. Matifa, I'm going to teach the foolish you how to deal with envy. It'll be clownish. Envy is so absurdly foolish that you became an idiot. So I'll solve it」

Human doesn't envy someone lower than human. Instead, they pity them.

That's a part of it, still, there's some that human envies but most of it is normal hostility. That sort of feeling isn't called envy, and it's not suitable for the incarnation of jealousy.

But, Matifa doesn't understand.

「There's no such thing! I was hurt and I hid my face up until now. But, it doesn't change at all!」

「Well that's true. A blessed person harms himself to attracts someone's attention. Do you think your partner would feel better?」

Matifa surely is likely to do it. Hurting herself, then she'll say 'I'm pitiful' I hate that needless thing.

I walked through her magical power to prove my words. The envy's magical power eats spirit. It made me feel weak. In face I feel that I'm avoided.

「Why!? Why are you still fine!?!」

Matifa shouted. I guess the manifestation of incarnation by magical power is something a human can't stand. Even I am not fine.

If this is a pure hatred and aggressive magical power, I won't be able to hold it. But it's easier for me to endure this magical power as the direction of envy is fixed.

There's nothing in me to be envious about. Also, I originally acted by putting my life on the line. No matter how much envy I received, I won't lose my mind.

「Matifa, it was also like this when we first met, right? You showed of unreasonably and we fooled around. That's fine」

Matifa can't do anything to me who approaches her. Though it's possible for her to manipulate and blow me away on the degree where I won't die, but she can't do it.

She's not just tied by the contract.

Because I who doesn't have magical power endures the magic of envy, she can't help but feel uneasy. Can you really do nothing about this magical power? Expect that there will be.

I will live up to that expectations.

I reached Matifa's front at last, then I made my last verdict to Matifa.

「Then, should Matifa be happy too?」



「W-what are you going to do!?!」

「Become my slave」

Then, I put the choker I removed from Misha a while ago. This has a slave contract. Under normal circumstances, Matifa is only tied by a contract. If I add the slave contract, Matifa would be my cute servant that no longer needs to pay the compensation. She'll be a perverted servant.

Thinking what's after this my face naturally grinned. The magic influenced and made my groin hot.

Ah, I want to rape her soon. I want to enjoy this cute face distorted in shame1

「D-Don't come!」

Matifa tries to run away from me but the incarnation from her behind blocks her. Matifa was restricted by a dead branch from her back.

It seems that this guy also wants Matifa to fall. Women's envy is fearful as expected.

「Why!?! Why are you obstructing me!!」

Matifa is confused2 Being betrayed by her own magic, Matifa has no more cards to play.

Then, I'll be doing it without reserve.

「Hoitto」

「Stooooooooop!!」

I wrapped the choker around the pure white neck of Matifa who can no longer move. A crest erode Matifa's body and rose up, then it disappeared right after. In response to that, the incarnation on her back disappeared along with the clone and the low class demons.

The contract is completed. That Matifa is now really mine.

「Okay! You now belong to the fool's group! How's it? Becoming a slave of a pervert that is covered in panties?」

「It's the worst! Misha, stop this fool!」

Matifa didn't care about her appearance and asked help from Misha. Misha's ears fell flat then she apologized.

「I'm sorry, Matifa-sama. You're mistaken about Misha」

It seems that Misha didn't think of me making Matifa my slave too. But, she doesn't intend to be Matifa's ally. Rather than that, if Matifa is freed, the monster might come out again so she doesn't meddle. Matifa is out of cards already.

The fight is concluded. I certainly won against Matifa. That cheat class Matifa.

My laughter naturally welled up. My body trembles in delight. I shout to my hearts content.

「Fufufu, fuahahahaha! How's it, Matifa!? You became mine just like I predicted! This is my victory! This is my win! Haahahaha!!」

I put both of my hands up high and declared my perfect victory.

If I add Matifa on my subordinates, there's no more person I need to be afraid of in this castle. Even Lion, Matifa can deal with him in one way or another. From this moment, the hidden ruler of this Rasuhairu kingdom's castle changes from Matifa to me, Kirishima Ren! I don't need to act prudent! I'll build my harem here!

「Congratulations Master」

「Ou, I also thank you Misha」

The joy of victory is shared with Misha. Misha really did well. I won because Misha is here.

「Then, what happens next?」

「Isn't that obvious? Feast. Idiots! Shall we begin the feast!?!」

Looking at me laughing in ecstasy, Seria asked anxiously.

「W-what are you going to do?」

Matifa is still tied in chains. It's figure is similar when I took Seria's virginity. Showing such an appearance, then you're going to ask me what I'm going to do?

「Isn't it obvious? It's orgy, Orgy! Rejoice women! I'm inexhaustible today!!」

I can now do Matifa freely. If I put on this perverted panties, if I run out

of magical power, I would be supplied with it again. Scars and fatigue of my body doesn't matter. I'm going to fuck you three until I can't move anymore!

Misha who heard my declaration, murmured in amazement.

「Misha is really mistaken. Master isn't just a fool, he's a big fool」

「Misha calmly butt-in the situation! I don't want to be embraced by this man by all means!」

Then, Matifa refused. She finally understood the man called me it seems. Although she fucked me by herself up until now, what a great change happened. This happens if you don't look at your partner properly.

「Ha, too late! Matifa, first order! Suck!」

「Mugu!」

I took out my rock hard penis and thrust it into Matifa's small mouth. She was sucking my semen by herself previously but right now, Matifa refuses me and tries to run away with all her power. But, the contract doesn't allow her to escape.

「N~~~~!! Ngu!! Nooo!!」

Holding the teary-eyed Matifa, I forcibly moved her back and forth. Something like a scream leaks out whenever the glans hit the throat but I ignored it anyway. Matifa secreted saliva regardless of her will, it became slippery gradually. Matifa's small throat tightening my glans up feels good.

「What's wrong, Matifa? You sucked it before right? If you do it like before, you'll be able to drink semen immediately, Hora hora」

My grudge on Matifa accumulated. I'm angry when she dried me up on Seria's room that time. Matifa will never understand my feelings around that time. I'm going to avenge myself right now!

When I violated Matifa's mouth, Seria got angry this time.

「What are you doing!! That's the worst! Please stop that!!」

「I'll do you soon so don't worry. Misha, since you're free, play with Seria. That's right, teach her anal pleasure too」

「Un, got it」

Misha reacted with the word anal. I took out the enema that I took from Matifa's room and sidle it up to Seria.

「Y-You're called Misha-chan? What are you going to do with that?」

「It's fine. It's a pleasurable thing」

「Please wait a moment. Can you remove the chains before that? Hey, please?」

「But. Master, what to do?」

Misha asked me. When I made Matifa my slave, Misha is already freed but she still intends to be my slave. Then my answer is decided.

「Of course, let her stay like that. Other than that, Misha can do what she likes. When it gets dirty, Matifa can clean it」

「Un, got it」

Misha set up the syringe-like tool and turned back to Seria.

「Wait, what are you going to do with that? Hey, can you stop? You shouldn't listen to that kind of person. Hey, wait, hey!? Where are you touching!? That place! Hyaaaaaaa!!」

Misha thrust it in Seria's ass like a child crushing a bug. Seria's screamed at the same time.

「Stop! Something's entering!! Noo! Stoop!!」

「It's Matifa-sama's special magical colorless and odorless liquid so it's fine. There's no need to be ashamed!」

「I don't understand!! What's this!! What are you doing—!!」

Seria doesn't understand the meaning of enema. Her appearance went past pitiable and it's funny. Misha hums as she pours the mysterious liquid inside Seria's ass, she pulled out the syringe happily.

「Endure it. Do your best!」

「Ya, wait, my stomach!」

Gyururururu~ Seria's stomach sounded. Seria tightens up her anus and desperately endured the urge to defecate.

Misha threw away the contents of the vase that's between the wall from the window, she brought it along with the flag. It seems she's going to use it for disposal.

「Look at it Matifa. That form of Seria. It would be your turn next」

「Nn! Naa! Fuaa, fuaawawofuufuaa!!」

「I don't get what you're talking about」

Every time Matifa tries to say something my penis is tightened up and it feels good. I feel my semen accumulating. There's no need to endure it today. In fact, since there's three people, I have to pound and release it.

I piston Matifa's mouth with the intention of ejaculating from the beginning. Though Matifa doesn't like it, she's made to serve forcibly by the contract. Her throat's interior shuts tight the penis too big for her body, jurururu, she sucked it.

「Very well, Matifa. I'm going to pour it inside your throat directly」

「N~~~!!」

「Oo, coming out!!」

I forcibly made her mouth hold my base at the end then ejaculated in her esophagus. Dopyu, byururu, the semen increased by magic overflows.

The veteran Matifa endured the violent blowjob, she drank a large amount of semen. However, her face is bright red in suffocation, her breath had fallen in disorder.

「Okay, Matifa. Should we go for another round then?」

「Nn~~~~~!!!!!!!」

With the penis that doesn't wither, I continued Matifa's blowjob.

Matifa's beautiful face is soiled with tears, she was forced to serve me.

It's possible that it's her first time crying. I'm going to cum on that face.

Meanwhile, the condition of Seria's stomach is getting worse. Her tone turned desperate as she asks for help.

「M-Misha-chan. Please. Please cut this chains. My stomach is...」

「Not yet. A bit more」

「I-I'm at my limit already... I beg you, let me go to the toilet」

「No」

It's about to climax there. Misha counts the time while hitting the floor. Seria rubs her feet together desperately. Then, the long waited time came.

「N, it's time. Seria-sama, it's okay」

「It's not okay!! Please cut the chains!」

Misha sets up the vase on the Seria who dislikes it. It's degree of difficulty is too high for the princess who leaked in public. Misha is incredible as she happily force it. As I thought before, this girl is definitely a sadist.

「Seria, take it out. Don't worry, I'll be looking at you properly」

「Please stop it!! Do you think I'll permit such things!?!」

「It's fine. I'm an unforgivable guy that rapes thoroughly. Just like her」

「Fugu! Igiiiiiii!!」

Seeing Matifa having her throat stabbed, Seria raised her voice in



protest.

「Stop that! Are you still a human!?!」

「Haha. It's not time to worry if I'm a human. Misha, do it」

「Got it」

When I ordered her, Misha began to attack Seria's anus without mercy. Holding the vase on her one hand, her other hand is grinding against and fiddles Seria's groin.

「Hyawaa! Aaaaa! Ma, hiie, don't! Don't do it!! Aaaaaaaaaa!!」

Seria surrendered to Misha's anal attack. It's really a magical liquid, colorless water spilled from her ass. Processing it is easy.

「Higu...This...can't be...eguu... I can't be a bride anymore!  
Uwaaaaaaan!!」

Seria cries. It seems the shock is greater than rape.

Matifa behind her is having a satisfied expression. When Misha finished processing it skillfully, she came here this time. Of course, she's holding the enema. It would look interesting if she wore nurse clothes.

「Next would be Matifa-sama. Let's feel good together」

「Hafuee! Hahihaafuee!!」

「Ou, calm down Matifa」

Matifa tried to resist but, she can't do it anymore as I ordered her. Misha took off Matifa's panties and she thrust in the syringe-type enema on her cute ass.

「Fuoooooooo!!!」

While her mouth is being violated, Misha violate Matifa's ass.

Misha is doing it perfectly with good intentions. This is the outcome of Matifa's distortion education.

「Very well Matifa. I'm going to cum my second time」

「Hafuue! Uguu!!」

Byururu, my semen entered Matifa's mouth again. Matifa pulls out her face in rejection but I hold her down with both of my hands. When I let out everything, I pinched the nose of the refusing Matifa and made her drink it by force.

「Keho, Keho5! You!! Stop this shit!! Misha too!!」

「Don't mind it Misha. Clean it immediately」

「Un」

Though Matifa disagrees, she can't do anything against the power of the enema. Without being able to resist, Misha injected the enema.

「Done」

「Ugu, you guys, remember this. I'll definitely curse and kill you!」

Crawling on all fours, Matifa is bravely holding her stomach. There's also the sound of gyurururu heard in her stomach.

Seria that's a bit far away is crying, Misha began to take off her clothes as it's her turn to enjoy next. I also stripped and the panties on my head remained.

It's a chaotic situation. There's no decent human being here. Although I just put my life on the line a while ago, right now I'm only a wild beast filled with sexual desire.

I reduced the most noble place in this country, disgraced the audience, there's no longer a fragment of solemnity.

I, as the winner of this fight has decided to exhaust myself and overrun this chaotic place.

[\[Previous\]](#)–[\[ToC\]](#)–[\[Next\]](#)

That's my boy! ↵

Matifa hurts herself in confusion ↵

It means shitting ↵

The great tree!! ↵

Cough ↵Chapter 48: The lowermost worst winner #

「Wha! Are you joking with me!?!」

「Wait, what are you wearing!」

「Master?」

The three women raised their voices in astonishment.

Is me wearing panties so surprising? Misha and Matifa had already seen me do this already though.

「I'm not joking. Matifa, I'm going to teach the foolish you how to deal with envy. It'll be clownish. Envy is so absurdly foolish that you became an idiot. So I'll solve it」

Human doesn't envy someone lower than human. Instead, they pity them.

That's a part of it, still, there's some that human envies but most of it is normal hostility. That sort of feeling isn't called envy, and it's not suitable for the incarnation of jealousy.

But, Matifa doesn't understand.

「There's no such thing! I was hurt and I hid my face up until now. But, it doesn't change at all!」

「Well that's true. A blessed person harms himself to attracts someone's attention. Do you think your partner would feel better?」

Matifa surely is likely to do it. Hurting herself, then she'll say 'I'm pitiful' I hate that needless thing.

I walked through her magical power to prove my words. The envy's magical power eats spirit. It made me feel weak. In face I feel that I'm avoided.

「Why!? Why are you still fine!?」

Matifa shouted. I guess the manifestation of incarnation by magical power is something a human can't stand. Even I am not fine.

If this is a pure hatred and aggressive magical power, I won't be able to hold it. But it's easier for me to endure this magical power as the direction of envy is fixed.

There's nothing in me to be envious about. Also, I originally acted by putting my life on the line. No matter how much envy I received, I won't lose my mind.

「Matifa, it was also like this when we first met, right? You showed of unreasonably and we fooled around. That's fine」

Matifa can't do anything to me who approaches her. Though it's possible for her to manipulate and blow me away on the degree where I won't die, but she can't do it.

She's not just tied by the contract.

Because I who doesn't have magical power endures the magic of envy, she can't help but feel uneasy. Can you really do nothing about this magical power? Expect that there will be.

I will live up to that expectations.

I reached Matifa's front at last, then I made my last verdict to Matifa.

「Then, should Matifa be happy too?」

「W-what are you going to do!?!」

「Become my slave」

Then, I put the choker I removed from Misha a while ago. This has a slave contract. Under normal circumstances, Matifa is only tied by a contract. If I add the slave contract, Matifa would be my cute servant that no longer needs to pay the compensation. She'll be a perverted servant.

Thinking what's after this my face naturally grinned. The magic

influenced and made my groin hot.

Ah, I want to rape her soon. I want to enjoy this cute face distorted in shame<sup>1</sup>

「D-Don't come!」

Matifa tries to run away from me but the incarnation from her behind blocks her. Matifa was restricted by a dead branch from her back.

It seems that this guy also wants Matifa to fall. Women's envy is fearful as expected.

「Why!? Why are you obstructing me!!」

Matifa is confused<sup>2</sup> Being betrayed by her own magic, Matifa has no more cards to play.

Them, I'll be doing it without reserve.

「Hoitto」

「Stooooooooop!!」

I wrapped the choker around the pure white neck of Matifa who can no longer move. A crest erode Matifa's body and rose up, then it disappeared right after. In response to that, the incarnation on her back disappeared along with the clone and the low class demons.

The contract is completed. That Matifa is now really mine.

「Okay! You now belong to the fool's group! How's it? Becoming a slave of a pervert that is covered in panties?」

「It's the worst! Misha, stop this fool!」

Matifa didn't care about her appearance and asked help from Misha. Misha's ears fell flat then she apologized.

「I'm sorry, Matifa-sama. You're mistaken about Misha」

It seems that Misha didn't think of me making Matifa my slave too. But, she doesn't intend to be Matifa's ally. Rather than that, if Matifa is freed, the monster might come out again so she doesn't meddle. Matifa is out of cards already.

The fight is concluded. I certainly won against Matifa. That cheat class Matifa.

My laughter naturally welled up. My body trembles in delight. I shout to my hearts content.

「Fufufu, fuahahahaha! How's it, Matifa!? You became mine just like I predicted! This is my victory! This is my win! Haahahaha!!」

I put both of my hands up high and declared my perfect victory.

If I add Matifa on my subordinates, there's no more person I need to be afraid of in this castle. Even Lion, Matifa can deal with him in one way or another. From this moment, the hidden ruler of this Rasuhairu kingdom's castle changes from Matifa to me, Kirishima Ren! I don't need to act prudent! I'll build my harem here!

「Congratulations Master」

「Ou, I also thank you Misha」

The joy of victory is shared with Misha. Misha really did well. I won because Misha is here.

「Then, what happens next?」

「Isn't that obvious? Feast. Idiots! Shall we begin the feast!?!」

Looking at me laughing in ecstasy, Seria asked anxiously.

「W-what are you going to do?」

Matifa is still tied in chains. It's figure is similar when I took Seria's virginity. Showing such an appearance, then you're going to ask me what I'm going to do?

「Isn't it obvious? It's orgy, Orgy! Rejoice women! I'm inexhaustible today!!」

I can now do Matifa freely. If I put on this perverted panties, if I run out of magical power, I would be supplied with it again. Scars and fatigue of my body doesn't matter. I'm going to fuck you three until I can't move anymore!

Misha who heard my declaration, murmured in amazement.

「Misha is really mistaken. Master isn't just a fool, he's a big fool」

「Misha calmly butt-in the situation! I don't want to be embraced by this man by all means!」



Then, Matifa refused. She finally understood the man called me it seems. Although she fucked me by herself up until now, what a great change happened. This happens if you don't look at your partner properly.

「Ha, too late! Matifa, first order! Suck!」

「Mugu!」

I took out my rock hard penis and thrust it into Matifa's small mouth. She was sucking my semen by herself previously but right now, Matifa refuses me and tries to run away with all her power. But, the contract doesn't allow her to escape.

「N~~~~!! Ngu!! Nooo!!」

Holding the teary-eyed Matifa, I forcibly moved her back and forth. Something like a scream leaks out whenever the glans hit the throat but I ignored it anyway. Matifa secreted saliva regardless of her will, it became slippery gradually. Matifa's small throat tightening my glans up feels good.

「What's wrong, Matifa? You sucked it before right? If you do it like before, you'll be able to drink semen immediately, Hora hora」

My grudge on Matifa accumulated. I'm angry when she dried me up on Seria's room that time. Matifa will never understand my feelings around that time. I'm going to avenge myself right now!

When I violated Matifa's mouth, Seria got angry this time.

「What are you doing!! That's the worst! Please stop that!!」

「I'll do you soon so don't worry. Misha, since you're free, play with Seria. That's right, teach her anal pleasure too」

「Un, got it」

Misha reacted with the word anal. I took out the enema that I took from Matifa's room and slide it up to Seria.

「Y-You're called Misha-chan? What are you going to do with that?」

「It's fine. It's a pleasurable thing」

「Please wait a moment. Can you remove the chains before that? Hey, please?」

「But. Master, what to do?」

Misha asked me. When I made Matifa my slave, Misha is already freed but she still intends to be my slave. Then my answer is decided.

「Of course, let her stay like that. Other than that, Misha can do what she likes. When it gets dirty, Matifa can clean it」

「Un, got it」

Misha set up the syringe-like tool and turned back to Seria.

「Wait, what are you going to do with that? Hey, can you stop? You shouldn't listen to that kind of person. Hey, wait, hey!? Where are you touching!? That place! Hyaaaaaaa!!」

Misha thrust it in Seria's ass like a child crushing a bug. Seria's screamed at the same time.

「Stop! Something's entering!! Noo! Stoop!!」

「It's Matifa-sama's special magical colorless and odorless liquid so it's fine. There's no need to be ashamed!」

「I don't understand!! What's this!! What are you doing—!!」

Seria doesn't understand the meaning of enema. Her appearance went past pitiable and it's funny. Misha hums as she pours the mysterious liquid inside Seria's ass, she pulled out the syringe happily.

「Endure it. Do your best!」

「Ya, wait, my stomach!」

Gyururururu~ Seria's stomach sounded. Seria tightens up her anus and desperately endured the urge to defecate.

Misha threw away the contents of the vase that's between the wall from the window, she brought it along with the flag. It seems she's going to use it for disposal.

「Look at it Matifa. That form of Seria. It would be your turn next!」

「Nn! Naa! Fuaa, fuaawawofuufuaa!!」

「I don't get what you're talking about!」

Every time Matifa tries to say something my penis is tightened up and it feels good. I feel my semen accumulating. There's no need to endure it

today. In fact, since there's three people, I have to pound and release it.

I piston Matifa's mouth with the intention of ejaculating from the beginning. Though Matifa doesn't like it, she's made to serve forcibly by the contract. Her throat's interior shuts tight the penis too big for her body, jurururu, she sucked it.

「Very well, Matifa. I'm going to pour it inside your throat directly」

「N~~~!!」

「Oo, coming out!!」

I forcibly made her mouth hold my base at the end then ejaculated in her esophagus. Dopyu, byururu, the semen increased by magic overflows.

The veteran Matifa endured the violent blowjob, she drank a large amount of semen. However, her face is bright red in suffocation, her breath had fallen in disorder.

「Okay, Matifa. Should we go for another round then?」

「Nn~~~~~!!!!!!!」

With the penis that doesn't wither, I continued Matifa's blowjob.

Matifa's beautiful face is soiled with tears, she was forced to serve me. It's possible that it's her first time crying. I'm going to cum on that face.

Meanwhile, the condition of Seria's stomach is getting worse. Her tone turned desperate as she asks for help.

「M-Misha-chan. Please. Please cut this chains. My stomach is...」

「Not yet. A bit more」

「I-I'm at my limit already... I beg you, let me go to the toilet」

「No」

It's about to climax there. Misha counts the time while hitting the floor. Seria rubs her feet together desperately. Then, the long waited time came.

「N, it's time. Seria-sama, it's okay」

「It's not okay!! Please cut the chains!」

Misha sets up the vase on the Seria who dislikes it. It's degree of difficulty is too high for the princess who leaked in public. Misha is incredible as she happily force it. As I thought before, this girl is definitely a sadist.

「Seria, take it out. Don't worry, I'll be looking at you properly」

「Please stop it!! Do you think I'll permit such things!?!」

「It's fine. I'm an unforgivable guy that rapes thoroughly. Just like her」

「Fugu! Igiiiiii!!」

Seeing Matifa having her throat stabbed, Seria raised her voice in protest.

「Stop that! Are you still a human!?!」

「Haha. It's not time to worry if I'm a human. Misha, do it」

「Got it」

When I ordered her, Misha began to attack Seria's anus without mercy.

Holding the vase on her one hand, her other hand is grinding against and fiddles Seria's groin.

「Hyawaa! Aaaaa! Ma, hiie, don't! Don't do it!! Aaaaaaaaaa!!」

Seria surrendered to Misha's anal attack. It's really a magical liquid, colorless water spilled from her ass. Processing it is easy.

「Higu...This...can't be...eguu... I can't be a bride anymore! Uwaaaaaaan!!」

Seria cries. It seems the shock is greater than rape.

Matifa behind her is having a satisfied expression. When Misha finished processing it skillfully, she came here this time. Of course, she's holding the enema. It would look interesting if she wore nurse clothes.

「Next would be Matifa-sama. Let's feel good together」

「Hafuee! Hahihaafuee!!」

「Ou, calm down Matifa」

Matifa tried to resist but, she can't do it anymore as I ordered her. Misha took off Matifa's panties and she thrust in the syringe-type enema on her cute ass.

「Fuoooooooo!!!」

While her mouth is being violated, Misha violate Matifa's ass.

Misha is doing it perfectly with good intentions. This is the outcome of Matifa's distortion education.

「Very well Matifa. I'm going to cum my second time」

「Hafuue! Uguu!!」

Byururu, my semen entered Matifa's mouth again. Matifa pulls out her face in rejection but I hold her down with both of my hands. When I let out everything, I pinched the nose of the refusing Matifa and made her drink it by force.

「Keho, Keho5! You!! Stop this shit!! Misha too!!」

「Don't mind it Misha. Clean it immediately」

「Un」

Though Matifa disagrees, she can't do anything against the power of the enema. Without being able to resist, Misha injected the enema.

「Done」

「Ugu, you guys, remember this. I'll definitely curse and kill you!」

Crawling on all fours, Matifa is bravely holding her stomach. There's also the sound of gyurururu heard in her stomach.

Seria that's a bit far away is crying, Misha began to take off her clothes as it's her turn to enjoy next. I also stripped and the panties on my head remained.

It's a chaotic situation. There's no decent human being here. Although I just put my life on the line a while ago, right now I'm only a wild beast

filled with sexual desire.

I reduced the most noble place in this country, disgraced the audience, there's no longer a fragment of solemnity.

I, as the winner of this fight has decided to exhaust myself and overrun this chaotic place.

---

1. That's my boy! ↩
2. Matifa hurts herself in confusion ↩
3. It means shitting ↩
4. The great tree!! ↩
5. Cough ↩



## Chapter 49: Feast ##

The four of us continued the frenzy.

I forbid Matifa who kept on cursing to use magic and made her endure to the limit.

Still, she doesn't give up, she glared at me with angry eyes. But, that's trivial resistance. Just toying with her a bit and she breaks easily.

Then, I issued an order to the broken Matifa.

「Matifa, can you make a dildo?」

「Is it something like your thing?」

「Guessing it right saves time. That's right, make three」

Matifa still tries to resist but the slave contract tortures her body every time she does. Her urge to defecate already reached the limit. Any more resistance is impossible.

「That's right, also the magic that makes my body sensitive. Use that too」

「Are you a demon?」

「That's right. Just do it」

「Kuh, remember this!」

Matifa used debris marble as material and made a dildo that's not different from my thing. It's delicate finish is artistic.

「Good job. Misha, ease it up」

「Got it」

「Wait, I can handle my own! That's why let me use my magic!」

「Matifa-sama, get refreshed」

「No way——!!」

Matifa screams as Misha made her pee mercilessly. Seria and Matifa's scream reverb between the audience.

「Good job Misha. Come here, it's your reward. Then do Seria after」

「Got it」

I passed the two dildos to Misha.

「Ah, don't put it inside her anus yet. I'll be the one taking her anal virginity」

「Mu, can't be helped. Then, Master, Misha will insert it」

Saying that, Misha put it in her anus. 'Yare Yare', he thought, the dildo was screwed in there.

「Myooooo! This is amazing, it's ripping!」

「It had such magic. Now go」

「Un!」

Misha held the dildo and returned to Seria. She's jumping up and down, squealing because the dildo would stick in her ass I guess. Misha in high tension is unstoppable. Seria's hardship continues.

I want to do Seria too but today's main dish is Matifa. Although Misha made her leak out, the appearance is completely water. The perfectly clean Matifa lies down on the floor miserably.

I lift one of Matifa's foot and confirmed the condition of her pussy. Not wet nor loose at all. The small young pussy is tightly closed, refusing everyone. As expected, Matifa's obscene part is beautiful.

「Don't look! I don't want to have sex with you anymore!!」

「I don't care. I'm going to do what I want」

Ignoring the teary Matifa's rejection, without reserve, I thrust in my erect penis inside her vagina.

It's the vagina that squeezed semen out of me multiple times up until now, but today's hole is different. Her completely not loose vagina tightens up my double. It stiffens so hard to refuse me, but the resistance was squeezing it instead.

「Higiii!!」

「Haha, what's wrong? If you don't resist even more, all of it will go in!」

Forcibly inserting my penis on the beautiful girl who doesn't want is absurdly arousing. Not to mention my partner is that Matifa. Making a fucking cheat class beautiful girl is the best.

I thought of it before but she's really suited with me in sex. I love the conquest sense by violating a beautiful girl that dislikes it. In that sense, Seria and Matifa fits my taste.

「Guuuu! Stop this! I have no intention to have sex with you!」

「Resist more if you don't want it. Though you can't!」

I ripped off Matifa's goth loli dress roughly. I didn't take it off politely like before.

While sucking on her exposed thin chest, I accelerate the penetration of my hips bit by bit. The vagina that refused me is attacked mercilessly. The resistance makes me fired up instead. I forced my glans to the refusing Matifa's soft flesh and made it slip through inside. Rubbing up her vaginal walls, even she hates it she's getting wet.

「Fuaaa! You, stop, stop this!!」

「Nooope. I'm going even further」

「Haaunn! Ah, Ahn! Aaaa!!」

Matifa's beautiful doll-like face distorts as she endure it desperately. Right now, pain wins against pleasure. But, I don't mind. This witch needs to experience a bit of pain. This is her training as a slave.

I pursuit Matifa further. I pressed the dildo she made a while ago in her small anus and made it slip forcibly.

「Fugiiiiiiii! It hurts! You, wait! You can't do that! That thing won't go in!!」

「It entered Misha so it should be fine. Look, I'm going even faster」

「Stoop! Ouch! Uaaaaaaaaa!!」

Ignoring Matifa's screams, the anus at the center of her snow-white ass is forcibly opened. It wasn't loosened with a lubricant but it should be all right. She would also experience the pleasure I taught Misha.

Thinking that I made the dildo dig her anus but it doesn't go in easily. The glans part was buried halfway, Matifa's anus is likely to split.

「Uguuuu!! Any further than that is impossible. Give up」

Matifa spun those words in pain.

But, I don't have that character where I would give up at this level. If pushing is impossible then I'll pull it. I weakened the pushing force of the dildo. Matifa felt relieved for a moment. That moment, I forcibly pushed it in one stroke.

「Igtaaaaaaaaaaaaa!! Uaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Matifa faints in agony from too much stimulation. The dildo is buried to the root. But her anus isn't spit apart so it's fine.

「Ah, sorry sorry. My hand slipped」

「Y-You. I won't forgive you. I'll never forgive you!!」

「Ah, well that's fine. Aside from that, how's it? Getting your ass violated feels good right?」

「There's no way I'd feel good! This is just torture!」

「Is that so? But your vagina is already wet though」

Her body is being honest. With the sensitivity increase magic embedded on the dildo, Matifa's vagina began to secrete love nectar. Her countless folds swell and twines around my penis. When I pierce even further, her uterus sticks to it wishing for semen.

「Fuua! Aaa! Ah, you can't! For me to! It's wrong! For me to feel it!!  
Naaaaa!!!」

Both of Matifa's holes is being attacked. I know the power of this magic well. The pleasure is amplified multipole times that it's like a drug that dissolves your brain. No matter how much you resist, the successive pleasure surging in doesn't allow that.

Even for Matifa, receiving this assault makes her helpless. Her vagina became completely loose, it completely changed to a honey pot that obediently accepts a man's thing. The large amount of love nectar overflows that the dildo and her anus is smeared at the same time.

「Hawaaa! I can't! Don't scrape me so hard!」

Matifa's body twitched. She probably orgasmed lightly.

「You like it with both holes? You want more?」

「No way! This thing! !! Don't know! This makes me strange!! Fuaaaaaa」

Matifa trembled continuously. She's likely to fall in this situation sooner. But, before that...

「I'm going to release my first shot then. Squeeze it tightly」

「Uaaah! Ah! Aaaaaaaa!!」

The two sides of Matifa's small body wears quite a burden. Her vagina with her ass having a dildo being pushed inside feels narrower than usual. I pistoned mercilessly on that tight vagina.

Matifa can no longer resist. Trained to only accept pleasure, Matifa's uterus is being slammed by my glans.

「Naaaaaa!!」

Matifa's back curved as she climaxed. 'Gyuuu', her small vagina tightens my penis pleasantly.

「Cumming!!」

Pushing my glans against her uterus, I released semen on her small womb. Thanks to the peerless panties my semen shows no decline, I vigorously spout it out inside Matifa's womb.

「Aaaaa! It's coming! This man's semen is inside me!! Nooo! Uwaaaaaaa!!」

Matifa repeatedly climax even though she doesn't like it. Her figure falling in disorder is beautiful. To be able to violate this kind of woman as much as I like, it was worth the hardwork.

Releasing all inside, I pulled out my rock hard penis out of Matifa. I plugged the dildo to stop the overflowing semen. Then, I moved my way to the throne and saw Misha completely exhausted.

「What's wrong?」

「Umyaaaa. I was too enthusiactic」

「Haa, Haa, M-Misha-chan, bullied me... Uu...」

It seems that Misha was too frolic. Misha who was sensitive in her ass just became even more sensitive and approached Seria in super high tension. She ignored Seria's protests and thrust it inside her pussy, her breast in front of her shook hard. She rubbed, sucked and massaged the ample breast, she fiddled with her until she was knocked down.

Then, Misha began to pick Seria's anus as she's unable to leave it alone. She also turn up the dildo that's stuck in her anus to pleasure herself, Misha was finally unable to stand and collapsed by herself.

「Misha should rest then. Pull that out from your ass and play with Matifa」

「Nyuu, got it」

Matifa who's gasping and can't move well is on the throne.

Misha took out the dildo from her own ass and inserted it inside Matifa's ass. This girl is really a sadist, she has the same thought circuit as me. Matifa who thought it's finally over had her body jump with the attack on her two holes again.

「Wait, you can't do that! Stop that! 」

「Seria, should you really be worried about other people?」

This girl has a pervert with panties covering his face in front of her but she's still worried about others.

「Because that child aims for the anus so it's dangerous!! If she did that to Matifa-sama, she'll die!! 」

「She won't die. Rather than that, you should worry about yourself」



Seria still remains hung naked. She's now a completely no good princess as she's already accustomed to be seen naked and raped.

「D-Don't come here! I-I won't let you do as you please for today!」

Seria further threatens with magic. But the dildo is still sticking in her crotch.

「I know that's just a bluff. Anyway, you can't move in that state」

Her sensitive body will react if she moves. Doing that makes her magical power scatter easily. The only road left for Seria is to be played by me.

「No way! Why are you doing such a thing!」

「Didn't I tell you before? It's because I want to do it! I can no longer be stopped as I already took down Matifa! I'll also violate you along with Matifa!」

「You're the worst! Are you crazy!?!」

「Yeah, that's right. I'm a genius pervert! I'm being envied by Matifa because I'm cool!」

「That's a lie! Matifa-sama is unrelated, you're just a pervert!!」

Seria trembles as I laugh loudly. I know that Seria is trembling not just because she's frightened. She's trembling as she's enduring the stimulation of the dildo poking her. Sure enough, Seria would forgive me for doing nothing.

「Hyaaun!」

She made a cute scream when I rubbed her breast. Seria can no longer do anything with this. I whispered to her while playing with her completely erect nipples.

「Seria, should we try both sides?」

「Eh? Both? Both you mean, my ass!? Hyaaaaa!!」

When I checked, Seria's anus is loosened well. It's probably because Misha played with it. She's not paying attention and did exploit her anus by herself.

But oh well, I'll forgive her for the thought that she prepared it for me.

I lift one of her foot, I pushed my penis to her anus that had no problem with finger getting in. It's fairly tight but not to the extent where you can't break through. After passing through her hard anus, her inside is flabby and warm. I'm going to go further in just like that.

「Aaa!! Stop, please stop this!! That's the wrong hole!! Naaa!!」

「What's wrong? Does it feel good?」

「I-I don't know. This sense is first time for me, yaaaaa!!」

Though I tried to surge in violently Seria's anus, it served as a stimulation instead and it became a stimulus.

I repeated the piston selfishly. Shaking my dildo and striking her with the dildo, Seria's vagina is stimulated.

Seria's face is sloppy with embarrassment, pain, and pleasure. Dealing with the amplified sensation it seems she doesn't know what's happening

anymore.

But, even though her brain can't process it, her body reacts selfishly. It began to convulse immediately.

「Hyaaa! Aaah! Aa! Aah aaaah! Hyoaaaaa!! aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

She can't speak anymore. She's a princess cumming like crazy from the penis thrusting in her anus. I showed that appearance to Matifa.

「Matifa, look at this. This is the partner you envied. How's it? You want to be like this?」

Matifa who's gasping from Misha's play answered.

「I-I don't know that! I, don't, want to be a, princess! I no longer want it ! Please stop this already!」

Matifa screamed in grief. Her pride, fantasy and hopes are shattered, what's left is just a girl that was raped. That's the current Matifa. Even if there's someone who would sympathize with her, she'd no longer be envied.

Seria can somehow deal with the heartbroken Matifa. This fellow has a personality where she can't leave anyone alone. Doing that, Seria herself would be safe too.

The villain me will take all the responsibility.

It's too late for me anyway. No matter how many sins I pile up, it won't matter anymore.

Incidentally, I raped a beautiful girl in addition to that. It's the highest side benefit. There's no way I'd let them go.

This is my solution. This is the worst method made by me.

There's no more need for assassination. I cancel master's request. He might get angry but I won't get killed.

I have a companion named Misha. The number of toys increased to two. The result can't go above this. Tears seems to flow from the sense of achievement.

I thrust inside Seria's anus to express my delight. The urge to ejaculate welled up. I didn't endure it. There's no need to.

「Here I come, Seria! Catch it with your ass pussy!」

「Yaaaaaaaaa!!」

Dopyu! Dopyu! Byurururu!

I throw it out inside Seria's anus. Seria who's mad from cumming can't scream in the end. It seems she already fainted.

When I pulled out my penis, white semen flowed out from her anus that's open loosely. With this, Seria's anal conquest is complete.

I ordered Misha to cut Seria's chains. The released Seria thought she can rest for a bit and took out the dildo and lied down on the floor.

But wait, there's more<sup>1</sup> It has just started. Relentless lovely voices of women reverb inside the castle of Rasuhairu Kingdom tonight.

## Chapter 50: Matifa Epilogue.

Matifa P.O.V.

When did I refer to myself with boku?

When I swam into the sea of deep deep memory, it was found immediately. It's natural. It was carved into my heart so it won't disappear.

It was when I crossed 150 years old, I went and set foot from human to a inhuman area.

I was a person that's proud of my magic up to that time. I am the old woman named Matifa who cheated life-span by using magic on my own body, that's the me that time. Just afraid to die, it was a foolish woman who wanted to be saved by somebody.

That wish was granted.

At that time, there's a man who was a prince that spoke gently to the wrinkled me.

「Matifa , I will save you. That's why you mustn't die in a place like this」

I feel in love with a man thoughtless of my age. I want to be with that man, I completed magic that doesn't just prolong life but rejuvenate it too.

The finished magic returned me to my beautiful appearance.

That prince was greatly pleased seeing my former peerless beauty.

Then for a while, I was at cloud nine.

I became the prince's concubine due to the difference in status but, the prince loved me. We walk the streets together, kissed at secret locations,

together at the same bed at night.

However, that happiness came to an end before long.

The cause is my magic. I who overcame the absolute life span as a person had my magic rose abnormally and it made a big distortion. It's not a usual magical power. It's magic that's based on negative emotions, such as hatred and envy.

The voice of resentment rings on my head all the time.

That's envious. Envious. Why only her? It's unfair. Even I. Even I. That's too unfair. I want to mess with her. I want to tear of the skin of her face. I'm going to gouge her eyeballs. I'll replace her. Because of her, he. That girl should just die—.

When I'm researching, when eating, even at sleep, there's not a moment where I feel relaxed. And the one who had it grew the biggest is the prince<sup>1</sup>

I asked for the prince's help. It's painful, I want him to comfort me. The prince was positive about me and said:

「You don't need to think about pain alone. I'll shoulder it the same as you. That's why, teach that rejuvenation magic to me」

Of course I thought that magic. But, the prince was unable to learn that magic. The prince's first degree ability in this country isn't enough.

At that time, I finally noticed the true nature of the burden I'm shouldering. It's my eternal beauty. I was carrying that fate since birth. That's why I was able to learn the rejuvenation magic. Thus, I'm the only one who can practice this magic.

The prince was furious when he found that out. The prince didn't want me but the eternal life. That's why he spoke sweetly to the old woman me who completed that magic. Then, I became beautiful as a bonus. That's right, I was just an extra.

The prince was mad with jealousy. He's already mad since long ago.

The prince tried to kill me when I wasn't useful anymore. It was scary. It was very scary. I was afraid that I would die.

That's why, I turned the tables against the prince. That's utterly disappointing. If I who lived for 150 years get serious on the people on the area, the prince of the country could've died easily.

Thus, I killed my own beloved by my own hand.

That time, I suddenly changed.

The abnormally high magic sublimated to the incarnation of jealousy.

The glossy black hair dyed with a pigment then it became white.

I stopped being a sorcerer and became a witch.

That's when I began to call myself with 'boku'

That was the birth of the witch of supreme time, Matifa.

After that, I lived for years.

Sometimes, a special existence like me is found and I called out to them. The betrayal of my faint hope of someone saving me continued.

I'm aware that I'm the cause.

After I killed the prince that time, I wasn't able to trust anyone. The more I love or not love the partner, I succumb to the insecurity that they might betray me someday. Then, I tried such a behavior. But, no matter how I try I can't feel relieved, it gets extremely radical. Before long, the party won't be able to endure and run away from me. It repeated over and over again.

Then, I found him.

When I saw him, he was able to fly abnormally like I've never seen

before. He doesn't have a magical power at all. In short, he's an existence without any distortion.

He's a completed existence.

I was longing for him. I want to be like him.

But, I don't understand what to do, in the end, I meddled like usual.

He was wonderful.

He has an ability that's not understood. That's why I thought he would run away if I use him just like the others. But, he didn't run away.

He took down Misha who's better than him, he opposed against my magical power in fear.

Even I injured him, threatened him, raped him, he never surrendered to me.

Then, when I'm with him, I noticed that the voice in my head doesn't sound. The voice of envy that drove me crazy for many years became weak near him. It's perhaps because of his constitution. He already became an irreplaceable existence to me at once.

But, he doesn't look at me. Seria is always first for him.

The princess of Rasahairu Kingdom. A cute, pure, gentle and genuine princess that's different from me.

This time, I'm the one who's envious. I who was always on the other side felt envious.

I always yearned to be a princess since I was a child. The prince always helped the princess in the story. I dreamed to be like that.

Seria has everything I dreamed of.

A genuine princess, she was saved by him on the time of crisis. It seems to be forced but from the outsider's point of view, it was clear that Seria liked him. Furthermore, they share a secret, and he's protecting it. Even



though she received so much affection, she wished for even more honestly.

It's impossible for me to not get envious after that.

That's why I no longer asked. I can't forgive him to have Seria's panties so I embarrassingly passed down my panties. When Seria pushed him down like a thieving cat, I bound him on a contract where I would get his secrets. Every time I hear his tales, my heart dances excitedly.

Then, today, I had touched his imperial wrath at last.

He knows that he's weak. However, I'm expecting him to be above by all means. It can't be helped that I thought that he's a special man that can overcome any kind of crisis. And in fact, he made the most influential person of this country and the same time, was able to run away.

'He's really the real thing', the moment I was rejoicing, he stabbed me. I was off guard. He can never run away from me. However, he also doesn't accept me. Though I understood that this would happen someday, I haven't considered that it would come.

I remembered the fear of death for the first time after a long while. I remembered the moment when I was betrayed by the prince. ...No, because his blade never reached my body, you can call this as a first time experience. I lost sight of myself as the anger and fear mixed. I left in fury, kidnapped Seria and waited for him. When I think of it, Seria had never done anything wrong.

He spoke about something to Misha while being nursed.

Misha looks at others carefully. She can easily read other's minds. Misha is the one who understands me the most. That's why I had her near me, and gave her to him as a present because she's important.

Misha perfectly saw through the weak me. He was persuaded by that

insight. Misha exposed my true nature. It was expected from Misha who's my hope.

However, it didn't end there. The two of them started to have sex for some reason. Furthermore, in the ass.

Why do you have room to do such things? Why aren't you coming to me immediately? The princess is waiting for help you know? And yet, why they can't leave it like that?

My consciousness returned as there's no need to look at those two flirting.

The ones occupying the throne room is Me and Seria. Since there's a barrier around, no one would be aware if something unusual happened.

Seria is confused as she doesn't understand.

Looking at her made the words of resentment echoed in my head. Why I can't get my hands on the only thing I want? Why does everyone blame me? Even though she's the one that should be blamed. I stopped thinking about it. I only involved and disgraced her.

Then, I waited for him.

He was with Misha. Then, he was out of my expectations again this time.

Thinking that he made a declaration of victory with his improvised combination with Misha, I easily made clones of me to turn the tables. I can't catch up processing the speed of Misha's bullshit movement. Even if all of them attacked, Misha would just use substitution. If so, I'm going to take the chance when she's tired. With that said, even if I use full forced attack, the contract will obstruct it. The curse of moving around isn't applied. I showered attack at every direction not giving a room. His prophecy is taking reality.

I only associated with him for several days. Yet, he easily saw through my true nature. He exceeded me. Although he was given advise by Misha, it can't be done normally. He seriously faced me.

And he found me. His fist fell, it hurts much more than the stab earlier. But the pain isn't unpleasant. It's a happy pain that blew away my anger.

I was rejoicing that time. I'm glad that he understands me, I'm glad that he wants to be with me, I was helplessly happy. That's right, I didn't notice his true character up to that moment.

After finishing the contract, he showed his true nature. Of all things, he laughed and ridiculed a person's age. The betrayal was formidable. There's no human that drops after raising this far. Even if there's a little conscience none can do that. He kept speaking happily.

I was furious when I noticed his nature. The incarnation manifested with the intention to kill. But, that resistance was meaningless. My soul was bound by the contract.

Furthermore, he overcame the incarnation of jealousy with the worst method.

He covered his face with panties.

I can't understand it at all. How did you reach that conclusion!? Why can you neutralize the incarnation with that!?

The incarnation of jealousy that tormented me for more than 1000 years doesn't run through him at all. On the contrary, it began to help him.

The incarnation has an ego. However, it never deviated from my control up until now. There's a limit for the bullshit obedience. Is he really a human? Isn't he an actual devil or something?

I don't want to remember what's next.

He dropped me to a slave and he declared his victory. His penis is already erect as the panties is on his head, he made a bad pose of

arching his back open stride. It's similar to a pose of a brilliant researcher I guess? Anyway, it's indecent. He's a pervert, no doubt.

Then, I was insulted by that pervert. Forcibly putting his large penis inside my throat, then enema was put on.

I reached climax from the stimulus amplified by magic even though I don't want to.

His penis is too big for my body. Then, each time he stabs my uterus, my urge to cum raise. The vaginal walls are so hot that I might get burned. 'He's sucking my breast so hard that breast milk might come out', I thought as I the violent numbness. Even though I hadn't done it in my ass, it feels so good that I might ascend to heaven.

I can't endure it. Things like grudge or incarnations are nothing compared to this pleasure. My body is no longer mine. I became his.

My body and heart is violated by this pervert.

I hate him definitely. However, I can't go against him anymore. My waist shakes even though I don't want it.

He sits on the throne and made the three girls attend on him.

One person in front of him is being pierced by him to satisfy himself, that's me. The second is kissing him as her breast is being fondled, that's Seria. The third person is Misha who's having her ass played with. All of them are beauties and all of them are his.

Those three people had large amount of semen injected into their front hole and back holes, we came endlessly. Even I and Misha are safe considering the flesh age, it won't be strange if Seria gets pregnant. The princess of the country can't get pregnant selfishly but no one can stop him anymore.

That man talked to me.

「Matifa, how's it? Is the incarnation of jealousy still annoying you?」

The incarnation of jealousy has fallen silent. The moment he buried his hot and robust penis, she became silent inside me. I can feel that it still exists. But, her envy isn't turned to me anymore. There's no woman who would be envious of a woman who became a pervert's plaything. She was envious of the prideful and beautiful witch. This was according to his prediction. It's frustrating that I was saved from that many years of pain.

「Aaaaan! It's already quiet! But, I still don't understand it!」

When I lived for a thousand year, I was unable to do anything against the incarnation, but he was able to put it away somehow.

However, I can't help but think that there must be another method.

For instance, his cursed sword. It's an item that has a power that I never saw before. Can this cursed sword absorb the incarnation's magic completely?

Anyway, that cursed sword might be prepared for that damn woman. If so, his real aim isn't that.

However, it's too late to think about it.

His penis trembles. It ejaculated again. He impregnates my womb with his semen that stinks.

Thinking that, I reached my limit. My body is aching. My womb and vagina pulsates.

「Ora, I'm cumming again!」

「No way! Please stop already!」

「Haha, you're saying that while shaking your hips happily. Look, it's your bonus」

「Naaaaaaaaa!!」

His fingers stimulates my clitoris. It's completely erect and sensitive, I was brought into pleasure unable to resist. My body jumped regardless of my will. A wave of violent climax surge from the bottom of my body, my 1500 years was washed away.

「Cumming!」

*Doku Doku*, his semen poured in. The empty gap in my heart has his heat flowing in.

That thoughts boils up. It's not just animal passion. It's passion that burns life easily. He threw away all his life and pride for a woman, the battle with no hopes of winning was tackled. Then, it resulted to a victory for some reason.

He's clumsy and a helpless man. I guess I'll never be able to understand him at any circumstances. I lived for 1500 years.

However, that's it.

My master is a helpless fool.

---

I. No, it's not the penis ←

## Chapter 51: Lululie Saw

Six days passed after the man named Ren came to my house. Until then, Lilith and I were living alone, right now it's very noisy. Lilith happily plays with Misha, I and Ren-san were at loss.

That child doesn't listen to what I say at all but in front of him she's completely obedient. She's really easy to understand. Well, she doesn't seem to hide it.

He stayed in bed because of cold a few days ago.

Just when he returned suffering from serious injuries, he went out somewhere again in the midnight. Perhaps she talked to the person to break up.

Then, next day he caught cold and stayed in bed.

He's originally fatigued from the injury then he further forced himself repeatedly that's why his physical condition will definitely break down. He who doesn't have magical power is less resistant to sickness.

He's having a high fever that it seems he's seeing hallucinations.

But, seeing his somewhat refreshed face, I understood that his worries are gone already.

Ren Kirishima—— He's a strange person that came from the other world.

He's the same as Lilith that's suffering from magical power deficiency disease. I know well how hard it is for Lilith all this time.

Almost all of the tools in this world is driven by magical power. Drawing water, making fire, light and air conditioning are all using magical power.

Even at work. Even simple work of carrying and farm work needs man with magical power, he who has no magical power will not be employed. If he's a store clerk, there might be a robbery, even if he works behind the scenes his efficiency from using the magic tools will fall.

Having no magical power is like having no right arm. Rather than hiring such a person, they would hire a slave that's even cheaper, that's how it is.

However, while he has that handicap, he's not inferior at all.

He saved Lilith when she was about to be kidnapped, and he's now being my guard. Although he's a rogue, he subdued three men flawlessly means he's not ordinary at all. It's like a child winning against three adults.

It's hard to see from his clothes but his body is muscular and trained very much.<sup>1</sup> When I rubbed his shoulder before, I was surprised by the feeling of his hard muscle. There's no useless fat at all.

With that said though, He has a stronger body than my late father. Originally, elves has a constitution of gaining flesh, but I guess it can't be helped.

Princess said three years ago that the otherworlder was frail and unreliable. He's evaluated like a younger girl that's foolish and makes her worry so much three years ago.

That man is now protecting me. Surely, he made an unimaginable effort. He strengthened his body desperately to live.

Tears flow from him whenever he eats. It's not unusual that he's impressed by such a breakfast. That speaks how harsh his past three



years was.

I understand his feelings a bit. Because I also felt like him too.

I recall my late father in him. I think about my gentle father. Always eating delicious meals, energetically getting to work and coming home hurt, a bit untidy, making mom angry as he spoils me and Lilith.

Their faces are different but his gentleness is like father's<sup>2</sup>

When I slept comfortably from his massage, he even carried me to bed. I remember the old days when father did the same and carried me to bed, so I inadvertently pretend to sleep.

What's worse is he knew. It can't be helped if I was attacked just like that. But he's a gentleman and he didn't do anything lewd to me at all.<sup>3</sup> It's maybe because he has someone else he likes.

Such a sincere and gentle man must have a lover. I'm sure it's beautiful person— I thought.

Playing with water. The laundry was dropped on the bucket absentmindedly.

Seeing that, the senior maid Dalia called me out.

「Lululie, what's wrong? Are you feeling bad again?」

She's a woman with an unusual body for a maid. I've been under her care as an apprentice, and she's a senpai that's tending to Seria-sama together with me. She was worried when I collapsed before.

「No, I'm fine. I was just lost in thought」

I'm thinking, that's right, it's a trivial thing. That day when he was wounded, a dark elf came to pick me up in his place. Her name was Cathy.

Her body is tall and voluptuous that her big breast is about to burst. Her unfamiliar clothes emphasizes the goodness of her style. A sarcastic woman. 4

No matter how hard I try I don't get big but that dark elf's body was glamorous without exception. Surely, his lover is that woman. I heard from the story that she's an elder disciple, but there's no man who won't fall in love with that beautiful body. I really hate it.

She didn't talk that much so her explanation isn't well. She said that he's safe but I doubt that he's fine at all. I want her to tell me about the degree of injury but she told me that I'm unrelated.

When I noticed, I was rubbing the laundry wildly in vexation. Dalia-san shouldn't have noticed my behavior.

「Yare, Yare, are you worrying about something? ...Is it a man?」

「Eh?」

「Recently, you've been meeting a man right? He's dropping and picking you up」

It's definitely Ren-san. But, we're not in such a relationship. Also, it was just days since we've met. For romance and such...

「I-It's not. There's nothing about him」

I refused by shaking my head.

「Hee, you're feeling shaken. Could it be illicit love?」

Dalia-san's vulgar smile floats. This woman really loves love stories...

「I told you it's not. I only requested him to be my guard. Since the previous incident, the surroundings are a bit dangerous...」

「So it seems. Then I'll take that reason. But you still have something in mind, right?」

No good. This person doesn't believe it at all. I'd be lying if I say I don't but I haven't thought to the extent of stealing. However, just for a bit, I feel that my current life is good.

My housekeeping decreased and became a bit easier after he came. I'm worried about inviting a man in a female household but he doesn't attack us. Rather, I feel save that there's a man. Lilith is also glad and Misha-chan is also an excellent child.

These past days he's been sleeping but his care isn't bad. Like me, he also lost his home and parents. While he's telling me to rest, it's obvious that he himself is overworking. That's why I feel really happy when he's getting spoiled. Seeing his weak face as he always strain himself, it tickles my motherly instinct and it might become a habit—. Not! That's not it.

「I don't have something in my mind. But, I want to be alone for a moment, can I be...」

「Yare Yare, that's a serious illness. Well, you definitely won't cause a ruckus. Do well」

「I told you that's not it...」

Dalia-san doesn't listen to whatever I say. I scrapped hard the laundry to fool her...

「This dirt doesn't seem to get off easily」

「Un? Ah that one. That sheet is Desire-sama right? It can't be helped then. Men's semen is persistent after all」

「Eh?」

Man's semen? That's strange. Because these sheets are from the princess' room. There shouldn't be semen on the sheets the princess is sleeping. Furthermore it's too thick.

But Dalia-san seems to be convinced.

Or rather...What does this mean? Did someone enter the princess' room and violated her? But who will...

Princess hadn't changed since that event. She's a bit distant and doesn't go out anymore. The correct call might be 'A person who no longer goes out' Men, she's afraid of them especially the knights. Only Lion is the sole exception.

At that time of the day, I also fainted from that fearful experience. I don't know what happened when I was asleep but the shock princess received that time was abnormal.

There's a rumor that an assassin was involved. A gag order has been laid out<sup>5</sup> but the assassin was related to the incident that happened in the meeting the other day. It's frightening, but he's also my benefactor. We were betrayed by the knights, if no one saved us that time, I'll never be safe. Speaking clearly, he's clearly much better than the knights who betrayed us.

But, right now the princess is heavily guarded by Lion and the knights. That's why there's no way an assassin can be reckless. He wouldn't bother to take such risk. That's why, the only one who can do that...who can... Lion?



After I finished the laundry, I came to the room of the princess. As usual, Lion is standing in front of the room. Lion is alone.

「Uhm, Lululie-dono, is there something wrong?」

「No, there's nothing」

There's no change in Lion's state. He's standing alone at the front of the princess' room. He doesn't enter the room because of my complaint before. But, if it's him, he can enter anytime.

「I-Is there something on my face?」6

「No, there's nothing」

He has a neutral face and a slender figure. He's bad at socializing so he's alone. But his ability is the real thing, he's the strongest knight. He's no match against the legendary Matifa but he has the power to do as he like with the princess alone.

Though I hate him, when he courts, most ladies would flutter. Maybe, even the princess...

「Really, what's wrong?」

「No, there's nothing」

I entered the room ignoring the doubtful Lion.

「Hey, you, are you really sure with that?」

「It's fine. He'll repent a bit with this— Lululie!?!」

Princess and Matifa-sama are talking inside the room. Noticing me, the princess stopped talking and smiled in order to fool me.

Why didn't Lion hold me back? If Matifa-sama is in here, I shouldn't be inside this room. He's really a insensitive man.

「I'm sorry, I came here to clean but I'll do it later」

「No, it's fine. It's not like you're disturbing us. I'm going out with Matifa-sama for a bit so please clean」

Princess is going out with Matifa-sama. Recently, these two people are getting along. Previously, they only meet when she's taking magic lessons but they're often together now. Furthermore, they seem to be keeping a secret from me.

Matifa-sama seems to know something but it seems that it's the opposite. Either way, Princess got involved with Matifa-sama.

Her appearance is of a small child but she's way too old on the inside. She probably was consulted about various things.

「Certainly. Take your time」

「Thanks. I can guarantee Seria's safety so be relieved」

Matifa-sama talks friendly to a demi-human like me. Though I had some difficult impressions, recently, Matifa-sama changed a bit. You can say that she's calm. I felt abysmal fear before but it became friendly. Did something happen with the princess?

I cleaned the room when I everyone was gone. Doing it is easy. I collected dust with wind magic, I lightly wiped the furniture and kind. For an elf like me it's easy to carry it out as I'm skilled with magic.

Then, when I made the bed, I found a box I've never seen before. It was a box for hiding something but it wasn't locked.

I mustn't look. This is the princess' private property. A maid like me shouldn't touch it without permission. I thought but I was curious by all means.

I remembered the dirty sheet from a while ago. The box is concealed by the dirty sheets.

I feel unpleasant.

I mustn't open this box. I won't be able to go back when I open it.<sup>7</sup>

However...

I steeled myself and opened the box. What's inside it is a copy of a book and a marble modeled on something. Something isn't. What's this?

A man's thing. Genital. A man's genitalia.

My hand trembled. Why is such a thing in the princess' room?...

I also checked the book. But, I understood it without reading the contents. It's an erotic book. It's a erotic book from the title. Furthermore, a bad taste.

My goodness! The princess has awakened to sex.

It's still too early for the princess. Even I haven't done it yet.8

These things are something an unmarried woman shouldn't have. Furthermore, she's the country's princess.

It's obvious what's the princess is doing using this. She's comforting herself. I absolutely must stop it.

What should I do?

Err, I must find the criminal who made the princess do such things.

The suspect is Lion.9

I'm sure that he forced the shocked and weakened princess violently But I have no evidence.

Also, Matifa-sama. She also wrote this book, and they've been getting along recently., What is she indoctrinating in the princess right now?...

But, even if I know the truth, the enemy is the two of the strongest in this country. What can a mere maid like me do?

I should consult someone. But who?

It would be a large incident if it became public.

I can't say those things to Dalia-san. Of course, not even my colleagues.

Someone different. Lilith is out of the question.

A much more reliable person...

Then, that man's face surfaced.

——Ren-san. 10

If it's him, he can conceal such a thing.

He seems to have experienced a lot of things so he might have a good advice. When Lilith was almost kidnapped, he immediately found the



criminal's purpose. No, but...

- [illegible]



Below is an image that has Lululie's features, it's not Lululie but it looks like her.

<http://danbooru.donmai.us/posts/1944604>



## Chapter 52: Nursing

After my victory against Matifa yesterday, I enjoyed it until I was satisfied. I experienced my dream of sitting down the throne and violating beautiful girls alternately. It was not a crown that was on my head but panties instead.

And today, I fell exhausted.

Even Matifa's panties isn't omnipotent.

I can recover my strength with magic but the treatment of injuries has a strong makeshift. You can fool it with magic if it's the usual, the body still needs to recover though. But, I ignored that principle yesterday. Therefore, my body had a heavy backlash after that act.

I returned back to my home to change my clothes and returned to Lululie's house at night, I explained the details to Cathy and made her guard outside.

Because the fatigue surged in one go, I left the night guard to Cathey and lied down on the sofa.

Then the next morning, my body generated intense heat, I can't get up.

It was Lululie who noticed the unusual event first.

I was breathing rough and a chilly feeling arose. When I opened my eyes thin to wander around, I saw Lululie's eyes too close and her long eyelashes as she jumped out. She placed her forehead to mine and

checked my temperature.

Her shallow breathing is audible. If I moved my face a bit we would already kiss. I thought of doing it but my body doesn't move.

「What a fever... This is no good. Please take a rest in my room」<sup>1</sup>

After saying that, Lululie invoked some sort of magic. However, something odd happened. Thinking of failure lightly in my head, countless ivies grow from the other side of the door of the living room and reached out to me.<sup>2</sup> My whole body was tied up and lifted.

Then, I was brought to Lululie's room while swinging. I never thought that in this world I would be invited by some disgusting plant, but then, I was lay down on Lululie's bed.

My vision shakes. A tangled ivy. The suspicious stinking smell—.

I feel like I've strayed to a forest somewhere I don't know. It's a dreamlike sensation. But even I said dream, this is a nightmare.

The fairy dances on the edge of my view. A cry of mysterious bird from somewhere resound. Countless spiders crawled on my body when I noticed.

Anxiety and fear welled up from deep inside my body. However, I can't shout.

Poisonous petals are dancing. Someone's scream and horse's footsteps. When I looked the other way it was just a red mist.

Something's coming. There's something in this world where it's unthinkable nature isn't known.

Someone's calling me. Humid. I can't breath. The world is distorting. My body is falling. The floor is hard. Severe pain...

「Ku...I...」

「Ren-san, are you okay?」

When I noticed, Lululie is helping me sit up. I'm beside Lululie's bed right now, on top of the wooden floor. It seems that I fell of the bed.

「Ah, Sorry」

「No, please take rest. I've called the doctor」

It seems that I've fainted. Because of the heat and the hideous plants, I seem to have nightmares.

Lululie easily lifted my body with her thin arms. She put me on the bed once again and put a wet towel on my forehead.

Lululie nursed me like she's used to it. I'm really grateful.

When I put the futon on top of my mouth, Lululie's smell drifted. I felt a bit calm. I can sleep calmly with this...



I feel my body is being shaken.

「...Sama, wake up」

Who's it?

「Master, wake up」

「N...Misha?」

「Un, Master, you awake?」

「Yeah...」

I'm awake but my body can't move. When I turned my face to Misha, she's wearing a nostalgic clothing.

A pale pink colored nurse clothes. She has a syringe in her hand.

Why are you dressed like that?...

「Master, injection time」

Green liquid spouts from the syringe Misha is holding.

What's with that color?

Is that thing safe to enter a human body?

In the first place, can Misha do injection?

Or rather, why a nurse outfit?

「Then, Master, take out your ass」

「...Ha?」

「Hurry up hurry up. This injection feels good」

「W-wait...Misha」

「Nope」

I was rolled by Misha and made me face down forcefully. When I tried to escape, My hands and feets were tied to the bed before I noticed.

Misha's hand reached out for my trousers. Then it was lowered just like

that. My ass is exposed<sup>3</sup> Misha's hand is coming. I'll lose my anal virginity in three seconds. 3, 2, 1...

「Wait a moment! Wai——Aaaaaaaa!!!」

A sensation of something sticking into my ass, I woke up along with that.

I checked my surroundings and my ass' safety. It's the same otherworld like Lululie's room when I slept. There's nothing stuck in my ass.

It seems that it's impossible to sleep in this room. I wonder if my nightmares are shown by this plant. There might be a rotten apple like guy from the window, or maybe something like a skeleton on the side of the bed.

It doesn't matter but I now plan to make Misha to wear a nurse outfit.

'Haa', I exhaled, then a person's presence was nearby.

「Cathy?」

「Yes. It seems that you're not fine. Please take a rest」

Even if you don't tell me that, I can't move. I'm just a sick person. Severe dizziness and palpitation and getting short on breath. Even talking is hard.

「About the witch, this is master's message」

Matifa's case is something that needs to be immediately reported to master. What criticism waits, just thinking about it is making me afraid.



「Master withdraws the requests. And it's not necessary to aim in the witch in the future. However, since you didn't achieve the request, there's no reward」

It seems that they know it. There's no penalty in particular. Perhaps I should say that I risked my life so it's enough as a penalty.

「Also, the cursed sword will be collected」

That's obvious. The cursed sword is a national treasure class so it's not something that an individual should have. If work ended, the lending period will also end.

「Another one. Master said 『Don't get carried away』」

「...Okay」

Shit. Just how far can he see though? I haven't known that it extends to the castle but he's able to guess from the degree of the report. Though I didn't say it, It seems that it was reported that I made Matifa my slave and they noticed my misdeeds.

I'm afraid to meet Master next time.

Thinking that, the door opened and Lululie with a tray came in.

「Good morning. How's your condition?」

「Sorry for being troublesome. I feel better thanks to you」

I don't feel better at all but as a Japanese, there are some things I must

do. There's no way I could tell her I had nightmares.

「Is that so? But, please still take a rest. Cathy-san too, please don't overwork the sick too much」

Lululie said it with a smile. I feel that there's some darkness oozing out but I guess it's my imagination. I'm sure that it's because of this room. It must be.

「By the way, what about Lululie's work?」

Seeing the height of the day, it should be noon already. Lululie should be inside the castle usually.

「Yes, the break time was a bit longer so don't worry」

There's no way I wouldn't worry. They would understand if you went out if a child had cold, but a man catching a cold isn't heard that much. Isn't she too overprotective?

「Are you really okay? You can just leave me alone」

「Just be a sick person and rest properly」

Lululie doesn't accept no. I should just get nursed quietly. I'm glad about it.

「I brought meal. Are you going to eat?」

「Yeah, I guess. I'll take it」

I don't have the appetite but I haven't eaten anything today. It would be better if I force myself to eat.

I tried to move my body while thinking about that but power can't enter my body. I was finally able to raise my upper body with the help of Cathy, just sitting feels painful already. Though My arm is being held by Cathy's explosive breast, I can't afford to enjoy it.

Still, when I was about to eat, my arm was trembling.

Seeing that, Lululie scooped the soup slowly and carried it to my mouth.

「Open your mouth. Okay, aaan」

When I opened my mouth, Lululie poured the warm soup.

There's no taste because of the fever but my heart warms up.

I recalled my memory from childhood.

The parents I can't come back to.

My mother that I can't meet again.

I have a fever and being nursed just like back when I was a child.

Is it okay to cry?

It's okay to cry, right?

「W-what's wrong? Was it too hot?」

「Wait, Ren, Are you okay? Did you eat something strange!?!」

Lululie and Cathy began to panic as they see me cry. But, It can't be

helped. My tears don't stop.

「No. Don't mind it」

The two looked at each other. The two knows my past so they seem to have guessed indirectly.

After the two people made me eat, I slept again.



It was night when I noticed. I was able to sleep without nightmares this time.

My body's condition hadn't changed but I feel refreshed.

When I looked around Lululie's room again, it's a room of an ordinary girl with the exception of the strange plant. Her aesthetic sense of style is bad. There are some accessories and stuffed animals but none of them have eerie design.

Other than that, it's an ordinary room, Lululie seems to be slightly off.

Then, the master of the room came in.

「How's your condition?」

「Yeah, I still feel feverish but it got better」

Lululie devoted to nursing as we talk. She measured my temperature just like this morning and made me eat a meal.

Then, after confirming my condition, my clothes were taken off and I began to wipe of the sweat from my body politely.

「Sorry for making you do this」

「I'm used to this because of Lilith」

The towel that was wet with hot water was stroked in my body. Gently wiping my face, neck, arm to the shoulder, chest and back, Lululie wiped off the sweat.

「You really have an amazing muscle」

「Well yeah. I only have nothing but this」

I have no magical power and also not smart. The only road for me is increasing muscle strength.

「I can't tell Lilith to make you as an example」

「Well yeah. If Lilith is trained, she'll be a macho woman and it won't look good」

I don't want to see Lilith with abs. I don't want to see her gaining muscles instead of breast. Even if her bust is improved, no one would be happy.

「...Is Cathy-san really your taste?」

She asked shyly. I guess Cathy's explosive breast is a shock for her.

「There's no man who would hate that. But well, since I'm attracted to

looks so face is everything. I do like Lulullie and Lilith. But Macho is no good」

Of course. No one else has condensed motherhood in this small chest. I know that it's impossible but I wish to get married and build a warm home.

「Fufufu, you won't get anything with your flattery」

「That's not flattery」

She shows composure but Lululie's a bit embarrassed. This doesn't feel bad. Since I already finished capturing Matifa and Lilith, Lululie is the only one left. I want to do it in one go but unfortunately, my body won't move. Really, why is Lululie coming when I'm like this.

While we're talking, the body wiping has finished already. Unfortunately, I must do my lower body by myself.

After Lululie left, I cleaned my body cheerfully and changed my underwear. After moving my heavy body to the toilet, I went to sleep again.

Lululie seems to be going to sleep in the sofa at the living room. She wouldn't accept and made me sleep on the bed.

What I should do right now is to cure my cold as quickly as possible. It's for Lululie's sake. I fell asleep while thinking that.

Then next day, My symptoms got worse.

「Your wound is festering. I should make the doctor look at it again」

Lululie said that after checking my condition. The wounds of my arm and thigh were no problem but it worsened during yesterday night This and that, this wounds are Lion's fault. I'll never forgive him.

「Master, you're no good today too?」

「Onii-chan, are you okay?」

Misha and Lilith asked with their faces appearing on the door.

「It seems that it will still take time to recover. Lilith is easy to get sick so don't get in. Misha-chan, I'll leave Lilith to you」

「Un, Got it」

「Uu, Onee-chan is sly」

Lilith who's worrying about me was taken away and Misha went out to play. Misha now has a choker on her neck just like Matifa. Misha became my slave again so I don't have anything to worry in particular. Though she's cold-hearted, it's better than receiving injection on my ass.

This and that, days passed with only Lululie nursing me. Then, on the third day, I made a huge mistake.

---

1. Nooo ↔

2. Oh Ren is about to be tentacle raped ↔

3. Wow, tentacle rape and anal rape in one chapter ↔

## Chapter 53: Meeting

Three nights passed after my fight with Matifa, I forced myself to come to the castle.

My fever hadn't dropped yet. My condition fell and I'm at my worst condition. Still, it's necessary to come by all means.

Matifa's contract is the cause.

The content of the contract signed that day says that we have to meet face-to-face one per three days. 'I have to do the contract faster', I hurried up. So I reluctantly entered the castle.

There are some remodeled beast men loitering around Seria's room.

These are Matifa's remodeled beastmen, with the exception of Misha, they number around 50. They've already in Desire's camp and Mark Newt house should've been keeping it somewhere. Perhaps he threw them.

I don't understand his aim but it would be dangerous for the current me to approach. Matifa should deal with it if there's some movement but I'll give up today. I went to Matifa's research building while thinking that.

When I came to Matifa's usual room, Matifa welcomed me in bad mood.

「Fun, You finally came. If you didn't come I would've died because of the breach of contract. I don't want to meet you though!」



Matifa faced away with tsuntsun. She used her own contract as an excuse.

「Ou, I came to meet you intentionally. Be grateful」

「What are you getting bossy for? Rather than that, I've got a task for you. Follow me」

Matifa jumped off the chair and started going somewhere. I'm a bit reluctant when it's just the two of us talking.

I asked the business while walking dizzily.

「What do you want me to do? Is it no good in your room?」

「It's not my task. I've been ask to bring you」

「Who requested you to bring me?」

「The greatest person in this country. Since I'm with you, you'll never be at disadvantage so don't worry about getting caught」

The greatest person is probably Ortiz. What business does a king have in me? If a trap was set, it's much easier for me so it's probably something different. Does he intend to bring me in.

Well, I should just run in case of emergency. Ortiz also stopped Radom at that time so I wouldn't get killed immediately.

「Yes yes, I'll follow you」

「Today's you seems to be having no ambition. Did you catch a cold?」

「That's right. Since you did a strange contract, I wasn't able to rest properly」

「Fun, It's your fault for doing such things. You should've died rotting just like that」

When Matifa's glance turned to my eyes, she turned her face away again. It seems she's worried about me. After Yandere was cured it's now Tsundere. She's really not cute.

I leaned on Matifa's back abruptly.

「W-what are you doing! Release me」

「Isn't it fine? I'm too tired to walk. Piggyback me」

「You're really selfish!」

Matifa invoked healing magic as she touched my hand angrily. Warm light wraps my body and energy springs in.

「How's it? Did you feel better」

「Oh, it's true」

「Then walk by yourself. Also, there will be a guard soon. Be sure to use your invisibility」

Just like Matifa said, I passed through the guard invisible and we went to Ortiz' private room.

Ortiz is working in his desk. He's absorbed in troubles late at night. After confirming that there's no trap, I removed my invisibility.

「Ortiz, I've brought the example」

「I'm indebt to Matifa-dono. You often came too. I welcome you」

Having no dignity as a King, he's like an exhausted old man you can find anywhere. That's Ortiz' impression right now.

I should be paying respects if it's the usual but that's not the concern right now. As always, I answered with hostility.

「What's your business with me」

「I wanted to express my gratitude」

「Gratitude?」

Ortiz stops the brush and looked straight to my face.

「Than you for helping Seria. I'm thanking as her father」

Ortiz lowered his head to me. Is that something a King should do?

「Don't thank me. Rather than that, what's your real business?」

The rape was a breach of contract. Furthermore, I continued it. There's no way someone would be grateful of someone who took their daughter's virginity away by force, there's a limit to stupidity. Is this country really okay?

But, Ortiz replied to my words with a wry smile.

「I've heard about you from Matifa-dono and Christel-sama. Thanks to them, I finally was able to get the whole picture」

「Wait a moment. You heard about me from Master!?!」

「Yeah, I was told about you after the incident in the audience」

It somehow turned troublesome again.

I now know that — Christel and the King are connected. Master's role is to be the dark side of the country that deals with the unreasonable demands. Instead, she's granted a decent privilege.

Tracing back the origin of the assassination request, it finally reached Ortiz. The number of nobles and merchants that can't be judged by the country multiplies, that's when Ortiz went to Master and asked for advice. Then Master planned out an assassination and I carried it out.

But, it's hard to believe master talking about me.

「What does this mean? I don't think master speaks out that easily」

Matifa is the same. This girl is my slave so she can't leak out information about me easily.

「I consulted about your search a bit. I haven't heard the circumstances though」

「Search? What's that?」

「The search for the assassin beheader changed from B-class to A-class. It's not publicized yet but it will be announced in a few days. An official announcement will be issued at the same time, not just the knights but also bounty hunters and adventurers who think they have skill will aim at you」

「What the hell!?!」

A-class search is issued only on the specially dangerous person. Those being searched are those who indiscriminately kills or mass murders or

those who uses forbidden magic. In addition, the price for catching a Class-A fugitive is a large amount of money. Furthermore, it's not even a question about life or death.

Before long, portraits will be stuck in downtown. Because my face was hidden, I don't think I will be caught immediately, but...

Seeing the troubled me, Ortiz continued the explanation.

「I think it's bad but it's a necessary treatment. After you ran away last time, Radom and Desire had begun to quarrel. Many of the aristocrats are looking for that form too. A villain is absolutely necessary to put order in this place」

According to him, after I ran away from the audience Desire began cornering Radom as he missed. Matifa pointlessly reenacted the situation with her clones.

『If brother1 didn't pop-up there, Lion and Trovas would've caught him. But brother obstructed them We're the royal family, are you self aware?』

『That's coming from the mouth of someone who didn't do anything. Go tremble and piss yourself at the corner』

『I did mind so I couldn't be a nuisance. What about you brother?』

『You're just freaked out, you trash!』

Then the argument escalated quickly, in the end it nearly develop to a fistfight. The surrounding nobles divided into factions and blamed each other. This place won't subside even either side are at fault. I who invaded reluctantly is to be blamed, it seems like that.

He wants me to take responsibility on the quarrel of the brothers.

So before raising the search class, Master talked that she's my owner.

And then, it seems that I'm listening to the information that Master has told them.

「I knew that the assassin named beheader is under Christel-sama's control. And, I finally understood it from Felix and Matifa's report. You were the one who saved and escorted Seria and Lululie to the castle. You showed your strength. Even now you're still assisting Seria right? Despite that, I had no choice but to put you in A-class search, forgive me」

What a favorable interpretation. Matifa who knows the truth shrugged her shoulders in disgust.

I think Ortiz is an ally for the time being. Though he's a king, he knows nothing<sup>2</sup>, his power is a jest.

What will his face look like when he knew that his daughter turned to a sex toy. Though I won't tell him.

「I don't need your apology. I know what I did. Me getting an A-Class search is like a medal rubbed into me. It's the fact that they recognize my power」

「Saying that helps me. What, since you had a mask on your face, there won't be problems. And since you have a magic deficiency disease, you won't be suspected immediately. There's no way you can escape if you're a no magic, you would be crushed by all of the people there」

Well, that's true. There's no way that the me who wore the mask will be suspected. That's why, it's fine to be grand.

「Got it. Is that all?」

「That's all for me. Please take care of Seria from now on」

「Then I have another question」

「What would that be?」

It's a rare chance to speak with the king directly. That's why I'll throw my question in this chance.

「Why did you made Seria marry to Misumunto Kingdom? Why aren't you making your next heir public? You do know that a civil war is about to start right?」

Ortiz frowned listening to my question.

「I thought you're going to have just one question?」

「Shut up and just answer」

「Fuu, even so, I'm the king here. ...Well fine, this is something Christel-sama must know too. I presented Seria to Misumunto kingdom with the alliance as the condition. The second prince McClane is devoted to her. Though it's painful for me but this is the duty of Royalty. If it's for the national security then it's all right」

So that's why the narcissist McClane came to that fort. For him to do what he says, isn't it already a vassal nation?

「And the other is?」

「The next king would be Radom but problems occurred. Do you know the daughter of the Will Gantt House that died against the battle with Misumunto Kingdom two years ago?」

「I know. That's Radom's fiancé and he's burning in vengeance」

「If you know that much then you understand. If Radom becomes the next king right now, the war will be inevitable. On the other hand, if it's Desire, it would be inevitable for Radom and Will Gantt's rebellion. It'll also be a war in this case. That's why I'm desperately trying to persuade Radom right now. There's a lot of disturbances so it doesn't go well」

Ortiz throws up a sigh.

What are you leisurely talking about? It already passed the stage where you should be worrying about it. Can't I make Radom the King and manipulate him behind the scenes? But I guess I can't hold down his strong spirit. Since this fellow is here, this country got so far. Really, I'm the one who wants to sigh.

「Got it. I won't expect anything from you anymore. I'll do what I want」

「You must've been disappointed. But please don't be so unreasonable. There's a limit on how much I can protect」

「Yeah right. I thank you for stopping Radom last time too. Thanks to you I made a narrow escape. Though it should've been better if someone didn't do anything」

My glance turned to Matifa.

Then Matifa retorted.

「Don't say that anymore. Also, you also did such things. I don't care even if everything is exposed!」

「Yes Yes, Let's stop doing that even if we can. Then, King, we'll be going now」

「Yeah, please tell my regards to Christel-sama」



‘Say hello to master’? I don’t want to see her though.

「You! Don’t ignore me!」

「Shut up and let’s go. Just open the door already」

I told the noisy Matifa to exit. I’m going to use invisibility again so I can’t go out if Matifa didn’t open the door.

「What an absurd man, he’s able to tame Matifa-dono」

「No! I’m not tamed by this man!」

「Shut up and let’s go」

「Ortiz! Don’t misunderstand! It’s not like I’m his ally or anything!」

「No No, It’s the first time I saw this kind of Matifa-dono. It seems that you like him very much」

「I don’t like him at all!! If you keep talking like that I’ll blow up this room!」

In the end, it took more than 10 minutes to get out of Ortiz’ room.



「Oi, Matifa, fix your mood. Aren’t you overstating a bit?」

「Fun, you and Ortiz should just be dammed together. Rather than that, we’re going to arrive soon」

Saying that, we arrived at Seria’s room. Seria seems to have business with me.

Today's guards were two female knights. They seem to be talking about their skin getting rough, but I don't care about it.

「Matifa-sama, what are you doing at such a time?」

「I want to talk to Seria in secret. Sorry but let me pass through」

「However, the princess is already asleep...」

「Don't worry. Seria, open it」

Seria came out after Matifa called her. I can go in without troubles in front but,

「Matifa-sama, you came. Come, please go inside」

「Sorry. I'm going in then」

I also said 'coming in' inside my mind and came inside.<sup>3</sup> After confirming the door was closed, I removed my invisibility.

「Yo, it's been three days」

「You came, Ren-san. I have to talk to you about something today!!」

Seria points at me wearing her negligee. But, her appearance is a bit strange. She seems nervous, as if forcing herself..

「What's wrong? Your appearance is a bit strange. ...It's that day?」

「That day?」

「Menstruation. If your condition is bad then rest. I also have a fever today so I don't plan to overwork myself」

「That's wrong! Why can't you understand how anxious I am when you didn't come!? I'd be glad if menstruation come instead! I'm going to have a party with Matifa-sama!」

Seria became angry. It seems I'm wrong about her being strange. It's the usual Seria.

「Hey, that's not it, I want to talk to you today」

「What? Say it then I'll consider it positively」

「What's with that assumption of you refusing? You see, it's about the town. I'm already tired of the Hikikimori lifestyle. I want to go out!」

「Haa」

Certainly, it would be depressing for her to lock herself up in the room. The hikikimori lifestyle must be painful for Seria.

「I'm already at my limit. Getting up in the morning, eating meal, studying, then eat meal again, study, then eat meal again, enter bath and sleep at night. Always getting scared when I look at you, I don't have time to relax. My only peace is when I talk to Lululie. My body weakens, so my health isn't good. If this continues, my stomach would be punipuni<sup>4</sup>, And recently, I heard some dangerous events from Lululie. I'm worried about everyone in the town. I want to go outside and talk with everyone too!」

It seems that she accumulated stress. It's likely that she'll be sneaking out of the castle without permission. If that happened, she might get kidnapped again and cause an uproar. That would be troublesome.

But, I can't go together with her, this is when I will use the convenient slave as a helping hand.

「You hear, Matifa? You're also staying indoors right? Then you should go out together with her out of town」

「Leaving it to me? It's not like I do anything I like and just shut myself up in the castle. If I come out, that woman would do everything to attack me . I sometimes use a familiar or a clone but It gets crushed one out of three times. Recently, a degenerate has been sent in. That's why it's too dangerous and you can't go outside」

Matifa said 'scary scary', she's pretending to be a afraid Though she doesn't seem to be afraid, it's true that she doesn't want to go outside.

There's one woman who's not afraid of Matifa. It's master. Her age is unknown and it seems that she's good friends with Matifa. To the extent that she ordered me to kill her.

「That woman is Master isn't it?... I feel sorry about you」

「That muscle brain woman is bad. Once she gets annoyed with a noble she'll burn their house, also she's been aiming for my life for more than a hundred years. Though I just gave her a punishment for calling me an old woman」

「That noble is good for nothing?」

「You say something?」

Black magic leaked out from Matifa. Even if it can't do anything, scary things are scary.<sup>5</sup>

「No, nothing」

I shook my head and said that I didn't say anything. It's not known who's

the top or bottom.

However, if Matifa says it's no good, it would be more difficult for Seria. I can't leave him to Lion, I can't go with it. Going out with a man is just like a date. If I see that, I might become the incarnation of envy.

「Give it up Seria. I'll think about it if I have no other options but it's already impossible」

「I know. But, I can go out once it's safe right?」

「If your safety is already guaranteed. Also, it's no good if you're alone with Lion」

「Geez, what an intolerant person」

「Guh...shut it」

It seems horrible. Certainly the small articles stinks but I don't need to say it directly. I'm not intolerant. I'm just careful.

「Is that all? If so, I'm going back」

My fever is really painful. I feel better thanks to Matifa but still the headache and dizziness doesn't go away. The lecher doesn't come out as I'm feeling ill.

Looking at my shaking head, Seria clenched her fist.

「It seems painful. Then please take rest. Come, in my bed please」

Seria pushed my back and brought me to the bed. She's much aggressive than before.

「What's wrong? If it's the usual you'd tell me to go home faster?」

「No no, that's too blunt for a sick person indeed. Also, let's talk some more?」

「I don't mind but...Really, what's wrong?」

Seria's state is strange. She pushed me down the bed and talked to me while sitting on top of me. It's like I'm being seduced.

「Err, you see, that, what should I say? I have a small favor to ask you」

「Favor? Didn't you tell me that a while ago?」

「Yes, a favor. Since I'm your favorite, can you hear my request for a moment?」

Saying that, Seria laughed cutely.

- 
1. No, I'm not gonna put Nii-san there, it's disgusting to hear Nii-san from a boy ↩
  2. Ortiz' name changed to John Snow! ↩
  3. No, not in a sexual meaning ↩
  4. Squishy ↩
  5. Fun things are fun, and people die if they are killed ↩

## Chapter 54: Seria's curse #

Seria acted like a kitten and hang into me.

Seria's plump chest is pressing into me. The soft feeling spreads on top of my belly, my son shows signs of reviving even I caught a cold.

I reached out to Seria's body. I knead her soft and fluffy marshmallow breast, my cold seems to have flown somewhere. If I'm not careful my consciousness would fly away.

「What request?」

「Nn, you see, please answer my questions honestly」

「Are you okay with that?」

「Yes, please answer without lying. If you don't want to answer, it's fine staying silent」

「Got it」

Seria's hand reached out to my pants while speaking then my half revived son was taken out. I haven't taken a bath in this past three days so it has a strong stink of a man.

Seria shifted her body and made her delicate hand crawl into it. My feverish feels the little stimulation sensitively. I don't have the mood to do it today but if Seria wants to do it then it's different

It was the usual nursing from Lululie during the day and the lewd nursing is done by Seria at night. It's the best. I'm glad I caught a cold.

「Then, the question. Lululie's state is a bit strange recently, you haven't attacked her did you?」

The first question is about Lululie. She looks strange because she escaped the castle during daytime to nurse me. I'm at fault for sure but I haven't done anything lewd.

「Of course. I haven't attacked Lululie」

Seria breathed in relief after hearing me. Are you so worried about Lululie that you're going to use your body?

「Then, next one. Do you intend to return the panties you stole?」

「No」

「An immediate answer... You're not wearing it right?」

「Well, not Seria's. If you want, I'll do it anytime」

「You don't have to...Ahn~」

Seria breathes a sweet sigh again. Her cheeks blush as her breast is being rubbed, her expression has become lewd too. My son has become energetic suddenly. As expected ero is the best source.

「N, then next question. All the girls you've done is, Me, Matifa-sama and Misha chan only right?

She's now asking my relations with women. Seria is interested about it?

I did Lilith and Cathy but I didn't tell her yet. I'll speak ambiguously this time. .

「I did some other girls. I'm popular you know」



「Mu, that's a nasty way of speaking. It's an honest relationship?」

「Yeah it is」

Well, I did them after agreement. It's the most honest relationship.

The moment I answered. I felt a constricting pain on my penis.

「Ouch! Seria, do it gently!」

「You lied didn't you? That's not an honest relationship at all! You did attack someone else as expected? Tell me! Who did you put your hands on?!」

Seria got angry suddenly, She grabbed my shoulder and shook me.

Include the headache and dizziness, I suddenly feel nauseated. Crap.

「Wait Seria. I'll tell you! I'll tell you!」

I held my mouth to bear it. I really can't bear to cover Seria with vomit. I'm willing to smear her with semen but vomit is no go.

I desperately endured it, Seria stopped moving me as she might've noticed something unusual.

「So, who did you attack?」

Seria questions me with a furious look.

「I haven't attacked anyone. Rather than that, what does this mean?」

「It doesn't mean anything. I put a curse so you can't do lewd things. It

activated because you lied」

Seria declared. I don't know what curse it is but there was a pain in my crotch a while ago. When I looked down, my penis turned into something unthinkable.

Pink ribbon. A cute pink ribbon is wrapped around my penis. My dirty penis is decorated by a beautiful butterfly knot. This seems to be the cause of the pain a while ago.

「Hey, what's this!? What curse?」

「This is a cursed ribbon I asked Matifa to make. It binds the action of the partner who lied about love. Specifically, it'll hinder you forcibly attacking a woman, or doing lewd things with children. So, you can't attack Matifa-sama and I by force nor do lewd things with children like Misha-chan. You deserve it」

Seria showed a triumphant smile.

It seems that this was her aim from the beginning. I try to take off the ribbon but it doesn't come loose.

「Don't joke with me! I haven't heard about this. Remove this. This is against human rights」

「Who's violating human rights here! After the recent events, I know that you're no good if I haven't done this. I can't believe you inserted in m-my ass! It was painful to sit down the whole day after that! Do you know the suffering!? That's why this is your punishment. Until you sign this pledge, I'll never untie it!」

Saying that, Seria took out a piece of parchment on the bed. What's

written there are unreasonable demands. Never rape again, won't kill people, won't trespass, won't peep, won't steal, won't do ass, won't bind, won't rub breasts without permission, won't forcibly kiss, won't force fellatio, won't force to drink semen, won't creampie without permission, etc. It's all things I can't think of. If I abide to that, I'd die from frustration.

「Like hell I will! In the first place trespassing is forbidden so there's no point for that to be here」

「Can't you just make Misha-chan your messenger. The only one I forbid to go in and out is you. That's bad luck for you. Please show me your frustration from untying that ribbon. It's impossible for you though」

Seria took out her tongue to provoke me.

「How do you untie this! My penis is going to come off if I pull it!？」

「Since I installed it, the only ones who can untie that are those who can meet the conditions」

「Conditions?」

What's the condition? Since Seria set it up, I think it's an easy condition.

Seria raised her finger and explained the condition.

「That's the person who loves you. If they love you, they love you as a person, then the ribbon would come off! I'm not a demon so I won't bother people who are in love with each other. Of course, that's only if there's someone like that」

Seria explained in a triumphant look. Her expression looks like she's convinced that it's impossible for me. It makes me angry.

It doesn't change that it's an optimistic condition but it's a difficult condition for me. Should we try Misha for the time being? She does like me, and I like her too. I feel that it's not enough love through Seria's standards, other candidates are...

「That's right. Matifa, remove this curse. You can do it right?」

I asked Matifa who just watched the events from far away. The one who made the cursed ribbon should also be able to remove it.

However, Matifa refused.

「I'm sorry. I'm not a curse expert. That's why I can't answer your demand」

「Tsk, useless」

Making this ribbon and not stopping it from being used, what a useless slave. Learn from Misha.

When I cursed her, Matifa rebutted with an angry face.

「Don't you have that cursed sword with you? If it's that you can remove a curse of this degree. Or you can just ask your master」

「The cursed sword is already retrieved by master. Also, like hell I can tell master about this! I'll definitely be killed or castrated」

Master can dispel this easily but that jokes don't go through her. If she sees this she'll definitely ask persistently. That's no good. My life isn't enough for that.

But I'm troubled. I can't rape Seria at this rate.

「Fufufu. How's it? I can do it if I'm serious. Now, give up and sign this pledge!」

She thrust out the pledge. Anyway, it has a magical process in it. If I signed it, I'll have no choice but to have boring sexual life. Who the hell would accept that.

When it comes to this, I'll be using force. It's fine, I'm the one who sealed the incarnation of jealousy. I won't be defeated by a curse of this extent.

「I won't yield to this curse! I'll rape you no matter what!」

「Kya! Wait, release me!」

「I won't allow it anymore. I'll rape you even if I throw up!」

This time I pushed down Seria contrary to earlier. I raised her thin negligee revealing her chest that's well grown.

Seeing it, it's really a big and lewd breast. Her humble nipple and areola is elegant.

The moment I reached for it, the tightening pained my rod. The ribbon is digging into my erect penis. But, I can endure to this degree.

I removed my pants and put the glans to the slit. Prolonged war is impossible. There's no foreplay but this is her punishment so it's all right. I'll teach her a lesson for doing this to me.

Then, when I was about to push down my glans.

Suddenly, Seria's figure transformed.

Her beautiful face turned to a black hairy face.

Her charming limbs turned to black haired muscled limbs.

A very wild and sturdy appearance. The strangely handsome face is annoying.

In short, the figure was a gorilla. I throw down the gorilla and inserted to the gorilla's pussy

My son withers instantly. It was pushed back without opening the slit.

'This is Seria', even if I persuade myself that it was Seria, the feeling sex doesn't come up. The people's appearance is important. I can't have sex with the gorilla named Seria. It's impossible for me at least.

「T-That's ridiculous...」

I crumbled down.

「It's an instant effect. After all, that's the degree of your love!」

Seria returned to her original appearance and declared her victory.

「Ahahahaah! You look ungraceful!」

Matifa laughs, holding her sides.

The battle was concluded...

「What now! You cowards!」

「It's not cowardly. You won't reflect unless I do it」

「Dammit!」

I can't have sex with someone unless I overcome the hallucination of that gorilla!?

No, not yet. I still have cards!

「Matifa, I order you. Come and service me!」

「Yare Yare. Are you saying that you give up on Seria and will experiment on me. I'm your slave so I have no choice but do your order but I don't agree to have sex with you」

Matifa came on the top of the bed while complaining. I took the my ultimate weapon, the cursed panties in the mean time.

The panties have a peerless effect so I don't have a problem when it comes to erection. But, the moment I push down Matifa on the bed and lifted her skirt, Matifa transformed to a gorilla with white hair. Then, my son withered instantly――.

「You're a fool. You think you can win against that curse with doping? pu, ahahaha!」

「Fuck! Is there something else! Something...huh?」

As soon as I throw down the useless ultimate weapon, I was attacked by a strong dizziness. It seems I got too excited. My body has reached the limit already.

I fall down the bed like that.

Seeing that, Seria put her hand on my forehead in a hurry.

「Wawa, it's so hot. You really want to do lewd things that much?」

「Of course. That's the only thing I live for」

「That's an amazing obsession...」

Seria said in a astonished manner.

「Really, your libido has no end. Then I'll help you in a way. Your order is to serve you after all」

Saying that, Matifa put me down face up and she trampled down my crotch with her small foot wrapped in black knee socks.

「Ofuu! What are you doing Matifa?」

「What? I'm cancelling your lust. It's because I'm your gentle slave. When Master is troubled, I want to help」

Saying that, Matifa stimulates my withered penis with the sole of her feet. She's trampling it like filth.

「Hora hora, How's my feet? It feels that this one is feeling pleasant」

「You, doing as you please just because I can't move...」

「But, if I use my hand or mouth, the curse will torment you. That's why, this is the best I can do. Even I don't want to do this you know. But you ordered me to serve you. Hora, It's already hard. Are you feeling good from being stepped on?」

Matifa's adjusted her weight to the degree it doesn't hurt. Frankly speaking, this feels good.

Her long tender feet, dazzling thighs. She keeps her crotch on an angle that I can't see.



Then, the cold eyes like she's looking at a garbage stirs up the excitement further.

「If you don't want to then you can just give me an order. Hora, say it. 'Please stop' What's wrong? You can't say it? Are you really feeling pleasure from being stepped on? ——You're really a pervert」

「Gu...」

In addition, she attack using words. Does she not know how to take care of the sick? Or is this how Matifa treat kindly?

「Oh? There's a transparent soup on the point isn't it? Are you going to pee? Aaah, My beautiful feet will get dirty. Punishment is necessary for this bad penis」

「Ofu!」

Saying that, Matifa trampled down the glans dripping the pre-cum. Sandwiching it in her toes, the sensitive glans is being trampled. The feeling of the smooth texture of the cloth and her sole, then the violent pushing movement attacks my penis with stimulation. After three days, the desire to ejaculate from ejaculation rises.

「It's trembling. Are you going to cum already? You're really a useless master for being aroused being stepped on by a small girl like me. I'm worried about your future」

「Matifa-sama do it! Step on this person more!」

Seria also took advantage and went to Matifa's side. They're getting really cocky.

「Seria!」

「Bleeh! It's your fault. Please sign this pledge if you want help」

Seria sticks out her lovely tongue to provoke me. Who the hell would!

「Hora hora, You're being obstinate? You're at limit aren't you? It's already bulging」

Matifa moved her feet down and reached for my balls. The three days worth of clogged sperm feels painful. I instinctively escape my waist but Matifa follows with her feet.

「Matifa, why are you so skillful in this?!」

「Yeah, this is the hobby of the first king. I stepped on him while he begs on the ground. Then, I did step on the successive kings after that. Of course, the current king too. It's on their blood as expected」 [1]

「What are you doing, King...」

「That's something I don't want to know. Father...」

[tl: [1] = This means that Ren is the next KING, Yup thanks author for that foreshadowing. ]

Seria was shocked from the exposed fetish of her father. Giving the secret of the King, Matifa intends to take revenge on the teasing a while ago.

「You can't say that as a person? After doing this much」 [2]

[tl: [2] = キミも人のことを言えないだろ？ ここをこんなにしちゃってさ]

Saying that, Matifa strongly stepped on my erect penis.

「Oouuu, Oo, ooo...」

「Hora, I've already eased it up. 」 Cum while being stepped on by me!」

The movement of her feet gets intense. While attacking the glans, her entire sole rubs the pole.

Matifa's cheeks reddened. Licking her red lips, she torment my penis in high spirits.

For some reason I can understand the feeling of the former king. There's no man who wouldn't feel aroused when they're stepped on by this goth loli witch. Furthermore, it feels really good.

I can't stand it anymore. The feeling of ejaculation wells up. The ribbon that obstructs me didn't react this time. I didn't resist and threw out my semen.

Byururu, the thick yellowish semen flew out, Matifa's feet was a bit dirtied, most of it fell on my stomach and on Seria's bed.

「Oh my, you let out so much. Did being stepped on feel that good? Master」

Matifa looks down on me satisfied. She's really getting cocky.

「You, remember this. I'll definitely take my revenge」

「Fun, originally, aren't you the bad one as you treat a girl like a toy」

「It's your fault that you lost. The loser's social standing is to be stepped on by the master!」

「I don't deny that I lost. But you're also getting aroused from being stepped on!」

While I continue to quarrel with Matifa, Seria raised her voice.

「Ah! Wait, please don't dirty my sheets! I won't be able to sleep!」

「Aren't you lively! It's your fault!」

「Because your agonizing look is interesting. It can't be helped」

「No no, what kind of reason is that!」

Seria starts to speak making fun of me. I guess I won't let Matifa step on me severely.

I quarrel with Seria about this and that, then Matifa gave a timely help.

「Sorry. I'll clean it so wait a moment」

Matifa tries to tidy it up with her usual magic. But, I won't let it.

「Wait a moment, Matifa. You don't need to clean it. No, don't clean it. This is Seria's punishment. I'll make her realize what happens if you put a curse on me!

I further make the sheets and pillows a mess with my semen. This is revenge. It's a revenge for Seria who put a curse on me so I can't have sex.

「Kya—! Hey, don't spread it! It's dirty! Filthy!

「You're going to sleep sniffing the scent of my semen」

「You're the worst! What are you going to do with this! It won't dry even if I wash it right now!」

「Like I care. I will continue to harass you until this curse is removed. You'll definitely open your crotch for me!」

「I'll never do that! You should be the one apologizing. Apologize and kneel on the ground like when the first time we met! Then I'll forgive you」

「Ha, I'll never do that again. You'll regret making me angry!」

I put on my withered penis inside my pants and walked aiming outside while feeling dizzy. Matifa questioned that.

「I can't recommend you getting out of the window. I don't mind if you're found by the lookout though」

「Oh right, Then, I'll go home. Remember this」

After saying those parting lines, I teleported to my home.

## Chapter 55: Cathy and the chamber of secrets1 ##

Five days later, I finally recovered from my cold.

During that time, Lululie energetically nursed me and I was saved. I thought that it's just fine for me to stay as a sick person forever.

As expected I feel depressed as my body feels weaker, I feel spoilt from being treated kindly. Then, Lululie has come to pamper me further this time.

At first she goes 'Aaahn', she clasp my hand when I have nightmares now, she even sticks to me to the restroom. As if that all I say is her mission.<sup>2</sup> If I asked her, she might sleep together with me.

It's me who fawns over too much but I can't defy the desire to corruption. If this continues I'd be a useless man.

Furthermore, I'm not always depending on Lululie. I manage to make an effort to remove the curse Seria put.

But, I've tried various stuffs to remove Seria's curse, but I wasn't able to.

Misha, Lilith, and Cathy pulled it but it doesn't come undone. I took expensive holy water, but it was merely purified.

And now, I'm trying hardcore measures.

「Master, are you sure?」

「Yeah, do it instantly」

「Then, here I go」

Misha's mysterious claws has a reputation of cutting anything. I thought that the ribbon might be cut if it's that.

Misha slowly swings.

What's ahead as she swing down is my partner that's being wrapped in a pink ribbon.

The ribbon was not scratched even a bit, Misha said that there's some resistance. If so, she'd have to cut it with full power.

However, if she slips even for a bit, I'd be the one cut. The margin of error isn't even a millimeter.

But Misha is confident. I can do it myself. 3 'I'll free Master's penis and we can go and do naughty stuff again' That's why I decided to believe in Misha.

The, right now, she swings her claws downward——

「Wa-! Wait a moment! It's impossible! This shit is impossible!」

Misha's claws stopped suddenly. It's position is 1cm above my penis. Several curly hairs fall down.

The claw draw a small track digging on my skin. If she swings it downward, blood will spout. This is no good at all. This method is too dangerous. Even if body can be healed with magic, the wounds in my heart won't.

「Mu—, master's a loser」

「Nonono, it's impossible for anyone. I might lose this suddenly!」

I put away my dick and this strategy failed. There must be a peaceful method.

「Mi-chan, what would you do if it's impossible? Onii-san would just suffer if this continues」

Lilith spoke anxiously. She tiptoed and patted my head gently. What a cute girl.

This curse forces the hallucination even if I don't look, it makes noise even if I plug my ears.

Seria, damn this curse you put on me. Thanks to you, my sexual life is on the verge of crisis.

「Haa, let's think a bit more」

I can creep into Master's place and steal the cursed sword, or should I torment Seria forcibly till she reached her limit. ....It's the later. Since my body has recovered already, I'll sexually harass Seria the whole day and have her remove the ribbon on her own.

「But, that person's so cruel to do this to Onii-san. Also, isn't cursing a crime? Let's report that Seria and arrest her」

「R-right. That's good too」

What's with the criminal, Lilith?



After sending off Misha and Lilith to the orphanage, I waited for Cathy at the town's plaza.

When I was down, Cathy was guarding Lululie and collected information in the town. I asked her what she wants to do as my thanks then she told me to wait here.



The same time the bell rang with our promised time, the person I was waiting for appeared in the plaza

「Ren, sorry to keep you waiting」

「Oh, I just came here」

Cathy's wearing a grown up long skirt right now. It suits Cathy's tall proportion well.

Forgetting work, she intends to behave as my sister.

「Your clothes suits you well. As expected」

「Is that so? It's good to wear this comfortable clothes once in a while」

Cathy makes a model pose. The chest that's always constricted is now free, it's shaking under her clothes. It's irresistible honestly.

‘Gueheheguehehe’, As I admire Cathy, Cathy held my hands.

「Then, shall we go?」

「Oh right, I haven't heard it yet. Where are we going?」

「Ufufu, S-e-c-r-e-t」<sup>4</sup>

Cathy starts walking cheerfully, Being pulled, I followed her.

「You seem to be in an awfully good mood today. What happened?」

「Because Ren granted my request? So It's impossible to not be happy」

「I-I see. Please ask in moderation. Don't make some impossible requests」

Like marriage.

「I know. I'm not that elf, I'm not thinking of restraining you so don't worry」

Well, I know that Cathy doesn't have those kind of wishes but nevertheless, I can't feel at ease. There's the possibility of requesting expensive jewel. I don't have money problems so it's fine but.

As I think of what she's wants, we pass by through the street vendors. Eating food here and there, but she doesn't look for coffee shops that's popular on couples. 'Just what does she intend to do', I thought, Cathy entered the back alley.

This is a familiar place for us but our current clothes aren't suited. Making a strange glance at times, Cathy advanced without care. Then, she stopped in front of one door.

「What's this place?」

「Fufufu, that's for you to enjoy after entering. Now, here we go」

Cathy took out a key and opened the door. There's a long descending staircase leading underground. I feel something bad will happen.

「Hey, Cathy. What's this place?」

「It's my secret base. Ren is the first one I told about this place」

Cathy's secret base? I have several hideouts I prepared too so I know but why now?

Despite my anxiety, Cathy descends the stairs with light steps. Then when we got down there's a iron door there. My anxiety increased. I shouldn't open this. This is definitely connected into something bad. My instincts tell me that I should return.

However, Cathy doesn't release my hand. It's impossible to get away from the explosive breasts pressing against my arm.

Then, the door opened.

It was a torture room.

It's a room for torturing criminals.

I thought for a moment that master would torture me but when I saw what's there I noticed that I have the wrong Idea.

What's there is a restraining stand and chair, wooden horse<sup>5</sup> lined up, on the wall are torture tools lined up. Looking at the shelves on the wall side, there are a lot of SM good lined up. Various kinds of candle and dildo are gathered and arranged, you can use whatever suit your taste. Chains are hanging from the ceiling and it has handcuffs at the end. Then, at the back of the room is a prison.

This is a very 'Evil Hobby' SM room. Bringing me into this room, what does Cathy want to say?

「Hey, Cathy. Can I go back?」

「It's obvious that you can't. Ren will be with me until I get satisfied for today」

What are you talking about.

I'll be with you?

In this room?

Spare me from that. The level is a bit too high for me.

「Ah, by the way I have an errand to do—. We I have to hurry up and—  
...」

「It's useless, Ren. If you run away, I'll bring you back no matter how many times it will take. Also, can you endure that?」

Cathy tempts me with her prided body.

I can't have sex with anyone recently, my horny body reacted with just that. The feeling of her no bra explosive breasts, the pleasure of the hands that grope my fingers. If it's Cathy, I should be able to have sex with her regardless of the curse Seria has put.

「Hey, Ren. Isn't it fine? I was told to endure it so I endured all this time. You embraced women one after another but I endured being alone. I'm glad with that but I'm about to reach my limit. Even you can't have sex and it's getting accumulated? Then, you're okay even with just today!?!」

Cathy's bloodshot eyes complains her frustration. Certainly, since I started my guard duty with Seria, Cathy had endured since then while I did as I please. I can't refuse if she say that.

「.....Argh, Geez, I get it already. I'll bully you thoroughly today so prepare yourself you swine!」

「Aaaaa! More, abuse me more!」

Cathy switched to M mode right away. She writhes as she embrace her own body.

I'm surprised that she made a torture room to satisfy her huge

Masochism. I'll train her thoroughly today.

Then let's begin training this swine Cathy.

Right now Cathy's body is bound nude and she's suspended in the ceiling.

The rope torments the plump brown meat of hers. Whenever Cathy moves, her emphasized explosive tits shakes, it's a nice view.

Since she'd be shouting some noisy jargon so I installed a ball gag on her mouth so she won't be able to talk. Still the 'Hiii' is noisy.

「Cathy looks so happy. Does being bound really feel that good? If you like being bound so much should I boil you and make you a boneless ham?」

「Fuahiihafufuifahihafu!」

「Haha, could it be that you're pleased?」

She's saying something as her droll spills, I can't understand it at all so I ignored it. Anyway, I imagine that she's just being excited being attacked by boiling water.

I triangular wooden horse is placed under Cathy. It's a women torture instrument with sharp bearing to rip the meat off. I wanted to try using it once. Sitting down feels painful but that said, she's shaking her waist and imagining makes her aroused.

「Then I'll lower you. Good luck enduring it. If you can endure it for thirty minutes I'll give you a reward」

「Fuai!」

The same time I flipped over the hourglass, the chain hanging Cathy makes a jingling sound. Cathy's bare lower half is pressed against the sharp surface. The triangle rips and divides her mons veneris. Cathy screamed gladly to that pain.

「Higiiii!」

Her vagina got wet, her love nectar immediately runs through the triangle. I weakened the force by lifting her a bit then put weight on her pubis a bit. Seeing Cathy's soft-looking flirty meat getting crushed is somehow making me excited.

Cathy feeling excessive pleasure opened her eyes wide. Her nipples are erect and her breathing get rough from arousal. It seems that she's used to this degree of pain. Really, what a complete pervert.

As I admire Cathy, she finally swung her own waist. Sandwiching the slope on her thighs skillfully, even she's bound she wriggled her body to rub her erect clitoris against the wooden horse. Since the wooden horse has a slime liquid instead of lotion applied beforehand, it shouldn't be able to graze nor peel off her skin. In exchange a medicine that strengthens stimulation was mixed in there. Every time it's rubbed the mucous membrane would itch.

Shaking her waist because it's itch, it's getting itchy because she shake her waist, it's an endless torture. But, It's just enough for Cathy.

「You like the wooden horse? Of you rub it that much you'd get tired immediately」

「Hihohiiifuo! Fuaaaaua!!」

Ignoring my advice, Cathy is devoted to shaking her waist. They

audacious way of using her waist is indecent and is extremely interesting.

But, it's boring if I just watch, I should try other toys then. Looking at the shelf, I picked up a huge clip. A string is attached and there's a small iron ball dangling on the other end. I took two and returned to Cathy.

Seeing what I have in my hand, Cathy's face distorts happily.

「Okay, next would be this. Do your best」

「Fuaaaaaa!!」

I clipped both of Cathy's nipples. It made a snapping sound, Cathy raised a cry. Releasing the iron balls that seem to be heavy, Cathy's brown breast hangs down, pulled by the gravity. Still, the wonderful tension and elasticity resists the weight.

Every time she shake her waist, pain runs through Cathy's nipples. But Cathy converts it to pleasure instead and she began to shake her upper body violently.

Boing boing, her explosive breasts shakes and her ass meat is being smashed by the wooden horse. It must've been painful but Cathy doesn't stop as she feels good.

「Haha, you're really a perverted masochist. If you move so much, your nipples would stretch」

「Fuiiii! Hifufui! lifuooo!! Fuaa! Aaa!! Aaaaa!!」

Cathy shakes her waist while sweating. It hasn't been five minutes since we started but it seems that she's close to climaxing.

「Hey, Hey, Cathy, if you came your beloved penis would be postponed, are you okay with that?」

「Fuaaahehefu! Ehfuo! Hifuohiihoo!!」

「I don't get what you're talking about. Hey, say it again」

I removed the ball gag and made her mouth free.

「I want your penis! But, My pussy is so itchy I can't stooop!! My nipples getting pulled feels really good!! Even though I shouldn't! I'm moving without permission!!」

Cathy keeps on moving while shouting. The place bound and rubbed by the ropes reddened but Cathy doesn't stop.

She can't do anything but cum, it would happen no matter what. Her body trembles bit by bit, she's close.

「Aaaaa!! Noo~ I'm at my limit! Cumming! Cumming!  
Cummmmmmmmming!」

Cathy reached climax before long. Her back curved, the nipple weights jumped up greatly. Then, her usual explosive breast swung greater than usual. Her nipples seems to be in great pain.

「Aaaaaaa!! Amaziiiing! Naaaaaa!!」

But, Cathy accepted it as pleasure. She's really quite a pervert.

After confirming that Cathy came, I looked at the hourglass.

「It's not even half. Cathy, I'm sad to say but the penis has to wait. Ah, that's regrettable」



「Fuee? Posponed?...Wait, wait! Have mercy! I'll do anything, please give me your affection!!」

Cathy that desires my penis shakes her waist like always. Seeing that appearance, not doing the real thing is not a choice but I'd like to bully her more.

Looking around finding what punishment is good, the whip from the triangle wooden horse caught my eye.

「Then, orgasm 10 times from 10 whips. I'll forgive you then」

「Whipping! Aaa!!」

Cathy had an ecstatic look when she heard about whipping. As expected it's still a reward. Well, if it's a play then it's fine I guess.

「Okay, then I'll begin immediately. Are you prepared?」

「Yes! Please! Master!!」

Cathy's extremely eager. I guess I don't need to hold back. I swung the whip that looks like a horse's, then I whip it to Cathy's big ass.

「Naaaaaaaaa!!」

Paaan! A child like sound echoed though the underground torture room. Then, Cathy's sweat splashed at the same time. A swelling line appeared on Cathy's brown skin. It's not to the extent that it bleed but it's still painful. However, the person in question seems to be happy.

「More! Beat me up more!」

「It can't be helped. Next!」

I swing the whip down again while going around Cathy. This time, it's her back and I made another shot.

「Aaaa! Hyaaa!!」

Cathy is trembling. She thrust her tongue out and drooled, the pain is bringing pleasure into her. I know that my beating of Cathy's body won't shake her at all but I fail to understand why she's feeling good. But, if that's what my partner wishes, I'll go along with it. While we're at it, I also throw out my anger from I accumulated recently, I imagined Seria's face as I wield the whip.<sup>6</sup>

「This is for Seria! For putting me such a strange curse」

「Aaaaahn~!」

Paan, the sentiments echoed.

「You'll see! I'll definitely make you regret it!」

「Hiiiiiiii!!」

I hit her on the fifth time. The red stripes on Cathy's glossy brown skin increased. Then Cathy's arousal increased at the same time. The endless flow of her love nectar made the triangle profusely wet, her bound body keeps twitching. It seems that she's about to cum for the second time.

「Cathy, don't cum until I finish my 10 whips. If you do, I'll hit you 10 more times」

「Haa, hahii...Aaaa!!」

I don't know whether Cathy can still hear me, I did the remaining whips.

「Matifa too, Matifa. Even though you're my slave you still made the curse!」

「Fugiiiiii!!」

「I'll also give her lots of punishment!!」

「Nhiiiiiiii!!」

I made the 6th and 7th on her left and right ass, Cathy is finally reaching her limit. It's obvious that she won't be able to endure the next whip. I was thinking where to go to make her cum for the second time, I reached conclusion immediately.

I throw in a hit on the erect nipples that's in between the clip mercilessly.

「I'll make it so that they can't defy me anymore!!」

「Igiiiiiiiiii!!」

The moment I hit her, Cathy's explosive breasts made a big wave and sent extreme pain into her. At the same time, Cathy bent her back greatly and reached climax violently. *Pushaaaa*, water blew out from her crotch, the horse and the floor is wet.

She had her second climax with two remaining hits. The remaining would be 12 then.

「Hey Hey, Cathy, It will never end if you're like that. The penis will be postponed forever」

「Hii...Hahii...Hihaa...」

Cathy only leaked out a broken voice. Her consciousness had completely trip.

「Well, fine」

It can't be helped, I decided to keep beating her until 30 minutes pass.

However, after thirty minutes, I hit Cathy times and she came 8 times. It seems that she doesn't understand what I'm saying anymore.

I lift the bound Cathy again and released her from the wooden horse.

It continue to rub Cathy's pussy for thirty minutes so it's swollen red. But, it's not split nor bleeding internally. As one would expect from putting weight on one point.

Her flattery meat is wet, it's opening and closing, desiring for a penis. I should be hitting her 18 more times but to be honest, I'm tired. Also, I want to do it soon. This seeping out ripe pussy would definitely feel good. I want to thrust in sooner.

「Cathy, can you hear me? If you can then answer」

「Ha...Aha...ah...」

「That's no good」

Cathy's consciousness has flown completely. It can't be helped.

「Okay, Cathy. It's your punishment for being unable to endure. I will use you only for the purpose of making me feel good. I'm going to thrust in your beloved penis so be thankful」

I lowered Cathy and removed the ropes. Removed the clip on her nipples.

I freely let Cathy lie down on the restraining stand face up, I opened her legs and entered between her thighs. I put my glans on the vagina of almost unconscious Cathy.

I'm vigilant whether Seria's curse would activate, but nothing odd happened in particular. It seems that it determined that there's consent even in such a state.

Then I don't need to hold back. I mercilessly and angrily thrust into Cathy's ripe pussy.

「Haaaan~!」

My penis getting wrapped in a meat jar after a while trembles in joy. Cathy's pussy flesh is wet till the interior, the balance of soft flesh and the tightening muscles is exquisite, It might be the best sexual feeling. The feeling of convulsions and the sticky pole is pleasurable. Sex is wonderful as expected.

While rejoicing on the pleasure, I shake my waist selfishly. Cathy's swollen red pussy feels pain but every time I rub, her vagina seems to be shutting happily. Lewd voice leaks out from her mouth, she seems to feel good. Just how masochistic are you?

While I violently push up Cathy's womb, I allowed myself to enjoy the taste of her body. Since I've been keeping company with children recently,

I want to enjoy the charm of a woman from time to time.

When I bury my face on her scruff, a intense smell of sweat drifts. It's because I bullied her a while ago. I made my tongue crawl and it tasted salty sweat. Then when I move my face below, there are two big hills. The violent lump of meat is filled with content. It spills on the space even if I grasped it by hand. I rubbed, pushed , and played with it. I sucked the tip wondering if breast milk would come out, but it doesn't come out as expected. Her vagina tightens instead. It feels too good that I might ejaculate immediately.

「Cathy, how's it? Are you awake?」

「Naaa! Haaaaa! hyaaaa!」

「Not at all. But, about to release my first shot」

To pour semen on the gasping Cathy as her pussy open up getting pierced, I made my piston faster. Cathy's vagina shuts moderately in this situation and it sucks my penis. I kept poking her twitching womb violently, I played with her breasts, knocking it down.

「Ah! Aaah! Hyaaaaaaa! Ah, Cumming! I'm cumming again!!」

Then, while I thrust, Cathy finally woke up. She's flustered from the piercing pleasure, unknowingly her body convulses.

「You finally woke up. Right now I'm going to pour in the semen you love so much」

「Ah! Seemen! Master's seemen!! Give me! Please spurt on this meat toilet's pussy!」

Cathy asked like it's a conditioned reflex. I moved my waist wildly in response.

The plump and thick resistance wrap up from Cathy's vagina7 As I enjoy the adult charm I can't savor from the other children, I reached out to Cathy's clitoris to make her cum.

I rubbed it a while ago, the clitoris is redder than ever. I'm sure that touching it would be stimulating. I pinched it with my finger, stir it up, roll it, and pulled it.

「Hiiiiiiii! That's goood! AH! Cumming!! Something big is comiiiiiiing!!」

「Gu...」

Cathy's waist is convulsing. I attack her womb and clitoris at the same time, she already reached her limit.

Her vaginal wall pulses, it's stroking my penis violently.

「Uoo, cumming! cummiiiing!」

「Hyaaaaaaa! I'm cumming! Cummmiiiiing!!」

—Dopyu, byururu, byururu!

My glans pressed in her uterus and the 5 day's condensed semen is released inside her vagina. I spout out my semen vigorously and filled in Cathy's womb.

Cathy reached climax at the same time, her whole body convulsed. Her waist mad a hold of my waist and her womb is drinking down my semen.

Her expression seems to be extremely happy.

「Haa...Haa..., Ah it feels good. As expected this things are good once in a while」

「Nu, Ren's semen... A lot of semen」

Cathy muttered with empty eyes. But, since she felt good, it should be fine.

Afterwards, we started second round without breaks, and we ended after the fifth time. Cathy was tormented well, she accepted lots of semen with great delight in her expression.

- 
1. Secret room is the literal translation but I figured out that I want to make a harry potter reference ↩
  2. まるでそうするのが自分の使命だとでも言わんばかりだ。↩
  3. 自分ならやれる。↩
  4. GO EE-SAMA! ↩
  5. donmai.us/posts?utf8=✓&tags=wooden\_horse , let me remind you that Cathy is a Masochist ↩
  5. Yes, Punishment time for Seria! ↩
  7. 重量感のある膣肉の抵抗とむっちりと包み込むような感触はCathyならではの。  
↩



## Chapter 56: Spirit Magic

It's been a while since I've come to meet Lululie in front of the castle gate at night.

The state of the town has been dangerous recently.

Armed men walk around the town calmly and caused nothing but incidents everyday. They're not just making fights, robbery, murder and even rape happens frequently that the knights are becoming tense. A girl can't walk alone by herself anymore.

The cause of this are the two marquises.

According to Cathy's report, Radom's noble faction are planning coup d'état. The excuse was the audience last time.

Desire's noble faction began to extremely spread the event that happened during the audience.

It's said that it's a failed Assassination of the King.

It's said that assassin Beheader is an assassin of Will Gantt house.

It's said that the ones who attacked Princess Seria is Will Gantt House.

It's said that the court magician Trovas and Knight Lion cornered the assassin but the first prince Radom let him go.

It's said that the king has decided to make the second prince Desire the next king.

There's a limit for bullshits. However, the people doesn't verify it, they can do nothing but make speculation based from rumors. The assassin is thrown by the Misumunto kingdom, or Seria was the aim during the

meeting, there are various speculations flying around. I want to plead my innocence with all my power.

That's why Radom and Will Gantt house are cornered right now. Even if Radom becomes the next king right now, the people's support won't be obtained. The matter of Seria's attack too, aside from the people, Ortiz already knows the truth. Even if that King Ortiz is indecisive, if blamed by public, it won't be allowed<sup>1</sup> If this continues, Desire might really become the next king. It's impossible to rollback anymore.

Having that suspicious, the nobles at Radom faction began to betray each other. When it happens, it's too late already. Only strong measures are left for them. Before they weakened, they must steal the throne using their power. Then the coup d'état was planned.

In fact the betrayal was Mark Newt's work. Since this is Cathy's report, there's no mistake.

After all, everyone is dancing on top of the palm of the pig. I don't know whether a pig has a palm.

While I was thinking, Lululie came out from the gate.

She looks a bit tired thinking of something. Recently, Lululie is like this. Is she worrying about something?

「Good work. Your face looks dark, are you okay?」

「Yes, I'm okay. Let's go back then」

Lululie turned bashful to deceive me. It's like she's hiding her worry. Then, I decided to begin to be a meddlesome person.

「Is your body okay already? Are you overworking?」

「Thanks to you I recovered completely. Allow me to be your guard again today. You don't mind?」

「No, it's reassuring that you're with me. It's been dangerous recently... But, Ren-san too, please don't overwork yourself」

「It's fine so leave it to me」

We walked in the night city while talking. Lululie's topic is often concerned with Seria. Recently, the princess has become energetic. She had been complaining today about not being able to go outside. She wants to get out soon. She doesn't feel at ease in the castle. I see.

Then, while we were talking.

「The princess eats well recently. She even said that her stomach is empty and sneaked snacks today—」

「Lululie, come here for a moment」

「Kya, what's wrong?」

I held Lululie on her shoulder and pulled her closer.

I feel signs of magical power of two people from the roof on the left rear. It seems that they're following us. I hid Lululie and walked.

「Is there someone following us?...」

「You noticed?」

「Yes, ever since that incident, I became able to understand the fearful atmosphere」

Lululie seems to have become sensitive during the disturbing incident.

It seems that she's a bit scared.

We proceed to a relatively bright road. It seems that they don't intend to attack us when there are people. They might've intend to just follow us.

I was wishing for nothing to happen as we pass the houses but it didn't work.

The pedestrian breaks off and it became just us. Then, the two signs blocked the turning points.

The two men covered in hood approached us from front and back. I don't see any weapon but I can't relax just because the enemy are empty-handed. I stopped Lululie who prepares her magic and asked the pursuer.

「Who're you guys? What do you need from us」

Then, the one approaching from front answered.

「We can't reveal our Identity. Sorry but you have to go with us. Don't resist if you don't want to get hurt」

It seems that they don't want discussions. Then, when they came near, I understood their identity.

Their presence is almost the same as Misha. The two of them might be remodeled beast men. Then it means that it's Desire or Mark Newt house. We can settle by talking, but since they're slaves they can't disobey orders.

Their aim is Lululie?

「That's impossible. It's my job to guard her after all」

「Then, I'll have to resort to force」

The beast men runs forward. Their hand has the same shining claws like Misha. Their speed is inferior to Misha but it's still a wonderful speed. Well fine, let's finish this in a flash.

I pulled out a dagger from my waist and attacked them.

Remodeled beast men mainly use claws. But, compared to Misha, their movements have hesitation, there's no sharpness either. It's probably because they have intention of capturing us alive.

They swing down their claws aiming for the arm, I let it pass through like a bullfighter. After kicking it's running back, I throw him to the second person coming from behind. These two aren't used to fighting, to the extent that their coordination is in disorder. He retracted his dangerous claws and caught his partner.

I hit the man's legs through the gap, then pierced it with the dagger at full force. They might've the same strength as Misha but that's not the case.

「Gua!」

The blade dig into his feet as planned, it's depth is just several centimeters, far from a fatal wound. The tendon should've been hurt. He could still move but it would be a hindrance if he tried to run.

Aiming at the gap I created, another claw approached. I warded it off at the last minute by turning my dagger to a shield. The dagger is torn like the same time with Misha, I got a laceration on my arm but I can still fight.

I took the arm and was about to fling him against the ground but it didn't happen because of the muscle strength My arm made a creak on

contrary.

「Kuh, do it at the same time」

「Roger」

The one with damaged legs shouted to recover, the two attacked again.

「Lululie, go back」

「Okay!」

I pulled out another dagger from my waist and I'll also fight back.

While diverting the nails coming with my right arm, I dodge the summersault aiming for my legs. When I put a feint towards the face, they stopped to protect their arms. AS expected they're not used to fighting.

But, even if they're inexperienced, their physical ability is terrible. I'd lose if this is prolonged. However, it won't happen.

We have another person here.

「Dance with the wind spirits. Reveal your power according to my covenant. Turn and turn, rampaging violent wind. Swallow everything and send them home whirlwind. Eliminate this rubbish with pure wind—. Rensan, please go back!

「Ou!」

Lululie chanted the spirit magic with a voice like a bell, the magical power rises from my rear.

We've decided this when we signed the guard contract. If I lack in

decisive hit, if something happened that confined me, Lululie would finish it with her spirit magic. If it's impossible, then the two of us would run away.

Spirit magic chant takes time and the power is also unstable. Especially in urban areas with less spirits, the power weakens. But, even weakened it's still intermediate class magic, sorry for the living bodies that would be hit by that.

「Dangerous, stop!」

The beasts started running to stop the magic. Just because the one who has instantaneous power is on the other side, you really think that you can easily shake me off? But, even if it's predicted, it's not significant.

「Like hell I'd let go」

I grabbed the heads of the two people who tried to go past me then threw them down the ground at full power. Changing the two's running energy to rotating energy, they fell on the ground while rotating. Their head bumped strongly. Meanwhile, I escaped Lululie's range.

Then, Lululie's magic activated.

「Whirling Violent Wind (Vortex)[The furigana is this ウエルテクス]」

Along with her shout, wind swirl around the beasts that fell down. The wind increased in a moment then it extended to the sky while being dyed by the rolling sand. Despite it being a separate location, the storm was to the degree that it carried the bodies hard. The two of them are taken away by the storm, they flew several meters to the sky while revolving

intensely.

「Oo~ They flew~」

It's a very merciless power. They got swallowed up was beaten down by the sand taken together, they hit the ground and lost their sense of balance. I won't be saved by that at least.<sup>2</sup>

While thinking that, the beast men that's blown several meters away fell from the sky. Though there's the unpleasant sound of meat falling to ground, but it'll be better than Misha slamming into me.

When we looked at them, the beast men aren't dead as expected. But their bodies have wounds here and there, they can barely move, let alone fight. I haven't decided what to do after this, for the time being, let's bind them properly.

「Ren-san, are you okay?」

After restraining the two people, Lululie ran. As expected having her use this magic would tire her, she's breathing heavily.

「Yeah, thanks. Nice timing. What about Lululie, Are you okay?」

「Yes, my magical power is already cut, I didn't move」

It seems that she really used her magic on full force Indeed it was a strong power. Since Matifa's level is strange as she can paralyze in rapid succession, but this is an excellent one. Even adventurers can't easily practice magic of this power. Should I say 'As expected from an elf'?



「If it's hard then take a rest. I'll do the cleanup」

「Rather than that, Ren-san, we need to treat your wounds」

Lululie take out a towel from her bag and wrapped the wound on my arm. Treatment is difficult before long.

Meanwhile, the people who heard gathered and began an uproar  
When I thought it would be troublesome, a familiar face appeared.

「Lululie-dono, are you safe!？」

「Lion, why are you here?」

The blonde handsome knight appeared gallantly. His appearance is shining pointlessly.

With the appearance of a hero's egg, the onlookers got excited.

I wonder why. Even though he came late, he turned to be the main character in an instant. The atmosphere turned to be a beautiful girl being attacked by thugs was saved by the Hero Lion. The onlookers who just came recognize it like that at least. I'm just a villager a that got involved.

Is this the difference of Lion's charisma and mine? That's convenient on it's way but it's somewhat frustrating. Damn you.

「I was walking on the streets then I recognized a magic so I ran quickly. What's this commotion...」

「That's...」

Lululie looked at me asking for help. Tempted, Lion looked at my place and finally noticed my existence. He frowned as if I'm a suspicious

person.

「Who're you?」

Who do you think you are? If he wasn't aware, I wish that he didn't notice me eternally. Because seeing you makes my scar hurt.

「I'm Ren. When I was guarding Luluie, this guys attacked us. Then, Lululie cooperated with me to take them down」

「Is that so?」

「Yes, that's right」

Hey, why did you bother confirming it with Lululie.

「Is that so? You're injured. I'm going to use recovery magic so don't move」

Lion casted healing magic and the wound on my body was healed. This knight seems to be good at recovery magic. It's a guy that has no gaps.

「Will you allow me to hear the circumstances? Lululie-dono too」

「I don't mind but, here?」

「No, we really can't do it here, at least on a nearby station...」

「Haa, got it. You're okay with it Lululie?」

「...Yes, It's fine」

Then I was interrogated and they began investigating.



In the room of the station, I'm facing Lion.

「Do you have an idea on who else is being targetted?」

「I told you that I don't know. Ask those guys if you want to know their purpose」

「There's another person interrogating them but they're silent. It seems that magic was used to make them unable to」

「Then the more that I don't know」

「I just thought that you may know something. Really, anything's fine. Their aim and identity, is there anything coming in your mind?」

「I told you that I don't」

Lion asks seriously.

It's already been two hours since the interrogation began. I kept sticking to 'I don't know' but Lion doesn't seem to give up easily. When I glanced to the poster stuck on the wall, this guy is doubting that I'm a fugitive. That's right motherfucker.

He must've noticed that the hostile during the audience has no magic so it's no wonder I'm being suspected. Or rather, I'm sure that he's suspecting me.

He can't ask directly because he has no evidence. But, if they used a lie detecting magic, I can't dodge it. Just like what Seria did.

However, I'm troubled. I want to return earlier but this guy doesn't seem to let me go. Also, if my true colors come to light, I have no choice but to

give up Lululie and run away. I don't want that.

While I was thinking what to do, Lululie and an unknown knight entered knocking the door. Lululie's mood seems a bit bad.

「Lion, how long are you going to interrogate Ren-san?」

Lululie asked Lion in a slightly stronger tone. She seems to be angry because the investigation is too long.

「Lululie-dono, this is necessary for the investigation...

「Really? we're the victims you know. We've been restrained for a long time at night, what are you thinking?

Lululie pressed angrily. Lion raised his hand as he was overwhelmed.

「This is to prevent you from being attacked again...」

「Then, why do you keep asking Ren-san? Didn't mine ended already?」

「Errr, you see...」

Lion's glance swim around. As expected he can't say that he's suspecting me being the assassin.

...You can't say it don't you?

「He's my and Lilith's benefactor. Please release us soon」

Lululie declared flatly. That's reliable. Let me fawn over that kindness, the girl helped me in trouble. Lululie is really a good girl.

Lion is now wondering what to do. If I'm the assassin, he can't afford to let me go. But, he needs a reason to restrain me further than this.

Naturally, I won't give out the reason, I won't show the tail of the assassin. I can keep talking while picking booger.

However, it's also pitiful for Lululie to stay longer than this. Let's put blame and go home.

「Hey, it's already late at night so can we continue tomorrow? I'm also worried if Lululie's house is safe」

Misha is there so it's fine, but I can't be certain. It's my real intention to go home sooner and confirm their safety.

Lion turned into me surprised. This guy's face has been thinking up until now. Don't joke with me.

「T-That's right. The house needs to be confirmed safe. Understood. Let's continue tomorrow」

Lion accepted the demand easily. We're finally released and went our way back to Lululie's home. Then, Lion followed from the back.

Feeling unpleasant, Lululie turned back.

「Why are you following us?」

「Because I have to confirm Lululie-dono's house's safety」

「No thanks. If there's something I'll go on my own so please go back」

「However...」

「I told you I'm fine. In the first place, I don't trust you knights. Specially I don't intend to show my house to a man like you」

「T-that's...」

Lion wants to say something but he can't speak back. Still, Lion persisted but, in the end Lululie told him to back down. The strongest knight being defeated by the maid looks pathetic.

When we returned home, the children were in the world of dreams. Their sleeping smiles and squishy cheeks show up in the room.

After Lululie drive Lion away, she's been thinking about something. It seems that she's in trouble so much that she forgot to hum like usual on the bath.

I took a breath after stepping out the bath, I sat down the sofa and decided to cut to the chase on Lululie who has an irritated face.

「Lululie, is there something that you've been thinking all this time?」

Sitting next to me, Lululie spoke up. Then, Lululie answered me with a serious face.

「...Ren-san, what do you think of Lion?」3

- 
1. 表立って糾弾はせずともそれを許しはすまい。↩
  2. 少なくとも俺では助からない。↩
  3. No, you're not being NTR'd, don't worry about it ↩

## Chapter 57: Lululie's worry.

It seems that Lion is the cause of Lululie's worries.

What does this mean?

Lululie sees Lion as the same as those knights that betrayed her, he's a man that restrained me earlier for long without reason, he's a colleague in a sense because he's been entrusted as Seria's escort. I wonder if Lion did something<sup>1</sup>

「If you ask me, he's a foolishly strong handsome knight that has a delicate features. However, he's too upright that he's not flexible and it's annoying. He didn't send us back earlier after all」

While were at it, he also tried to kill me and I'm still not forgetting the grudge from the injury. Should I let Matifa step on him? Of course, while wearing shoes.<sup>2</sup>

「Annoying? ...Do you think you can trust him?」

「Can't he be trusted? It doesn't seem he'd do the wrong thing」

Seria said that, not actually wrong thing. He made the best judgement to kill me, he doubted me and restrained me, well, it's not that I don't know.

But, he had the chance but it's foolish for him to let me go away. It's to the extend that he didn't notice when I was raping Seria on the other side of the door. He really isn't useful. There's no problem if I just dismiss it?

But, Lululie looks like she's not convinced. There maybe something that made her unable to trust him anymore.

「What's wrong with Lion?」

「Yes, I feel a bit uneasy...」

「Are you worried?」

I said that Lululie should speak out her worries. It's probably something in the castle. Did Lion do something while I was down with a cold?

After Lululie hesitated for a bit, she then began to speak in a serious face.

「Please keep this an absolute secret. It would be a problem if someone else would know this」

「Yeah, got it. I'll definitely make it a secret」

「Actually, recently Lion and the princess seems a bit strange. The two of them are keeping secrets from me... I examined it by myself but there's a limit to what I can do... But, I'm perhaps those two are doing something no good so I'm worried, I'm worried...」

「No good!?!」

I stood up vigorously.

You just said that no good? If it's a man and a woman then it would be 'that'!?

Damn Seria, she put a curse on my dick and go to other men, I won't let that! If it comes to this, I'd use aphrodisiac and I'll make sure to train her so she won't go against me anymore.

Then, I'll kill Lion3

But, I won't end it by just murdering him. I'll peel of his skin one by one and rub it with salt and burn him on the brazier, when he weakens, I'd



make him use healing magic again and again to make him taste the pain. I'd scrape it off using a file that'd he'd writhe and die in pain!

「Uhm...Ren-san?」

Lululie called out to me scared, 'Haa' I came to my senses. Shit. I suddenly leaked out my bloodthirst.

「Oops, sorry. I was disturbed a bit」

Wait, calm down. Seria knows that I would try to kill Lion. That's why Seria won't go to Lion. Seria thinks that I'm much more dangerous than Lion.

But what about Lion? When I was speaking to Lululie earlier, it was an awfully weak attitude? Isn't it strange that he tried to come to Lululie's house?

No, it's in to make sure that the house is really safe, or because I'm here. But, I think that it's strange he didn't strongly argue with Lululie. Did he hold back? or is he guilty about something?...

「Lion earlier was a bit suspicious. Do you have an idea?」

「Idea... Yes, probably」

Lululie nodded at my question confidently. I seen, you have an idea.

「It might be that Lion noticed that I'm aware of his secret?」

Secret? I wonder what's the secret of the strongest knight.<sup>4</sup> Is this

related to Seria? Could it be that he's the same as me?

「Can I hear the specifics?」

「That...I'm sorry, I can't」

Lululie evades her glance and refused to expose the secret. Her cheeks turned red, it looks like she's embarrassed. Embarrassing secret...Is it sexual?

In that case, it's difficult to get it out by force. There's no need to rush. Instead of hurrying up, I'll get it little by little.

「I see. If you can't then I won't force you. Let's put aside Lion for now then I want to understand about princess Seria a bit」

「That...?」

「Princess Seria keeping a secret from Lululie, I'm sure that it's for Lululie. Since she's a royalty, there are a lot. For example, if Lululie would know then Lululie would be in danger」

My true colors.

「Information that's dangerous to know...」

「That's right. Or something that might surprise you, or it might be that she's hiding her guilt, at those times, they'd take action. Something uneasy that makes you surprised, or feeling guilty that she can't say it while looking at your eyes. Is it something like that?」

「No, that's not how it is」

Lululie shook her head.

「Then, it's something that she can't talk about. Her attitude about Lululie isn't different then you shouldn't worry about it that much」

In fact, I want you not to worry. If you are, then I'd be found out. But, I have to check more about Lion.

Having worried about something else, Lululie has been pondering on what I said right now.

「Certainly, it's easy to face emotions, she's getting energetic recently too. Then, it might not be a bad thing... But, that's...」

「That?」

Lululie's monologue is mixed with that. I'm worried about my true color.

「Ah, no, nothing. Please forget what I said right now」

Lululie waved her hand to conceal it. It seems that it's pretty important.

「What 'that'? Is it something important?」

「No, if you ask for importance, it's not that important, I'm just afraid what others might think, I can't say it...」

Lululie rejects it badly. It's clear that her eyes are swimming around. Just what the hell is 'that'?

「Lululie, tell me. Just what the hell is 'that'? Is that related to princess

Seria and Lion?」

「Errr, yes. Quite...」

「In what manner?」

「That's...I can't say as expected」

Lululie doesn't say anything. I must know this somehow.

Is threatening effective to Lululie? Or should I trade?

No, that's not it. Sentiment. Lululie is weak at Sentiment. A man she relies on feigns to appeal for sentiment, it's the best hand.

「Lululie, I think that's the key to all. I'm sure that princess Seria is suffering, that's what Lululie is about right? I won't understand it if you don't tell me. I want to help the two of you. I can't return my debts on the two of you. Princess Seri helped me three years ago, Lululie overstrained herself and nursed me even if you're busy, you're important to me. That's why I want to be able to help you. Lululie, there's no need to handle the problem alone. Even if the enemy is Lion, I can give you at least an advice. What I heard from you will be kept as a secret. That's why, won't you tell me?」

I looked Lululie straight into her eyes and asked. Must not let the eyes go away. Blinking is forbidden. I stared at Lululie's eyes earnestly.

Lululie turns red in a moment. Before long, she averted her eyes bashfully.

「U-Understood. Please keep it a secret by all means」

「Of course. I'll definitely keep it as a secret. 」

While hesitating, Lululie told me about 'that'

「That, it was attached into princess' sheets」

Attached to the sheets. Sheets... Sheets...n?

「Sheets? what?」

「That...man's...semen...」

Lululie turned down her red face.

Semen, you mean Semen right? It's sticking into Seria's sheets.

...It's something that I know very much. Because I'm the one who put it there. —Huh? Could it be that Lululie misunderstood it as Lion's act?5

「Err, when did it happen?」

「I found it 4 days ago」

「Then, it only happened once?」

「Yes. Only once...」

Yup, there's no doubt. That's the semen of my anger and humiliation. Misunderstanding that it's Lion's, then she relate it with Seria's suspicious behavior? I see, it's interpreted strangely.

「Anything else?」

「Also...that, inside Princess' room, an indecent book is a bit...」

「Fumu...」

That's Matifa's book. The full scale dildo I gave as a present might be seen too. Seria, could you hide it better?

「Then, you didn't see it directly?

「Yes, that's all...」

Umu . It seems that Lion looks white.

Ah, I'm glad. I believed you, Seria and Lion. You guys are honest human beings.

But, I see. This opportunity came at last. —The time to reveal everything to Lululie.

The elf sisters persuasion plan finally reached it's climax.

I didn't know whether I should resign from the persuasion recently but thanks to that I think I build up a good influence. Honestly, I don't want to break our current relationship. This house is warm and comfortable. I don't want to lose it as much as possible.

But that's a lie.

My true colors, nor Lululie and Lilith's tranquility, all of it are lies.

Seria is hired Lululie using her power as royalty. Capo sells his medicine below the cost even though it's business. I'm protecting her from foreign enemies without telling her the truth. All of this are distorted dangerous situations.

If not for Seria, a demi-human like Lululie won't be able to work in the

castle. If Capo goes bankrupt, she won't be able to get inexpensive medicine. If I didn't protect them, Lululie and Lilith might've been kidnapped and used already.

If I keep quiet, the bomb will just grow bigger. The heart of this plan is to dispose the bomb. I must dispose this bomb with my own weapon. If I do so, this bomb would be the last resort of Seria and Lululie. 6 I might be able to have her remove this damn curse.

The moment to dispose the bomb came at last.

「Got it. Lululie, this definitely has to be kept. If I do then princess Seria is the one who would be troubled the most.」

「Yes, I know. That's why I didn't tell anyone」

「It's quite a painful thought. It must be hard to hold it by yourself」

「No, when I thought of the princess, it's not a big deal...」

The person herself must've been in much greater pain, Lululie said. It's true but, leaving out the most intimate person is quite painful.

「Princess Seria didn't talk to Lululie, it's like as I said earlier, it's to protect Lululie. She hid it from Lululie so she won't be involved in the trouble」

「Yes, that's what I think too」

「But, that's hard isn't it?」

「Yes...」

Tears swell on Lululie's eye. It seems that she's quite worried.

I feel sorry but I can't go back anymore. I must not turn back.

I gripped Lululie's small shoulder.

「Then, Lululie must decide what to do. Would you step in the secret of princess Seria? Or you'd pretend that you never saw it? That's for Lululie to decide. If you pretend that you never saw it, your relationship would just continue like before. But, if you stepped in, I don't know what will happen. You might even lose everything in some case」

「Everything...」

「That's right, everything. Not just your life. If you're not prepared to lose everything around you, then don't step in. —However, if you really want to learn about what's happening on princess Seria's body...then you must confirm it with your own eyes」

「My own eyes?」

「Yes. The soiled sheets are too weak as evidence. If you want to persuade princess Seria and catch the partner, you must first catch them in the act unless you won't know what's happening. Then you must make a settlement, if so, then Lululie would be joining in the person concerned. At least you'd be able to know Princess Seria's secret. ...But, think hard and make a choice. This is a choice for Lululie that will influence her life greatly. Even if you turned a blind eye to it, Lululie would never be able to blame who holds Princess Seria. I think that's the smart choice actually. If you want to learn then—prepare yourself.」

Lululie closed her eyes and was lost in thought. She went deeper and deeper into her heart.

I can't know what is it. I patiently waited for Lululie's thought to settle.

Before long, Lululie opened her eyes quietly. A strong light dwells in her eye. I understood what's the choice Lululie made.

「Ren-san, I want to know. If princess is in trouble,<sup>7</sup> it's my turn this time



to help her」

「Are you sure with that? Are you sure that you won't regret it?」

「Yes, I don't mind. ...If something happened to me, I'll leave Lilith to you

「Don't worry. I'll take care of Lilith until I die. I'll also protect Lululie」

「...Yes」

I held Lululie's small body in my chest. Lululie turns her arms on my back and buried her face on my chest.

Lululie's body is trembling with fear.

After embracing for a while, Lululie's body felt relieved and slept. She's considerably tired. It's no wonder, she's worried, nursed me and joined in battle.

Thus, the calm has come to end.

- 
1. Hahaha, that's cute, Ren, it's the semen that you smeared on Seria's sheets she's worried about ↔
  2. FUCKING HIGH HEELS! ↔
  3. ahahaha, this is hilarious ↔
  4. It's you ↔
  5. Yes, she did, and it's fucking funny ↔
  5. そうすれば、この爆弾はSeriaやLululieに対する切り札となってくれる。↔
  7. Then I will send Mario ↔

## Chapter 58: The answer Lululie gave.

Luluie didn't come back home the next day.

I said that I'd be on my night duty but I don't need to hear such a lie. Lululie will break into Seria's secret. Just like my advice, she's now watching Seria's room.

Removing the remodeled beasts look out, she sneaked in Seria's room. Since there's a barrier inside the room, Lululie's presence can't be felt from the outside. But, I believe in her.

Seria is sleeping on the bed. Seria's life cycle is sleeping early so she's probably asleep already. Or was there a sleeping pill on the meal added or is it magic induced sleep. Either way, yesterday and today's performance is fine.

I invaded from the window that I opened using Matifa's key.

Matifa strengthened the barrier so others can't interfere at all. Does she have interest even she's disgusted? I swear that I won't bother. 1

I felt Lululie's presence when I entered the room. It seems that she's hiding herself in the shadow of the desk.

I pretend to not notice Lululie and approached Seria . Seria's chest systematically move up and down. Saliva dripping from the corner of her mouth, it's unlikely that she's pretending to sleep.

The moment I reached out for the sleeping Seria, a plant ivy grows from the shadow of the desk and tied my body.

「Who are you? You're not Lion?」

Lululie appeared from the shadow of the desk. Wearing her maid uniform, she's glaring hard at the intruder me.

It's still Lion's time, he's guarding in front of the door. According to Lululie's expectations, Lion is supposed to enter from the entrance boldly. I can grasp that she's trembling as the man entered from the window unexpectedly.

「I'm asking who are you. Are you the rumored assassin?」

「Who do you think?」

「This voice!!」

When I work, all but my eyes are hidden. But, I can't change my voice. People who know me would notice.

「What's wrong? You don't know?」

「No way...why, why are you here?.....」

Lululie's body trembled, she slowly stepped back. Then, she screamed out my name.

「Ren-san!!」

I torn the ivy with my training blades and freed my arms. Then, I removed my mask and show my face.

「Yo, Lululie. I came here to meet you」

「Why!?!」

Lululie's trembling increased. She can't believe it, she doesn't want to believe, she shakes her head while looking straight to me, the reality is shown in front of her. Tears spill from her eye, her beautiful cheek turned wet.

「I told you that you'd definitely regret it. I came here to tell you everything. Since you prepared yourself, I'll tell you everything」

「Why do you know!? How did you invade here!? What's with that appearance!?!」

Lululie casts her doubt in succession. With the appearance of an unexpected person, she seems to be in extreme confusion.

「Calm down because I'll tell you in order. Oh right, let me introduce myself once again」

「...」

After confirming that Lululie postured herself to listen, I told her my identity once more.

「My name is Kirishima Ren. I'm a human that came from the other world three years ago, right now I'm making the backdoor business as my living. My nickname on public is Assassin 『Beheader』 I recently became an A-class fugitive. Best regards」

All the icy entangling on my body was removed.

Lululie also forgot to restrict me again, she's just trembling.

「A-assassin...」 Why are you...?」

「Assassination is just work for me, I don't like killing people. But, my power is suited for assassinations. I became this way because I'm desperate to live. That's why I can't explain even if you ask my reason. I'm not a killer that kills anyone without regard, I haven't accepted any assassination request now so be relieved on that」

Even if I say to ease up she won't be able to, but I really have no intention to harm anyone now. I only came here to talk to Lululie.

「Now then, on the question of why do I know. That's simple. It's everything that you see and hear. Who do you think saved you when you were betrayed by the knights on the mountain road?」

「According to the rumors it was the assassin... No way!」

Lululie put her hand against her mouth.

「That's it. I'm the one who killed all the enemy there and saved the two of you. I'm the one who carried the two of you to the capital. After that, I sneaked in the castle and investigated afterwards. I was attacked by Matifa in the process and also slashed by Lion」

「Then, the incident in the audience...」

「It's me」

Lululie doesn't want to believe it, she shook her head to reject it.

「That's, no way, that's a lie! You shouldn't be able to use magic!」

「Yeah, that's right. I can't use magic. But I have special power. For example—」

「He disappeared!?!」

I activated invisibility and moved to Lululie's back. Then, after releasing my ability, I called out to Lululie from the back.

「It's this kind of ability」

「!!」

Lululie jumped in surprise and took distance from me.

「Oh well, with this I can sneak inside various places」

「But!!」

「Well, you won't believe me immediately. Anyhow, you have no choice but to believe it」

「That's...Such things...」

Overwhelmed—Lululie can't continue speaking.

Anyone would be shaken if on the few people you trust, the one who you relied the most suddenly tells you that he's a fiendish criminal. Furthermore, it might've harmed their loved ones. I know well the feeling of not wanting to accept it.

However, she came here ignoring the warning. Lululie can't do anything but listen.

「Then, let's go back to the story. First, Lululie fainted on the mountain road—」

Then, forcing myself on the middle, I began to tell Lululie what happened until now.

「You lost consciousness on the mountain road and I exterminated the enemies on the location. The knights that betrayed you, the assailants, all of them. Then, when I returned the sleeping you on the carriage, I pushed down Seria on the spot. Seria doesn't like it but I forced myself ignoring her. Afterwards, I carried the two of you two to the capital and forbid Seria from speaking」

「You pushed down... Then, the reason why the princess is being strange is...」

「It's because of me. I'm much more scary than those who died in front of her eyes. I sneaked in the castle and raped Seria」

「!!」

Lululie stepped back trying to escape from me. As expected she doesn't want to be close to 'this beast'

「Why are you doing this...」

「Why? It's because I'm a trash. I like Seria. I love her. So, this trash wasn't able to endure and attacked her」

I moved on the side of Sleeping Seria and sat down on the bed. Then, I gently combed her silver hair.

「Three years ago, on the day I was forcibly sent into this world, the only support for my heart is just Seria. That Seria was made a political tool and was involved in a silly conflict. If this continues, she'd be defiled by

trash. If so, I'd rather take her away」

Even if we're noisy, Seria next to me is still asleep. The innocent happiness in her face remains.

「Lululie, if you have escaped to the fort safely, what do you think will happen?」

「If we escaped? Err, we'd be protected by the soldiers on the fort...and we'd be returning compulsorily?」

Lululie doubt's her confidence and answed. I shook my head.

「No. That day Misumunto Kingdom's prince McClane was there. I went ahead and examined it, that fellow wants to rape Seria in the evening. Then, the conditions of entering the alliance would be done. Seria was sold for the country」

「.....」

Lululie was speechless from my words. Before going out to travel, Seria doesn't even remember the partner's face. In such a place, the other person is waiting with his trap laid down, she was sent off without being told. It's likely that they think that she's a common woman.

「While we're at it I'll tell you, it's related to the surprise attack. Since Radom and Felix doesn't like the alliance, they hindered it. Then they half succeeded as a result and half failed. Thanks to that, the coup is being planned now. This is the situation Seria is in」

Lululie's body trembled in fright from the one-sided pressing of truth.



Still, she didn't miss every single word I said, she listened seriously.

「I cooperated with Cathy afterwards and examined what's happening. Matifa found out that I'm sneaking in the castle. She sent Misha to incite」

「Misha-chan?」

Lululie had a strange look asking why Misha's name came out. Lululie looks at her like an ordinary child.

「Yeah, Misha actually has the strength equal to a knights captain class. I turned tables on Misha who's reason is flying away and was liked by Matifa that tie, she lent out various power. In exchange, had quite a hard time with her」

「Then, Misha-chan is...」

「She's originally a slave bought by Mark Newt house for human experimentation. After Matifa liked her and remodeled her body, she came to me. For such a reason, she doesn't have a friend」

「Human experimentation...!」

Lululie had received shock from Misha's past. Since that girl remains calm, you won't expect her past to be that much. But it's definitely Matifa's influence why she displays aggression occasionally and having a broken sense of virtue. If you observe Misha while paying attention, even if you don't want it you'd realize.

「But, it's not a bad thing. If not for Misha, I wouldn't've noticed Lilith getting kidnapped. And you already know what's after tha」

「But, was it by chance that you came into my house?」

「It's genuine coincidence. But the guard offer was no coincidence. I

pretended all this time that I'm a good man」

「Is that so...」

Lululie cast down her head and clenched the hem of her skirt. She's probably recalling what's after me coming.

There's still some more I'd like to speak out but it's not important for now. I waited for Lululie's thoughts to settle. The room was wrapped in silence.

After a while, Lululie opened her mouth.

「Can I ask you a question?」

「Yeah, I'll answer anything」

「When you had a meal, when you had a meal when you were down, you did cry. Is that acting?」

Lululie remembered the meal. Having the nostalgic feel of eating meal from Japan, the comfort of having a comfortable home—.

「That's...not a lie. I'm grateful to Lululie and Lilith. That house was warm. The things I lost three years ago is in that house. I wanted to stay longer if possible. ...But, it doesn't suit me. The real me is this worst man」

Whether my reply was received or not, new tears fell on Lululie's cheeks. I'm sure that's the sadness from being betrayed by me. She was tricked by the man whom she trusted the most after all.

「Can you stop attacking the princess?」

「Sorry but I can't」

「By any means?」

「By any means. Kill me if you want me to stop. There's no method other than that」

I decided to not let go of Seria. That's why I won't give her up until I die. Even if it's a bad thing, I have not intention of stopping.

Hearing my answer, Lululie stopped looking at me.

Then, after hesitating, she changed the atmosphere she's wearing. The unstable magical power has regained composure.

Did she decide on something?

What kind of answer will Lululie give me?

Will she kill me? Or would she call Lion on the other side of the door? Or would she give up?

I prayed 'none of the above'. The scenario I desire isn't that. I spent my time preparing just for this moment.

Both of us fell silent and silence visited the room again.

I patiently waited for Lululie's next move.

Lululie peeks a glance at my face and she finally began to move as she prepared herself.

Lululie lifted her arm. That hand was holding the hem of her skirt.

The skirt gradually rolled up.

Her thin legs wrapped in white stockings came into view but she doesn't stop her arm.

Her fresh thighs decorated with garter belt was exposed to the air and shone in the dim room.

Then further up, the pure white lace underwear has come to my sight.

Lululie bites her lip and endured the shyness. Her face is curved and her long ears are red to the top, she showed her own underwear to me.

「I'll...be the substitute for the princess. I'll service you, I'll satisfy you. My body might not be as attractive as the princess but I'll do my best. I'll accept any kind of treatment. That's why, please. Please don't hurt the princess anymore」

Saying that, Lululie presented her body to me.

---

1. あいつも呆れながらも興味があるのか、邪魔しない事を誓ってくれた。←

## Chapter 59: Inside the skirt of the maid #

The appearance of Lululie seducing me by raising her skirt is beautiful.

Tears float on the corner of her eye as she endure the shame, she tries to force her delicate body at fullest, her mind tries to be the main substitute, all of it shine beautifully. 1

I want to defile that body right now.

But that's no good. That's not enough.

「Lululie, you're misunderstanding it. Do you know why I hadn't put my hand on you so far?」

「That's...because my charm is insufficient?」

Lululie speaks unconfident. She doesn't know her own charm because she's always with Seria. Indeed, compared to Seria, the degree of plumpness is lower. She doesn't have money nor power. But those don't matter to me.

「That's not true. You're quite a beautiful woman, gentle, tolerant, a fine woman. Your thin body makes me want to protect and dominate you a bit. If I was a bit more decent, I would've ask to marry you」

Among the women I've met, Lululie is the one I want to marry the most. Good looking and nice personality, furthermore long lived elves don't grow old. She would nurse me in her young appearance even if I'm an old man. Her lover can't possibly desire more than that.

Hearing that, Lululie's expression had some joy mixed in. The skirt is still rolled up and her face is still red but power entered her inner thighs and stirred a little. To gloss it over, Lululie enumerated wrong stuff.

「Then...it's because I'm an elf? Or because I'm just a burden? Neither Lilith and I can be of use to you...」

The power of her self evaluating voice grows weaker. Just how low do you evaluate yourself?

「That doesn't matter. Also, don't belittle yourself. You and Lilith are attractive enough」

「Then...why?」

「I promised Seria. When I raped her while you're sleeping, Seria presented her body to me reluctantly to protect you. It's the same as you right now. But, right now you're just betraying your master」

「That...」

Being told the fact that Seria protected her, Lululie pondered. She wants to protect Seria. But, Seria also tries to protect her.

I blame further the troubled Lululie.

「I'll say this while we're at it, you don't have the power to stop me. If I didn't protect you, you would've been gang raped by those men in that mountain, you would've been kidnapped yesterday. I don't know what would've happened to Lilith by now. That's not all. I'm the one who gives the material for Lilith to buy the medicine cheaply, Seria is safe from the confusion in the country is also thanks to me. You get it?」

Lululie and Lilith are living by being protected by a lot of people. Not just me and Seria, even Capo, the old lady director at the orphanage too. Among them my existence is the largest, it's not too much to say that I

hold their lives.

I hold Lululie's mind to get her out of the way, so she can't decide to disturb my relation with Seria. In fact, it is to not let her disturb.

The elf sisters are dependent on me, just how much do you hate me? You can't defy me anymore. If you do it'll only be your own ruin.

Then, the wise Lululie understood it properly.

「...Yes. I know」

「Then what would you do?」

「.....」

Lululie wants to help Seria. But, she can't become Seria's substitute, she can't defy me either. Lululie can't do anything.

If her mind breaks just like that, the talk would be easy.

『It's a joke, I was testing whether Lululie could be trusted. Sorry』I can't say that, if I speak sweet and nice words, then my obedient maid would be finished. Because the dependence was made, I can drown her with just gentle lies. Then, her mind and body would be mine.

Then, with Lululie completely dependent on me I won't hold back on Seria anymore. 'Remove the curse if you want Lululie back'

Lululie is a so-called hostage. Also, she's the most submissive hostage of mine.

This is my plan.

However, it wasn't done well.

Lululie's response is ahead of my shallow thought.

Power entered the hand which grasps Lululie's skirt. The downcast eyes

looked straight at me.

I feel that eyes overwhelm me for a moment.

Then, Lululie spoke in a trembling voice.

「Ren-san, I love you. Please...make me your lover. I'll do anything. That why...please make love with me2

——— Lover. It's a relationship where a man and a woman love each other.

I'm the farthest existence that preys on many women and had killed lots of people without regard of gender. Knowing my true nature, there's no way someone can be my lover.

But, Lululie indeed said that.

「Are you sure?」

「Yes, I'm serious. Whatever you did, I do love you」

What does this mean?

「Is Lululie sane? If you just want to be Seria's substitute, then I won't accept it」

「The princess is unrelated. If the princess says something, I'll persuade her. It's no good unless it's you!」

Lululie shouted. The Lululie that's more modest than Seria.

At that time, an Idea suddenly came into me.

It's obvious that she'd try to monopolize me if she's my lover. If I'm going towards Seria, she'd just attract me and have me go for her. Then,



when I'm satisfied with Lululie, Seria would be safe.

In short, it's that kind of thing. Just how long does she want to sacrifice herself until she gets satisfied. Taking care of Lilith and Seria by yourself, are you saying that you'll accept my desires.

Right now I can see Lululie as the most noble existence.

Instead of my aim to break her heart and make her depend on me, being lovers isn't bad either. With that said, this pure girl can be mine. There's nothing more than this.

That's why I answered the confession with a wicked smile.

「Then, prove it to me. Come here while lifting your skirt」

「Okay...」

While still showing her underwear, Lululie walks in front of me and slowly sat on the bed. In the dim room, the scent of a female drifts. The underwear that's soaked by sweat from all day's work is right in front of me.

It's a sexy lace underwear. I can speak how good it is from the elaborate design. It seems that she's the type that cuts her food expense because she's minding this stuff. Her important place is hidden but other parts of the skin can be seen. It's clean and filled with sex appeal enough to arouse me.

「It's beautiful. I got aroused」

「Please don't say it...」

At first, my hand crawled on her smooth thighs, Lululie's trembling is transmitted.

「Don't lower your hand until I say so. If you really want to be loved then you can do it」

「Yes, Understood...」

I enjoyed the feeling of her thighs as I stroke it. The thin flesh isn't bad, it's still soft, the feeling of my finger sticking to her soft skin feels pleasant. The feeling of the white stockings wrapping her thin legs is silky and great.

「I massaged you before. How was that?」

「It felt really good that time. Thanks to you my fatigue came off」

「Right now?」

「It's tickly, it feels a bit lewd」

Saying that, both her feet are glued together. It seems that she's embarrassed to be stroked by a man. But, she can't escape nor refuse my hand.

「Don't be so nervous. Just relax like last time and accept it. Doing so will make you feel pleasant」

「I-I'll try...」

Well, accepting it suddenly is difficult. Then, I'll just make her gradually accept it.

I let my hand wedge in the closed thighs. While I stroke her sensitive inner thighs, I wait for her to lose strength little by little.

「N...Nn...」

Lululie thought that her genitals would be touched immediately, a perplexed expression showed up in her. But, I'll teasing that place would be in suspense. Right now I observe it carefully from the top of the underwear.

Despite Lululie's embarrassment I stroke both feet alternately waiting intently on the place my hand is between to weaken. When my finger approached her genital, I understood that her body stiffened further. Still, I stroke her thighs with my hand obscenely.

To stir her unease, I slowly stroke the surroundings of her crotch, rubbing it harder occasionally, when I'm finally about to touch the genitals, I turn back.

I did it repeatedly, her skin had been growing redder and hotter.

If I stroke it all the time, the sensitivity rises up. The tension in her body has loosened a bit. Then, I asked Lululie again.

「How's it? Does it still feel ticklish?」

Then, Lululie murmured bashfully.

「No, it...feels a bit good」

Even though she's just being caressed she already feels good. It's not her genital nor breast, it's just her thighs. Feeling by just that must've felt embarrassing.

While satisfied by her innocent reaction, I further caressed her thighs. Gently stroking it in circles, touching her with a tickling soft touch, rubbing my cheeks on it, licking it to confirm the taste, a stain came up on Lululie's underwear. It seems that she can feel it.

Before long, her body lost its strength and her expression loosens, I made my finger crawl on her wet genital.

「Kya!」

Lululie raised a surprise voice to the sudden stimulation on her pussy. The skirt drops that moment.

「Oops, don't release it」

「Y-Yes, I'm sorry」

Lululie grips her skirt firmly and returned her posture to receive the caress again.

I lightly caressed Lululie's pussy on top of her adult underwear. It's soft and tender, and it's already filled with moisture. I must not get greedy, I'll chat with her slowly and rub and tease her.

「It's your first time with a man?」

「Y-Yes. It is.」

「Then, is this the first time a man touched you here?」

「Far from touched, it's the first time it's seen...」

She displayed it willingly despite it being her first time... That's some courage.

I caressed it slowly from the top of the underwear, not trying to stimulate it strongly. It may not be enough for Lululie but that's fine for now.

「Do you touch yourself?」

「Err, what do you...」

「Have you masturbated like this before?」

「That...yes, I did...」

Lululie made a small nod. Apparently she didn't just rub her chest. This elf might actually be quite erotic.

「Oh? How frequent have you done it? Occasionally? Or is it on a regular basis?」

She didn't do it while I stayed at least. If she did it's impossible for it to not be caught by my sensor. That's why I thought that she only did it several times but she gave an unexpected answer.

「...Is it no good if I don't say it?」

「Of course. If you want to become my lover then you're going to tell me your secrets」

「...Understood. I'll say it so please keep it as a secret」

「Don't worry. I'll protect your secret」

「That...it's almost everyday before you came...」

「Ha?」

Lululie answered awkwardly. She's masturbating everyday.

It's a bit unexpected for the serious Lululie to do it everyday. Lululie and Cathy, should the elves[erufu] in this world be called erofu?

「You did it everyday? But you haven't done since I came?」

「I can't do it when there's a man」

「But, if I'm not you're doing it?」

「.....」

「By the way what's your material?」

「There's none...」

Lululie has boiled red in shame. The beautiful girl shamfully raising her skirt is arousing.

While stroking the embarrassing place of Lululie, I continue to ask her.

「How do you do it usually? Do you put in your finger? Or it's just your clitoris?」

「...Please don't ask me those mean things」

「Just tell me」

Lululie is about to cry but I don't intend to stop. I want to see more of her embarrassed face.

As I continue to stare at her, Lululie muttered it as she had given up.

「...Clitoris」

「Oh, Clitoris? Like this?」

「Hyau!」

From the top of her underwear, I fiddled her swollen bean. She seems to be this sensitive despite it being on top of her clothes, Lululie's waist jumped.

「It seems to be true judging from that reaction. You've already done this much」

From the top of her clothes, I can understand that her clitoris is hardening from the stimulation. I fiddled with it for a while and her underwear gradually become wet.

「Hyaa...un...n...」

Lululie tries to escape by pulling her waist as she leaks out a sweet voice. But, I didn't let her.

「Don't run. If yo do then that's the end」

「...Yes. Nn...」

Unable to run away, Lululie had tears floating in her eyes from enduring the stimulation.

While stroking her clitoris, I didn't forget the entire pussy. On the top of the wet underwear, I strengthened rubbing her genitals. Her soft slit is eating the panties, the circumference is being stimulated by the finger's pad.

Though I don't give intense stimulation on her mucous membrane, Lululie is getting aroused from the slow and rising gentle pleasure. The love nectar increased gradually and sweet voice leaks from her mouth.

Only Lululie's voice echoes on the quiet room.

When Lululie noticed the change in herself, her underwear is profusely wet and it started to shoot out an indecent aroma. Lululie was aware of the change in her body and before she's aware she's confused in her arousal.

「Ah...why?...nu...」

「I wonder why」

Once she was aware, she can feel the weak stimulation stronger. Even if it was the same caress, it's greater than how she satisfied herself up until now. Then, she got aroused again. Then, it was interesting to see Lululie gradually getting in disorder.

「...Ah...n...ua...ah...」

Even though I'm just stroking her pussy a bit strong from the top of her pussy, Lululie can't stop the sweet voice from her mouth. I observe her from down looking up.

When the skirt comes down, Lululie lifts it again, when she tries to back off her waist, I threaten her. Then, the sticky sensitive place is tormented.

I repeated it endlessly, one hour has passed and Lululie is now completely in heat.

「Naa...ah...aaah...hyaaa...haa... Haa...haa..., you're still going to touch me?」

「What's wrong? You're at your limit already? Are your feelings are just to that extent?」



Lululie breathes heavily with her half open mouth. It seems that she hadn't noticed the saliva hanging down from her mouth. Her beautiful blue eyes have lost its focus, she's looking above like she's having a feverish dream. The beautiful face has completely turned to a charmed woman's face, it was dyed in embarrassment more than expected.

Of course the below is flodding. The love nectar blowing a tide didn't just make the underwear wet, the stocking in her thighs are also drenched, furthermore, it's dripping on the floor. I can see her clitoris erect on top of the underwear, her pussy is perfectly loose, fluffy and piping hot.

And the arm supporting the skirt is already tired and approaching the limit. But, Lululuie doesn't give up.

「N-No. I can still do it. I'll do my best...」

「I see. But, tell me before you reach your limit. You're going to hold out until you fall」

I continued to caress her while saying that. Her pussy is done that it doesn't need stimulation anymore so I'm going to exploit other parts of her. While I rub her thighs, I made my tongue crawl on her pointed elf ears.<sup>3</sup> Pushing aside the leaf colored hair makes her elf ear come out, I dropped her from behind to not let her ear run away from my lip. Chasing it, I put my tongue on her ears. Getting tickled by the licking , Lululie's body trembled.

「Nnn~~~!!」

「You get aroused on your ear?」

「I don't know. This is the first time...naaah~!」

A woman in heat seems to feel it anywhere in her body. For her to be

this sensitive, Lululie still haven't reached climax yet. It's my fault for stopping when she's about to cum. The apined expression of hers displayed at that time is irresistible.

Then, after her lust piling up, Lululie's whole body has changed into an erogenous zone now. Making her learn the pleasure after touching, if I repeat it, it would be Pavlov's dog training.

First would be the quite good sensitivity of her ears. I blew a breath and licked it again. Even Lululie is confused from the sensation due to inexperience, the nerves are definitely transmitting pleasure. Not knowing if its pleasure or something different, the brain of Lululie in heat definitely accepted it as pleasure. To prove that, embarrassment comes out of Lululie's face as she get's further charmed. When I stop stimulating her when her body begins to tremble, words leaked out from Lululie.

「Ah...don't stop...」

She said it unconsciously perhaps. She looked at me with sad eyes, it turned into panic immediately.

「Ah, no...that...that's not it...」

It's not known how many times it stopped before climax. So she can't help but feel quite unsatisfied. Luulie wants to cum. But I don't allow her. I want to bully Lululie more.

「It felt good didn't it? Then don't mind it. Hora, I'll continue」

「...Ahn~!」

Next I grabbed her small ass and massaged it. I trained Lululie in such

condition for another hour. 4

「P-please spare me already... My arms are on their limit...」5

Lululie's arm that tucks the skirt all this time is already at its limit. Groping her whole body, her beautiful maid clothes are exposed to her shoulder6 Her face is wet with tears. I haven't touched her chest and lips yet. I've stimulated her crotch on top of her underwear but I haven't touched the skin yet. That said, Lululie's body want to cum so much it can't help but feel hot.

It's about time for her to cum, I decided to make her cum as she wished.

「Then, this is the last. Do your best」

Saying that, I moved my face below the tucked up skirt.

「W-what are you going to do?」

「It's your reward for enduring up until now」

Looking at her embarrassing place closely, Lululie writhed in shame again. But, it is she who lifted her skirt and displayed her underwear. No matter how shameful it is, Lululie has no choice but to accept.

Putting my face close, the scent of a mellow woman stimulates my nose. The source of that scent is the wet white lace underwear in front of my eyes. It's too erotic for a girl that's just growing up but it mysteriously suits Lululie. Inhaling the fragrant female scent deeply, I sucked the panties.

「Naaaaa!!」

Jururururu, I sucked in the love nectar, I licked her pussy from the cloth. The salty and the sweet honey taste spreads in my mouth. As I enjoy it, I stimulate her clitoris that's sticks on her.

「Ah...Aaa! No~...it's too strong! Aaaa...Aaaaaa!!」

The in heat body of Lululie is reaching climax from the cunnilingus on top of her panties. While feeling her twitching becoming more violent, I stick and lick her flattery flesh. Sucking it feels good it seems, Lululie shook her waist. I hold the small waist and continued.

「Aaaaaa! Amazing.....Nuu!! My body is hot, no, don't stop!!」

Lululie's body trembles. Not just from the stimulation on her vagina, her body writhes from the chained lust collected in her body.

Then, she reached her limit immediately.

「Naaaaaa!! Hyaaa!! ...N!! ...Haua...aaaaaaa!!」

Lululie's whole body convulsed and she reached climax. Even if she desperately hold her sweet voice, she can't hide the trembling of her body that's like it was shocked electrically. Her waist trembles, her pussy is forced hard on my face. While her love nectar is overflowing from her underwear, I didn't mind and continued my cunnilingus.

「Aaa, not right now! Please stop! Again...nnnnnnnn!!」

Lululie's body trembled bit by bit again. The wave of climax seems to have attacked her constantly.

Furthermore, I still suck her clitoris. It's making a sucking sound, I played it with my tongue, bit it sweetly.

「Hahii...flying...n...hyaaaaaaaa!!」

The pent up desire was released in a flash and Lululie was swallowed on the waves of pleasure. It's a very long climax. Still, Lululie didn't drop her skirt.<sup>7</sup> As long as Lululie doesn't drop it, I won't stop cunnilingus.

I sucked Lululie's pussy all this time while she was being attacked by climax. Her beautiful lace underwear was sticky with her love nectar and saliva, it now sticks to Lululie's genital. I kept licking it like a dog, stimulating it all the time.

「Ah, nn...ha...fu, hafuu...」

Lululie's gasping voice reached my ear. She's not speaking a word since earlier, I'm not sure whether she's still conscious. Even in this situation, this beautiful maid didn't let go of the skirt. Maybe that's how important Seria is.

I've continued cunnilingus for 10 minutes but Lululie hadn't given up. Her foot becomes loose and she nearly fall from her knees but she never released her hand. In the end, I'm the one who gave up first.

---

1. 目尻に涙を浮かべて羞恥に耐えるその顔も、華奢な体で精一杯無理をするその姿も、主の身代わりになろうとするその心も、その全てが美しく輝いて見えた。←

2. I'm grinning like crazy while typing this line ↵
3. Fucking yes! ↵
4. Bruh, that's a bad case of Priapism, you need to see a doctor ↵
5. Wow, two hours of holding your skirt midair ↵
5. 体中をまさぐられて、綺麗なメイド服は肩まではだけた状態。↵
7. Good girl ↵

## Chapter 60: Lululie's first time ##

「Okay, you can lower your hand. You did well」

「Ye...s...」

When Lululie released the hand that's holding her skirt this whole time, she fell towards me. I catch her and checked her state immediately.

She's conscious but she's tired. She really overdid it.

「Lululie, are you okay?」

「Haa...haa..., yes, I'm fine」

Her voice doesn't sound okay at all.

It seems that she's unable to stand since a while ago. Hugging her from the back, I mad her sit down on Seria's bed.

Seria's having a strange smile in sleep, I chased her on the edge of the bed.

「It's not yet the real thing」

「Yes, please do me as you like. N...」

I took her soft lips from behind. I pecked and kissed her a lot. Her soft lips jiggled, I pushed my tongue in, Lululie doesn't dislike it and responed. While exchanging saliva though tongue, we exchanged a deep kiss.

At the same time, I groped Lululie's delicate body. The small breast of Lululie I hadn't touched yet. I gently caressed it on top of her clothes.

「Nn! ...Nu...」

Her body jumped up. She had a different reaction when she was sleeping before.

I didn't mind it and caressed her on top of the maid clothes.

The size of Lululie's breast fits to my entire hand. It's no doubt that it's smaller than the standard. But, I know that it's filled with Lululie's condensed love more than anyone. It musn't be despised even though it's small.

I knead it with my palm, enjoying the feeling of her breast. It's small yet it's soft and elastic, the tip is hard, telling that that she's aroused. The heat which welled up from the caress a while ago seems to be still remain in her chest.

I slowly separate my mouth and Lululie's eyes are wavering.

「What's wrong?」

「That..., my chest is small so it's not interesting to touch...」

It seems that she's uneasy from her small chest complex. There's no doubt because she's been sending fluttering glances on the breast of Seria who is sleeping like a log. It's the worst comparison to her.

「Could you show it to me?」

「...Okay」

Lululie put her hand on her clothes when I asked her. Unbuttoning her clothes that's a bit stretched, she slowly opened. The white and smooth



skin had a small swell in display.

I moved next to Lululie to see it carefully.

Though she's embarrassed, Lululie didn't stop her hands. Contrary to earlier, her clothes are opened slowly to tease me.

'Just a bit more, just a bit more', as I stare at her fixatedly, Lululie looked at my face in a moment and embarrassingly removed her hand from her clothes.

Her white shirt fell off quickly and her small chest is revealed.

The size of Lululie's breast is modest but the overall shape swells out well. Her nipples and areola are colored beautiful pink and the small hill is vividly colored. It's a waste to have it just be called small chest, it's a beautiful balanced breast. It seems that Lululie self-asserts too much that turned her into modest.

「It's beautiful, Lululie. Don't worry about the size. You're beautiful enough as you are now」

「Thank you very much...nchuu...」

I draw Lululie's small body close while we exchanged a kiss again. I'll personally enjoy this small chest. I fit it in my hand and massaged it, the feeling is quite good. I massaged it in a circular motion, pushing it, raising it, I tried various ways, searching for Lululie's reaction.

I thought that she's used to it because she's usually going bust up and massage herself regularly but instead she's a sensitive one. I sweet sigh leaks whenever I move my finger. I haven't rubbed to squeeze it in particular, I made the scarce meat assemble, voice leaks out from the mouth stacked. I want to massage it like this forever.

I gently pinched her nipple and her body had jumped greatly. I roll over my finger and her body shivers like it's being shocked by electric current. Seria and Lululie, both of them are sensitive with their breasts.

When I separate our mouths, her gasping voice grows larger.

「Nah~...Han~... Please don't play with my breast too much. Ahn~! I'm going crazy」

Lululie petitioned with a keen expression. Showing that face makes me want to tease you more.

「Your nipples seems to be sensitive. Did you play with it everyday?」

「When you touch my breasts, nn...I can't endure it no matter what... Hyan!」

「I see, then I'll tease you more」

Burying my face on Lululie's chest, I held her beautiful nipple in my mouth. Sucking it, I bent her body for her chest to stand out. Holding her body with both of my hands, her small bust were clutched.

「N...Ha...a...ahn...ha...」

Like a vampire sucking a virgin's blood, I accepted Lululie's passivity. Her body lost power from the sweet pleasure.

Naturally, no matter how much I suck it it won't produce breastmilk but it still had a sweet taste. I rolled my tongue on her sensitive nipples, her entire breast was licked evenly. While defiling the two hills with my saliva, I suck it with my lips and carve a red mark. When I separate my mouth while sucking, it trembled like a jelly even though it's small. I confirmed the softness with the tip of my tongue again and I thoroughly enjoyed all of it.

Brining my ear close, I can hear her heart thumping from her thin chest.

Even though she's being raped, Lululie's heart has a gentle warm beat. It seems that her feelings and curiosity are relieved. Looking at Lululie's face, I can see that she's feeling good.

「You look happy. Do you love being touched by that much?」

「Yes. Also, I'm glad that you're pleased with my breasts」

Saying that, Lululie glanced on my crotch understanding that I'm erect.

It seems that Lululie's small chest complex is quite substantial. She might've thought that nobody would take notice such a chest. As expected it's no good looking at Seria's chest. Lululie should learn that she has a different charm from that outrageous tits.

「You humble yourself too much. You're beautiful so be more confident.」

「...Err, that...thank you very much」

Using it mostly for chopping<sup>1</sup>, Lululie had embarrassment wrapped in her face again. That naïve reaction is lovely. If it was Seria or Matifa, they'd send a cold gaze and return a jeer. That's good on it's own.

Thinking that it should be fine by now, I put my hand on her skirt. After stroking her thighs, I gently patted the area of her womb in the abdomen.

「I'll touch you」

Did she guess the intention already? Lululie nodded silently.

I made my hand slip on her underwear through her stomach. Her soft

fluffy pubic hair and her drenched pussy. I gently stroke it.

「Hau...u, n...na...」

Unable to resist the feeling, voice leaked out from Lululie. I wriggle and coil my finger around her twitching petal. When I rubbed there, a stimulation different from earlier attacked her body. Lululie's hot genital has its sensitivity after being touched. The viscous sticky love nectar overflows from deep and soiled my finger.

「Ha...fuu...unn...」

I slowly caressed Lululie to not make her cum and I enjoyed her breasts again.

There was no composure left for Lululie anymore. I teasingly stimulate her as she wants to cum but I don't let her, her body shivers as she leaks out a gasping voice. The lust must've collected inside her body again. It itches so much that it can't be helped.

I inserted a finger on Lululie's vagina. The entrance easily accepted the foreign body and in fact it sticks so fast that it doesn't want to let go

「Aaa...something, entered. ...Nuu!」

「It's just a finger. If it hurts then tell me」

「It doesn't...hurt. Hauu...But, it's too slow...ah...」

Lululie indirectly told me that she wants more stimulation. Similarly, her vaginal folds twines my finger as if pleading, it's squeaking, tightening, pleading for it. Her waist raised to push against my hand.

The desperate looking Lululie can't hold back her arousal. 'More, more, tease more, tease more', I want to see more of the bewitched Lululie.

Being careful not to damage her hymen, I slowly piston my finger. I intentionally avoid her sensitive part and I train her vagina to be accustomed from the foreign object. Lululie's face became stiff from the foreign object going deeper. Closing to her face to distract her through kiss, I met eyes with Lululie. I stared at her pupil that's in heat enough that it's likely to show a heart mark. Then, Lululie coiled her arms on my neck and kissed me on her own.

「...nchu...rero...chun...」

Lululie sticks her mouth desperately. Perhaps her reason starts to melt too. It's painful for her that it can't be helped.

She thrust her tongue hard and invaded my mouth. Twining her tongue and taking away the saliva, still, she kept on sucking as it wasn't enough. She wants it soon, she begs as she wants it to be inserted sooner.

I took off my clothes while exchanging a kiss with Lululie. Half naked, Lululie who saw my skin now sucks the chest. While making a kiss mark, her thin fingers stroke my muscles. After she was satisfied, she stick her tongue out and licked my body. The stimulation that runs through isn't bad at all.

While combing her leaf colored hair, I asked Lululie.

「Do you love muscles?」

「...Yes, I'm fond of sturdy ones. N...but, a big one, is scary...han~!」

Lululie's saying that she likes about this much. Though I'm surprised for her muscle fetish, it's cute so it's fine.

I'll let her touch it until she's satisfied while I fiddle with her pussy. Breathing heavily, Lululie grappled in ecstasy. Pressing her small chest, the obscenity of her breathing out a sweet breath is irresistible. I'm already at my limit.

「Lululie, I'm about to go it. What position do you want?」

Saying that, Lululie showed a color of delight.

「Ah...in front, please. Please embrace me in your arms like yesterday」

「Got it」

I put down Lululie on the bed and took off my pants. The rock hard erect penis has come into Lululie's view. Of course, it's still wrapped in pink ribbon. Then Lululie asked when she saw it.

「That ribbon is—」

「I'll tell you, it's not my hobby. It's a cursed ribbon that Seria applied so I can't rape. I can't take it off by myself. That's why, if Lululie doesn't want it, I have no choice but to stop, what would you do?」

That was a nasty question. With the body feeling hot and reason melting, It's impossible for Lululie to refuse as she was waiting for the moment it goes inside her.

Sure enough, Lululie shook her head and answered.

「Please don't stop... Please make me cum with your sturdy dick」

My penis elevated further hearing those words. Even after seeing my penis increase in ferociousness, Lululie didn't change and looked at me with greedy eyes. If I leave her alone, she'd put it in on her own.

I might try to take off the ribbon in this case but as expected, it didn't come loose. The condition of loving each other doesn't seem to be met.

「I'll make you cum lots and pregnant. Would you bear my child?」

「...yes」

Lululie nodded though she hesitated.

I turned up Lululie's skirt, removed her panties and left it on the other leg. Opening her legs wrapped in garterbelt stockings, a beautiful intimate place comes into view. From the hollow of the roof of her thighs opened wide and the swelling of her pubis, I feel a touch of Eros.<sup>2</sup> A thin flattery flesh and petal at the center, under it is a light colored anus that shuts tightly comes into view.

Inside her slit is a pink colored small meat that greedily sticks while drooling. Above it is an erect clitoris that only shows up her foreskin.

I applied my glans there and it got wet eventually.

「Naa...please don't tease me...」

Lululie begged as she can't bear the stimulation from making contact with the mucous membrane. She's been teased completely that she can't endure it anymore.

Lululie showing me this erotic makes me reach my limit. While I adjust my waist position, I covered Lululie.

I embraced the half naked Lululie and I pushed in my waist a bit. I pushed open her unused hole buried the tip then it was covered with a

pleasurable heat.

「nuu!」

Lululie leaks out a small groan. Having a penis that's bigger than a finger spread her entrance is a bit painful. At the same time, her body that's driven into climax several times is rampaging from expecting pleasure and began to convulse.

But the pain has just began.

「Lululie, I'll take your first time」

「Yes...Ahn...please, take it...nnn~!!」

Lululie gave permission without hesitation.

It's unexpected that this would really be her first experience. But, if it's for Seria that's important for her, she's going to accept it.

Before I take her virginity, I whispered to Lululie's ear.

「The meal you made was delicious. I'm thankful that you nursed me. I want to stay with you forever if possible. —I love you, Luluie. Best regards from now on」

「What do you—Naaaaaa!!」

I just said what I want to and thrust my waist. I just want to make a lover and have my confession accepted.

Tearing off her hymen, I go forward her narrow vagina. I went through the tightening vagina of hers and I thrust in my penis until I reached her womb inside.



「Naaaaaa!! Nhaaa, !! Naaaaaa!!」

At the same time Lululie lost her virginity, her back curved and she convulsed intensely. Feeling pleasure from her first time having man's penis penetrate her, that's how much her lust is piled up, Lululie was swallowed in the sea of climax once again.

While shouting a pleasant cry, Lululie's arm went out of order. While taking in my thing again, her body had bent back and forth and trembled again and again.

「Aaaa! Amazing...ngu, my body is going crazy! Naa...I can't stop this!」

Her vagina tries to squeeze out my semen intensely. It's tightening my rod that even if I don't move it still feels good. I can ejaculate with this alone.

I hugged Lululie tightly to suppress my raging waist.

Then, Lululie put her hands on my back. She dig in her claws to endure the climax, my back feels painful but I accepted it without complains.

「Naa...A, my head is breaking, I can't think of anything else...Ah...this is my first time...Aaa!!」

She reached climax higher than the cunnilingus before. It's something that she can't feel from the usual masturbation.

Lululie's intoxicated in pleasure shows a charmed face.

「...Ren-san...ren-san!!」

「What is it?」

「Aah, Ren-san...nchu.....」

She kissed me as soon as she saw my face. In response to the joyous face, I accepted it.

Twining her tongue and clinging makes Lululie look like a lonely child and it's cute. I patted Lululie's head until she settled down.

---

1. ほぼ当てるだけのチョップをしたら ←
2. 大きく開かれた太もも付け根の窪みと恥骨の膨らみから、そこはかかないエロスを感  
じる。←

## Chapter 61: Lululie's first time Part 2 ##

Patting her head while we're connected for a while, Lululie's climax has finally settled. I decided to separate our mouths.

「Puhaa...A, I.... Sorry, Nm I came first...」

Lululie who came back to her senses apologized.

「It's fine. Rather than that, how was your loss of virginity? It doesn't hurt anymore?」

「Yes. It feels extremely good, what is what...」

Saying that, Lululie glanced at the belly I'm going through right now.

「Ah...it's in... Ren-san's, inside me...」

Since her consciousness was blown away when inserting, she finally realized it this late. Her vagina shuts in cutely, it's transmitting a pleasant feeling.

「I'm moving」

「Yes, Please. ...Na!」

I puled my penis out slowly, Lululie bent with just that. She just came so she's still sensitive I guess.

When I'm about to pull it all out, I slowly pushed in. She was a virgin

just a while ago so I finish it with inserting gently. I have to properly loosen her.

Stirring her vagina, blood and love nectar from the inside mixed and overflowed. That's quite a ratio of juice being mixed.

「Ah...nu...n, n...na!」

Whenever I rub her vaginal wall, A seeminly pleased panting voice leaks out from Lululie's mouth. Lululie's panting voice is as clear as a bell, hearing it pleases me. Having her purr with a caress is fine but making her cry with my penis es exceptional.

Her vagina shuts my penis moderately and strokes it. Especially the feeling of the entrance sucking my glans is irresistible.

「Ua...n...ahn, ah!」

It's good that Lululie doesn't feel pain. It's no mistake that she's a virgin but, the pleasure seems to win over the pain. She clings into me, making our skins touch as she feels pleasure.

Her entrance is loose and I deepen the insertion little by little. I move my waist in a relaxed manner to not burden her too much. Still, was it enough for Lululie? Her body began to twitch again.

「Lululie, does it feel good?」

「Ah...yes, it's hot deep inside my stomach...n...I'm cumming again」

「Very well. I'm going do make you cum as much as you like」

「Ah...I'm cumming. Nnnn...If you're so gentle then I'm going to cum right away...naaaa! Ren-san...nuuu...」

It seems that Lululie is enjoying her first sexual intercourse. The appearance of her clinging into me and calling out my name is irresistible.

Normally I would've done it on a high speed piston without mercy but I thought of doing Lululie gently, as expected she wants to devote herself to me. We kissed multiple times to confirm our feelings.

Then, her vagina got loose in the middle and Lululie began to writhe intensely further.

「na...hau! N...that place, ah...ah...aa!」

「You like it here?」

「Un...Yes, when you rub it there, it's like an electric shock...nah!」

I seem to have found out her G-spot. When I rub the heavens with my glans, her vagina sticks and an electric shock runs through my crotch. The feeling of ejaculation rises fast.

Lululie unable to bear it clings into my arm. She's on the verge of cumming I guess.

「You're about to cum again. Don't endure it」

「Yes, ah...naaaaaa!!」

Whenever I rub the G-spot with my glans Lululie's convulsions grow more violent that her eyes aren't focused anymore. Her entrance shuts tight and her entire vagina is sticking intensely. The pleasure is too much that my waist is coming off, Lululie seems to received climax a bit earlier while I rub.

「ua...ah, cuming,! I'm cumming again!」

「Then cum! Cum from my penis!」

「Ahii...cumming, n,! Ren-san's penis, again! Nnnnn!!!!」

Her body jumped up. Sticking out her small chest, Lululie's body shakes as she reached the climax. Her body that's completely in heat to the core seems to have been swallowed in pleasure easily. For her to cum this easy, this is fun on itself.

Feeling joyous pleasure from my penis, I endured as I can't ejaculate yet. I want to pour on the deepest, on her womb directly first.

Though I want to move there immediately, but thinking that her first experience of orgasm attack be painful, I restrained myself.

I bury my face on her silky leaf colored hair to calm down. Taking a deep breath, I smelled the forest.

Lululie anxiously asked as I endure ejaculating.

「Ah...I'm sorry, I did it earlier again... Does my body not feel good?」

「What's wrong? Asking me that suddenly」

「Somehow, I'm the only one cumming...as expected I don't feel good...」

It seems that she's anxious as I don't cum.

「It feels really good so don't worry. You can't understand from the penis trembling inside you?」

「N...dokun, dokun, it's throbbing」

「That's the proof. Honestly, just being connected can already make me release it. But I'm going to release it on the deepest part」

「...Okay」

It seems that Lululie isn't confident yet. I should better change the subject.

「Rather than that, are you already used to sex?」

「Yes.... But I'm scared that I might go crazy. ...Can you embrace me harder?」

Lululie looked at me with pleading eyes. What's this? It's fucking cute!

「Very well. I'll embrace you more! We'll never separate anymore!」

「Yes...Ah, it got bigger again! Au...a!!」

Lululie's words were interrupted by the resume of piston.

Her vagina is almost loose. Finding the remainder, I nailed in my waist

「Nah~!... It's deeper than earlier!」

「I'm about to reach your deepest place. It may be tiring but do your best」

「Yes, Ah! ...Nn, Aaa!」

Lululie must be tired from the long caress and cumming twice after she lost her virginity. Still, she doesn't look like she doesn't want it. Once I decided to carry it out, my will won't waver anymore. Spreading her legs wide, I thrust my penis with my best on the thin waist.

As I endure the rise of the urge to ejaculate, I aimed to the deepest part of Lululie and made my glans ran in to the wall. At the same time, Luluie's body jumped up. It seems that I've reached her uterus.

「Lululie, can you feel it? It's your baby room」

「Naa...Yes, it's making a knocking sound, Ah, It's tingling」

「I'll firmly develop this place. Afterwards, I'll release a lot of semen」

「Ah, yes, please, give your semen in my stomach」

Saying that, Lululie surrendered herself.

Pushing against my penis, it stimulated her womb. \

Unable to endure the stimulation, Lululie's body writhed.

「Ah...na...ah...kun...ua...」

Lovely voice leaked out from Lululie's mouth.

「Lululie, how's it? It doesn't hurt?」

「I don't know. My insides are so hot, painful... I want more」

「What? You want me to be intense?」

「Yes~! more, stronger」

Lululie finally began to beg. It seems that she's not satisfied from climaxing again and again from weak stimulation At any rate I can finally move to satisfy myself.

Thrusting my waist strongly, Lululie shouted.

「Hyaaaaa!!」



Lululie's body is filled with sweat. Then I suddenly thrust in my waist harder continuously.

「Naaaaah! Amazing, it's amazing!! Aaa!!」

「Lululie likes it this way?」

「I love both! ...Ahn, but, I'm going to cum instantly with this. Aaa!!」

「Me too, I'm about to cum. Let's cum together. 」

「Ah! Yes! At the same time! Naah!!」

Love nectar is overflowing from the connecting part, it helps me move well. Piercing the interior of Lululie's stomach, her face looks like charmed again. Her womb must've ached all this time. Pushing my glans strongly, her uterus seems to stick to it.

I make a fast piston to ejaculate. The vagina that got loose feels great that you'd never think it was a virgin hole. It shuts tightly yet the soft folds are twining with the penis as if it's melting it.

「Lululie, your insides are the best! I'm going to cum soon. I'm going to cum inside your vagina!」

「Nnn...! I feel good too... You can let it out anytime...」

I bang Lululie's waist while we're embracing each other.

Lululie holds my penis to the root, the pleasure thrust her womb.

We no longer have room to spare. I did my last spurt.

「Naaa! Too intense...! Aaa... I'm about to...naaa...cumming, cumming, cumming, cumming, cumming!!」

「Haahaa, cumming, Lululie, cumming!」

Embracing Lululie tightly, I thrust my waist deeply that we can't move in this state. I'm also the same as I've piled it up from the caress. My penis want to release the semen sooner. Sticking my penis on the deepest place of Lululie, I push against her aroused womb. Her vaginal opening, is tightening the root, the moment the vagina surge violently to squeeze out my semen, I reached my limit.

「Cumming!!」

——Byurururururu Dopyu dopyu.

A large amount of semen overflowed. The concentrated semen that was endured all this time made a mess of Lululie's womb.

「Naaaa! Hot! Something hot is coming in. 」 Inside my stomach...A, aaa!! ...What's this!? It's strange...Ren-san, my body, Cumming, I'm, cumming!!...naaaaaaaaaa!」

Accepting the semen with her womb, Lululie climaxed intensely. Her thin foot made a point and her whole body is convulsing. Opening and closing her mouth, she raised a sweet voice that's not a scream. Pleasure and astonishment were mixed in her eyes.

Her vagina surged intensely and squeezed my sperm. While pouring additional semen, Lululie's waist gladly trembled. It seems that my ejaculation is going endlessly.

I pulled out my penis after the last drop inside, then my muddy semen has overflowed from her vaginal entrance. It has some red blood mixed in too.

Lululie who had her first experience lies down on the bed tired. Her charmed face looks satisfied, it wasn't my misunderstanding. Putting my hand on Lululie's abdomen, I gently rubbed her stomach from the top of her maid clothes. Her appearance is of a pregnant woman.

「How was your first sex? You look awfully happy. 」

「...I never knew that sex feels this pleasant. It's strange. My stomach is happy and my head is feeling light. It was painful my body being filled in...」

Lululie's voice seems to be genuinely happy.

「I'm just saying this but though you said that you're satisfied, the man who deceived you came inside you, are you fine with that?」

「It's fine. Didn't I tell you? I love you. There's no woman who wouldn't feel glad being held by the person she loves」

What a wonderful thing to say. Did my gained favorability still remain? Or is she trying to draw my attention?...

Well, I don't think Lululie has an ulterior motive. I have sex with Seria who has a cute face but I don't need to worry about Lululie.

「Okay, second round then. We're changing positions」

「Nn...Yes」

Afterwards, Lululie fainted when I came inside for the second time. It seems that she reached her limit after the long caress and continuous play. While I came one time, she had cum a lot of times.

Lululie is too lovely that I got enthusiastic carelessly. I must reflect on this.

Looking at the after math, Seria's bed is drenched with the mix of love nectar and semen, there are traces of blood in places. Luulie who has her crotch filled with semen and love nectar, Seria on her side is sleeping happily.

Now then, what to do?



## Chapter 62: Attacking the sleeping princess Seria #

It's my slave's turn at such time so I immediately called Matifa and made her clean up. While we're at it, let's have her take care of the fainted Lululie. Since a follow up service is necessary, it's perfect. She's really a convenient woman.

While cleaning things up, Matifa speaks out her complains.

「I was worried about you and this maid but who would've thought that this would happen. She's pitiable., I sympathize with this child」

「You're saying that but actually you're happy that you have a new friend? Your burden now decreased」

「Fun! You should consider the feelings of your partner more. The curse applied to you isn't as gentle as you think. Do you know why it didn't activate? There's no way you don't. don't you?」

Matifa says angrily but I honestly don't know. The conditions I heard are only consent and no children. The consent is a bit ambiguous, like the forceful method of whipping Cathy, thinking that there's no problem after I whip, I thought that it's not that intense.

Dispelling it is the most difficult.

「Even if you say that. I have 2 wins and 4 loss so I thought it's a bit loose I guess?」

「2 wins 4 loss? Do you have two other partners I don't know of? furthermore, you had sex with one?」

「That's right」

「Still, you make move on women? Really, what a cruel man. If not for the slave contract, I would've stabbed you from your back」

「Don't say something scary. ...But, oh well, it might happen one day. But, don't tell Seria about it」

「I won't. It's not for me to tell her. ...Haa, why is a man like this my master?」

Matifa shook her head in displeasure. You should stop acting like an old man.

「That's fine with me. Rather than that, tell me the state of the castle while I was down. Did you investigate properly?」

「Of course. I can't decline Misha's request. The details are written on paper, these are the two big projects. Which would you like to hear? Bothersome or annoying news?」

I don't want to hear both but I might as well. Rather, it would only end there.

「Then, the bothersome first」

「The bothersome one is Radom. You know that Radom is planning a coup d'état? The date is already decided. It's one month after today」

「That's too early. Why?」

Radom seems to decide the match. Though the success is likely to be decided with the Will Gantt house's military power but, do you think it would go that easily?

Just how many people would be killed before you think of stopping? ... It's depressing just thinking about it.

However, I just can't leave it alone. I have to throwback my debt at Radom after all.

「Think before you act. The only one I will defend are Seria and Ortiz. Also, it's difficult to do protracted war in state of isolation」<sup>1</sup>

「Why? Didn't you say before that you'd protect me and Seria?」

「After that fight, my magic weakened. Despite what I expected from old days, I'm afraid to be lured.<sup>2</sup> That's why don't rely on me too much」

It probably means that the power of the incarnation has weakened. Isn't that fine? Matifa doesn't mind it that much, she's just telling the fact.

「Then, the other thing?」

「The other thing is about that maid. Trovas and his company are desperate in capturing her. She's okay inside the castle but dangerous outside. Do something about it」

It must be related to the remodeled beast men I guess. What do they plan after capturing Lululie? If it's something erotic, I won't let them.

「You know the reason?」

「Making her a hostage for Seria and to obtain clues about you I guess. It's the same whatever you think. Take care so she won't be kidnapped. It would be tragic if she's made a hostage by Trovas」

She's saying that it's tragic if Seria and Lululie got included. I won't let that.

「Got it. Thanks for your advice」

「Fun, if you get it then get dressed already. I'm going back. I still have

to make this child rest」

Saying that, Matifa, carried Lululie.

It was after she cleaned her body and put on the clothes carefully.

「Somehow, I had you take care of her. Don't don't do strange things to Lululie」

「I'm not you. I won't forcibly do naughty things with anyone anymore. I'm not you okay!」

She said it twice like it's important. Aren't you the one who made Misha suffer and endure a lot of things?

It seems that Matifa reflects on her acts when she's standing near a victim. I did a nice thing.

「Then, I'll leave Lululie to you. If she woke up, tell her that I'm sorry that we're not together」

「That's fine but...what are you intending to do approaching Seria?」

Matifa asked with a twitching face. It seems that she understands what I'm trying to do.

「No, I just thought of testing out how powerful this cure is. I'll harass her incidentally」

「No way, you're going to attack her while she's sleeping!? You're really the worst man! You just had your lover and you're not even thinking that you're cheating on her!?」



Matifa's words pierced. But, there's a line I won't allow.

「Of course I thought of it. But, I already decided to not let go of Seria. That's why this is my duty. Isn't it rude to Seria if I didn't put my hands on other women?」3

Matifa was left speechless after hearing my answer. She already know that I'm this kind of man.

「Yes okay, I'll leave it as that. Really, there's no meaning on the curse if it's like that. It got worse instead. 」

「It's because she didn't use a slave collar. Well, if that happened, I would have master to dispel it quickly」

「It's ineffective to use slave collar for someone with no magic like you. ...Haa, I don't want to be involved here so I'm going back」

After saying 'See ya', Matifa held Lululie and returned.

With this there's only one sleeping prey on the room.

I pulled her cheek to make sure that she's really sleeping from the start. It's as soft as mochi, it's extends with a muyon sfx. It's a very foolish look but she didn't wake up. It seems that she was forced to sleep with magic or something else.

It's a great change to test this curse. I won't let this go.

With this, I can do her even with the curse.

As for Seria, I can rub her and tighten my penis on her breast but the real thing is impossible. On the other hand, I can't sexually harass Matifa.

Misha and Lilith are the same just rubbing their ass turns them to gorilla.

Perhaps the later three are caught in the age limit. That's why it's possible to sexually harass Matifa on her adult appearance.

The problem isn't just on sexual harassment. My future tormenting will change because of this.

I must first try to dispel this curse. Seria said that she could take off the ribbon. Then it should be removed by the hands of sleeping Seria.

Thinking that, I had her small hand pull out my penis but the penis didn't loosen. As expected it's not that naïve.

I'll try sleeping fellatio next. When I placed my penis on Seria's small mouth, she turned to a gorilla. It seems that this isn't good too.

I waited for her to return.

If penis is no good, what about mouth? Thinking that, I kissed her and it seems to be possible. There's no problem even I put in my tongue. Incidentally, there's no reaction from Seria. It's a bit empty.

If there's no problem putting my mouth and tongue, if it's not my penis then there's no problem?

It's easy to confirm. I should ask the mouth below.

Slipping on her legs, I removed her panties and put my mouth on the familiar pussy. I paint saliva on her small meat asking for a reaction. The penis tightening is painful but she didn't become a gorilla. It seems that it's fine as long as it's not a penis, then there's no problem to this degree.

While we're at it, I wet my finger with my saliva and thrust it inside the sleeping Seria's vagina.

「nu...」

There's no sign of Seria waking up. The curse doesn't change and kept on tightening. It should be fine.

Then, there was a slight reaction from Seria's body. Her vagina has been tinged with a bit of moisture. Her body reacts even while sleeping.

This is interesting. I might exploit her instead of sex every night.

But, as expected she would be very angry being attacked while sleeping...what should I do after binding?4

For the time being , I'll do as I like without worry today.

While licking and fingering her labia, lewd juice dripped out from the inside. As always, she's a princess that easily gets wet. Even if she said that she doesn't want to have sex, it won't have persuasive power.

「Naa...uu...」

A seductive sigh leaks out from Seria's mouth. Though she's sleeping, she seems to feel aroused properly.

I continued without minding it, then her clitoris got hard. I stimulated the foreskin with my tongue and it got harder.

「ua...un...」

Seria seems to feel good even when sleeping.

I continued the cunnilingus like forever and Seria's vagina began to tremble. It seems that she's able to cum even while sleeping.

Then, an idea appeared on my head.

Releasing my mouth, I moved to Seria's ear. My hand continues to

move.

「Seria, you fell in love love with Ren Kirishima. You fell in love with Ren Kirishima. You fell in love with Ren Kirishima. You desperately want sex. You desperately desperately want sex. Seria came to love penis...—」

「Uun...noo...munyamunya」

I kept whispering the same words like a broken machine on her ear. It's something called suggesting or hypnotic training. I don't know whether this has an effect but after seeing Seria making a noise like she's having a nightmare already makes a value as a revenge.

Then, when I was playing.

「Are you an idiot?」

「Owa!」

Matifa appeared behind suddenly.

「Don't surprise me Matifa」

「It's foolish for you to not notice me」

「Stupid, didn't your presence grow weaker than before? You seriously hid yourself」

「Of course. My magic evolves everyday. Soon, I'd be able to arrive at the essence of your ability」

Matifa proudly said that. Even I who has the ability don't know the essence of ability so I can understand why she's proud. As expected of a 1489 year old woman. I'll have her teach me that.

「What's your business this time?」

「I brought the findings I told you earlier. Don't do too much foolish things, look at that and do your work quickly」

Matifa threw out a bunch of paper and disappeared. I really can't grasp her presence. Isn't that cool?

I drive away Matifa from my head for the time being and I wait and see Seria again.

「Uun...n...」

Seria doesn't wake up even she looks like she's having a nightmare. 'Well, it's fine if she woke up', I resumed my hand.

A obscene wet sound echoes in the quiet room. I continued my brainwashing strategy like praying a chant, Seria has begun to tremble at last. My finger was tightened.

「Nkuu...un...ah!」

Her body trembled, Seria received orgasm more obedient than usual. There's still no problem with the curse.

If there's no problem making her cum with a caress, then there's plenty of things to do. If Seria is the one wishing for it, I can make her cum anywhere and everywhere.

I sat astride Seria to comfort my penis while having such a delusion.

I sandwiched my dick in between Seria's selfish breast and moved my

waist back and forth.

The curse hadn't activated in particular. Or rather, it's tightening moderately and it feels good.

Being wrapped in a soft warm feeling of her chest, my penis got full erect. Still, for Seria's breast to wrap all of it is really wonderful.

This is something I definitely can't do in front of Lululie. She'd surely cry.

The feeling of her breast is the best but the mood won't turn because it's after I did Lululie. I'm somewhat guilty, or rather I'm feeling guilty. There's also what Matifa said. But, that's that, this' this so I continued after making that clear. I won't give Seria up, I decided to make her the main harem member.

I used Seria's body without permission, 'Uun, Uun' she groaned. Her sleeping face is lovely too. I move my waist earnestly to dump my cloudy liquid there. As I massage her breast meat with both of my hands, my penis is squeezed. Taking the opportunity, I stir up her nipples.

「Ah~ Seria's paizuri is the best. It makes me want to release semen on your face at once」

「U...n...」

I drove off my worldly thoughts and concentrated on the sleeping girl in front of me.

I feel aroused as I treat the sleeping girl like a toy. A girl being defiled by an unknown man. Her body was exploited before she knows it, I want to see her appearance being gradually turning lewder and have confused look as her body is getting drowned in pleasure.

I'm sure that Seria's heart won't break with that, her body is honest. She

became a sensitive princess quickly Just imagining that makes the sperm rise up. Thinking that Seria's body came in public by being groped even she doesn't like it, I shoot out my semen on that face.

I defiled Seria's happy sleeping face and breast with my semen and I smeared the remaining from my urethra on her cheek. It's thinner than usual but it can't be helped.

I'm sure that she'd be surprised when she wake up. It's your punishment for putting such a strange curse on me. Realize that.

---

1. それも孤立状態になれば持久戦は難しい」←
2. 昔から望んでいたこととは言え、いざなってみると不安なんだ。←
3. 他に女がいるから手を出さないなんてしてたら、それこそSerialに失礼だろ？」←
4. でも流石に寝てるところ起こされたらマジ切れしないだろうか？ .....縛ってからすればいいか。←
5. おっぱいの感触は最高なのだが、Lululieといたしたあとなので今一調子が出ない。←

## Chapter 63: Lululie is slightly strange

Next morning, I thought about Lululie on the way sending the children to the orphanage.

We did it on the momentum yesterday but was that really okay?

In the first place, I could never have a lover. Because I'm a criminal. Women come to me for money, power or revenge purposes.

Then, which is Lululie?

Thinking that, the three would apply. In short, Lululie is filled with ulterior motives.

I derived it as so but I might be mistaken.

I don't think she'd threaten only for money and power, the choice of being a lover came out of her head. That's why, Lululie saying that she wants to become lovers caused disturbance.

Still, I thought of using Lululie to threaten Seria but It's entangled anyway.

Was I caught? I don't know.

Lover?

「...Isa...oni...n, Onii-san!」

I came to my senses when my sleeve was pulled.

「Oh, sorry, sorry. What is it, Lilith?」

「We already arrived. What's wrong? You're absentminded」

「Ah—, I'm just thinking about something」



Perhaps because I was thinking while walking, I didn't notice that we arrived at the orphanage. I must get my grip because I'm a bodyguard.

「Onii-san, are you okay? Do you still feel bad? Or is it because of the curse?」

Lilith asked anxiously.

「It's not that so don't worry. I was just thinking of the schedule after this」

「Is that so? Then okay...」

It seems that I convinced Lilith somehow. Thinking what happened, Misha has come to help.

「Lilith-chi, there's no problem. He's just thinking about sex」

「Thinking about sex? to me?」

As expected, it's lewd pink. You're the one thinking about sex.

「No. Since this place is filled with children, he's imagining a little girl harem」<sup>1</sup>

「I don't!」

A light sound of 'Supa—n' echoed in the orphanage this morning.



After sending the children, I went to receive Misha's clothes I requested before. I never forgot it. I was busy so I put it off.

The clothing shop I'm going at is lying deep in the back alley and is doing business quietly. Because it's main visitors are those like me.

As long as you have money, any kind of dress can be made. Not just customized spy clothes but also perverted underwear and cosplay costumes. Cathy's suit was also made here.

A young woman with thick heavy makeup is the one managing it. Her real name is unknown and she's referred to as 'Madam'

When I opened the door, Madam looked at me with suspicious eyes.

「Welcome. A-class head-san」

「Please stop calling me that. What would you do if someone heard that?」

Madam knows that I'm the assassin in the rumors. She's an underground person after all.

「Have some restraint with yourself. I've heard rumors about you here and there」

Saying that, Madam took out the wanted poster sticking on the wall.

「I heard that you infiltrated the castle. You did well coming back alive.」

「It's an easy thing for me. Rather than that, have you finished what I requested?」

「It's already done. But I won't give it that easily. You, do you intend to involve a child in a dangerous thing?」

‘A child’ must be Misha. Since she came with me when I ordered it before, Madam knows.

「She's far stronger than me. That's why you should stop complaining and give it to me already」

「She might be stronger but that's not the problem. You don't think that it's bad dragging such a child in this road?」

She's really troublesome. Misha is already dragged in before she's with me. Rather, I'm the one scooped in.

「I don't need your preaching. Just give it already」

‘Hurry up’, as I demand her, Madam sighed.

「There's still one thing. Is it true that you're living with Lululie?」

「Why do you know that?」

Cathy is the only one that should know it. Why did such an information leak in here?

「It's easy. There's a rumor that Lululie begin to keep a trash man with no magic. There's a useless man that's loitering on the city during daytime. Furthermore, there's an evidence that he took a dark-elf woman during daytime. That's you and Cathy」

That's definitely me. But, why does Madam know such rumors?

「Hey, where did you hear that from? And do you know Lululie?」

「The royal castle is my dear customer. King's clothing or the Queen's dress, even the maid's lace underwear. I'm allowed to sell a lot of things. I occasionally meet with Lululie. I taught her how to make clothes」

「Then you heard the rumor in the castle?」

「That's right. The hardworking Lululie having a man. But they're having an opinion that the lover is such a pimp guy so she's pitiful」

What the hell. Was I well known in the castle? It's only a matter of time before they know that I'm the assassin. Especially that Lion is suspecting me so I must make countermeasures.

「Well, don't worry too much. Even it's a rumor, it's only on those maids that like love stories. The aristocrats doesn't seem to listen to that kind of story」

「I can't be that optimistic. But, thanks for the information」

「Then, how far have you done with Lululie?」

Madam sticks out her body asking that. This is a serious face. She wants the juicy story.

「That doesn't matter. Aside from that, give me the clothes already」

「That's suspicious... You already have Cathy and a cute slave and you even laid your hand on Lululie?」

She asked with a frightful spirit.

I've already laid my hands on the princess, the witch, Lululie and her sister—I can't say that.

「That, what...that doesn't matter anyway! Just give me the clothes already」

「That's no good. Cathy is another case but Lululie is really a good girl.<sup>2</sup> I won't forgive you if you make her cry」

「Ugu...No, you see...」

I'm embarrassed to reply, Madam's face turned even more grim. Before long, she begin to shoot out an intimidating aura.

「Tell it. What's your relationship with that child?」

The thick make up looks like Hannya<sup>3</sup> It seems that I can never return if I don't answer. She's not someone that would make a lie pass either. I have no choice but to give up here.

「That...you see, for we're...lovers, that's how it is」

When I whispered it, Madam opened her eyes wide in surprise.

「Lover!? Then the rumors were true then?」

「No, we just became yesterday so the rumors are wrong. Also I'm reluctant because of the circumstances of my work.<sup>4</sup> That's why stop with your strange suspicions」

「Saying that as an excuse makes it look like that Lululie is just being

played with. You will die alone」

The moment she said that, my head received an impact and my vision blurred. I was lying on the floor when I noticed it.

It seems that Madam beat me up. I really didn't notice it at all.

「What the hell are you doing to your guest?」

「I chose my guest. You hear? Luluie is a normal girl unknown to conflicts. Furthermore, she's looking after her little sister, she's a good girl that works from morning to night. If that girl turned unhappy. Even if Luluie forgives you I won't!」

「Who the hell would make her unhappy! I'm her lover just right now. Don't underestimate me!」

I instinctively shouted. Taken aback, she shut her mouth.

Madam looked down on me in an disgusted manner.

「Then let's start from the beginning. Hey, this are your ordered goods. Get it and go out already」

Then, I was kicked out.



In the end, night came without me understanding what happened in morning.

I went to the plaza and faced the gate to wait for meet with Luluie.

Lululie worked her usual maid job during daytime. I occasionally looked around the surroundings absentmindedly, acting suspiciously but it's not to the degree that it would influence work either. It seems that Matifa did a good follow-up.

I thought of greeting her but in the end I didn't talk to her.

It's because I don't know what lovers should speak about.

But, I can't abandon the guard duty.

Just what kind of face does she see in me?

Lover? or is it a Criminal?...

While I was worrying, Lululie came out of the castle gate.

...Well, can't we do it like always

「Y-Yo. Good work」

「Yes. Thank you. Should we go back?」

I greeted her clumsily and Lululie returned like it's nothing. We even did that much yesterday but she's like the usual as if she forgot about it.

When I thought it was strange, my hand was wrapped in warmth. When I looked at it, I can see Lululie's hand.

Furthermore, not the usual hand pattern, it's a lover hold where the finger twines. Lululie bashfully averted her face.

What's this? What does this mean? My heart throbs so hard!?

We walked in the town of the night without conversations.

For some reason Lululie doesn't look straight to my face. I know that it's unnecessary but strangely she does. I don't know what Lululie is thinking. However, I can't keep quiet.

「Ah—, that...what? Sorry that I left you yesterday. Is there any problems with your body?」

I was able to speak somehow while scratching my cheek.

Did Lululie loosen after seeing my foolish appearance? She answered bashfully.

「Yes. I was allowed to rest peacefully in Matifa-sama's place. Was Rensan hurt today?」

「I'm fine. I didn't fight anything today」

「Then that's good」

It's strange. I can't see Lululie disliking me. Knowing my true identity should make me an enemy of women.

Yet, I don't feel disgust towards me from Lululie. Even though she showed so much hostility when she doubted Lion...why?

「H-Hey. Why can you make that kind of face? Did you forget what I told you yesterday?」

「No, I remember everything precisely」

「Then」

「It's fine. I decided. I will be your ally and your lover no matter what. That's why please be at ease. 」

...Lululie is really strange.

In the end, we reached the house without knowing what Lululie is thinking about. There were presence of remodeled beast men along the



way but the traffic wasn't interrupted and they disappeared when we arrived at the house. I examined the surroundings just in case but they disappeared. It seems that they returned.

Coming back home, Lululie happily talked with the children as they haven't met for several days.

「Onee-chan look, look. Mi-chan's new clothes was brought in」

「Ehehe」

Misha is wearing a sleeveless hooded sweatshirt and miniskirt with a casual appearance. It seems that she immediately wore the clothes I received from Madam's store.

She's wearing casual clothes right now and the clothes for spy work is for the next time.

Misha turns around cheerfully and show off the clothes to Lululie.

「It suits you well. But, I haven't seen this design before...」

Lululie observes Misha curiously. Seeing that, Lululie intervened.

「Can onee-chan understand it's cuteness?」

It's a pure question.

But, that was too much.

Lululie asked back, pulling the discomfort on her face.

「What do you mean by that Lilith?」

「Because Onee-chan likes disgusting things」6

Air froze and a ping was heard.

「Lilith, should we talk inside my room for a moment?」

「Wait, wait, that place is no good. I'm going crazy!」

「Lilithu?」

Lilith waved her hand in rejection and Lululie cornered her with just her eyes.

As usual, I don't know whether these sisters are getting along or not.

The tag of two people fell when Lilith used Misha as a shield.

「Give up, Lilith」

「Noooo! In the first place, does onee-chan understand the goodness of this clothes?」

Lilith pushed Misha's back and showed it off to Lululie.

Luluie catches her breath for a moment and answered.

「I-I do That, what to day...its easy to move!」

Lululie, is that a praise?

「Look! You don't get it at all!」

「N-Not yet! The pocked is big so there's a lot of thing to enter, there's

also a hood so you won't have to worry about rain」

「.....Just that?」

「Ku...」

Lilith turned her seriously tired face on her elder sister.

It seems that Lululie can't understand the cuteness of Misha. That's regrettable.

「Even if you say that, it's my first time seeing it. This cloth was well done」

Lululie finally began to avert the topic. It seems that the sibling fight today is Lilith's win.

In exchange of Lilith making a winning pose, Misha answered the question.

「It's master's perverted hobby」

「Wait a minute, Misha. What do you mean by perverted?」

That's a cruel thing to say. Didn't I just reproduced a clothing according to Japan? What's wrong with dressing up your own slave?

「Pervert is a pervert. Because master was making a 1hour speech when this clothes were made」

「No no, I just explained the design of that cloth. Also it took some time because I'm not a pro. You get it?」

Hearing my excuse, Misha shook her head.

「Uun. Master is a pervert. That time you said 『If the armpit doesn't show up it's no good!』or『The length of the skirt must make a pantyshot』 or 『Hood for the cat-ears and miniskirt is needed for her cattail』you shouted. There's another—」

「Hey, don't say anything more than that. It's the truth but don't speak anymore」

「Got it」

Hearing my order, Misha finally shut her mouth. But, the elf-sisters have heard everything already.

Looking at them, Lilith run into me and followed-up.

「It's fine for me even Onii-san is a pervert! Also, Mi-chan's clothes are cute!」

「Lilith, I don't need that kind of follow up. But, I won't deny that Misha is cute」

「Un, Mi-chan is cute. That's why I want it too」

Lilith pleads with a wet lovely round eyes. The answer is obvious.

「Okay, I will. I'll prepare a cute clothes for Lilith so wait for it」

「Un!」

When I promised to give Lilith a dress as present, Misha muttered.

「Master is easy」

「Hey Misha. I ban you from talking too much unnecessary things」

「Misha doesn't know」

Misha looked the other way and feigned ignorance. This bitch7...

I seriously thought whether it was necessary to give a punishment to Misha but I heard a laughing voice from my back. Looking back, I saw Lululie laughing.

「Lululie what wrong?」

「No, I just thought that it's fine even Ren-san is a pervert」

「Hey, what are you saying Lululie?」

「Because, I finally was able to see the usual you」

Lululie laughed while saying that. Furthermore, it's not just Lululie but Misha and Lilith too.

「Onii-san was absent minded since this morning」

「Un, his thoughts of sex grows bigger」

Could it be that these guys are worrying about me?

I thought that they're just as usual but it seems that I'm acting strange.

「...Okay, Misha won't have a side dish for breakfast tomorrow」

「!? Master, that's no good. Misha's cool master won't do that」

「Since I'll make Lilith's clothes this time so put it on」

「!? I-I don't need! I don't need those waste of clothes!」

Lululie, are you okay with that?

---

1. POLICE! WE HAVE A Lolicon HERE! ←
2. Yes, she's a good girl that loves the MC no matter what he is ←
3. Horned demoness ←
4. それにこれは仕事の都合上仕方なくってのもあるんだよ。←
5. Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa! ←
5. EXPLOSION! ←
7. She's a cat yet a bitch ←

## Chapter 64: Seriously, Lululie is strange ##

The bath was warmed and I submerged my shoulder to heal my shoulder.

The bath after a tiring day is the best. 'Haaaaa', as I leak out my breath, my tiredness, even my motivation and soul is coming out. Ah, paradise, paradise...

While feeling absentminded, there's a presence appearing in front of the bathroom. I stood for an instant but removed my vigilance immediately. The source of the presence is someone I know.

Thinking what's wrong the door opened.

「Ren-san, can we go together?」1

「Of course」

Lululie appeared wearing nothing.

「I'm going to scrub your back」

「Oh, thanks」

I who decided that we take bath together had my back washed immediately.

Lululie gently scrubbing my body with a towel feels good.

「This wound...could this be from yesterday?」

Lululie noticed my injury while washing my back.

「Well, yeah. It happened last night」

「I'm sorry, I'm such... Does it hurt?」

「Don't mind a wound of this degree. Rather, it's an honor wound」

The wound on the back is a man's medal. That's why I told her that it doesn't need any treatment but Lululie said 'that's no good'.

Lululie traced the wound with her fingers and my back felt chilly.

「Even if you're used to it, a wound is still a wound. There's no way it doesn't hurt...」<sup>2</sup>

Lululie muttered.

「...Lululie?」

「No, nothing. Rather than that, I'm going to wash your back faster」

Lululie began to wash my body again to distract me.

「You seem used to it. You do this on your work?」

「Yes, recently the princess washes herself but before I'm the one washing her」

Though Lululie washes my body with experienced hand, I think the distance is awfully short Especially her chest and thighs are hitting my body. Or rather she's intentionally rubbing it. The service is very splendid.

「That princess having too much free time must be great」<sup>3</sup>



「That's true. When washing, she's disregarding hot water<sup>4</sup> It's quite mischievous」

That spectacle is easily imaginable. Seria can't probably mimic a squirt gun so she probably scoops the water and splashing it. While intensely shaking that outrageous breast...

「That's, how should I say it...unfortunate」

「Ah, you imagined something strange didn't you?」

Lululie sharply pointed out. Is this women's intuition?

「No. Nothing, nothing」

「Is that so? Then I'll believe you」

She had withdrawn when I declined. In a way her mood is bad.

「Next would be your front then」

「Yeah, thanks」

Without hesitation, Lululie went into my front. Various places has come into view. Thinking that, even my son got energetic.

「Fufu, this one is naughty too」

Luluie pokes my penis with the tip of her finger.

「It can't be helped. Can you clean it?」

「Yes, of course」

Saying that, Lululie caught my penis and move her grasp up and down. It seems that she's going to service it properly.

I thought that it's her first handjob but she had quite a good power adjustment.

「Ah, it feels good. Still, you're quite assertive」

「I'm your lover after all」

Lululie emphasizes the word as if she's hinting or something. As expected, I still don't understand what she thinks.

「I agreed on it yesterday but I really don't understand it. Why are you doing that much?」

「It's because I want to do it. Or is it that you hate such a woman?」

Lululie asks from between my legs. If you're asking whether I like or hate you then the answer is obvious.

「I love it. Do it more」

「Understood」

Her hand moved faster. The feeling of the bubble making a pleasant lubricant is great. I might cum immediately.

Looking at Lululie, she's staring at the erect penis with an entranced

face. Her breathing turned feverish somehow.

「What's wrong with you staring at my penis so much? You want it inside?」

「Eh, ah...yes. That...it itches a bit...」

Lululie answered hesitantly while scrubbing her thighs. That gesture is too erotic that I can't resist.

「Then let's confirm it」

「Ah, wait—hyaa!」

I stretched my hand on the trembling groins of Lululie, I felt it slippery even without water nor bubbles. It seems that she's wet.

「What, did you get wet from the handjob? Were you really that glad from yesterday's sex?」

「N...because, it's my first time cumming until I lost consciousness...I won't forget something that amazing...ah」

Lululie seems to be feeling good while I caress her pussy. It seems that she's completely addicted to the pleasure of sex. Well, she went mad cumming. I'll paint her without rushing.

I stopped the handjob for a moment and had Lululie stand up. Then, I rub her ass from the back.

「Ah...nn...」

「Should we wash here this time?」

Saying that, I rub my penis on her drenched pussy.

「Yes, please. Please do what you want with my body」

Saying that, Lululie opened her legs and thrust out her ass. In addition, her flattery flesh is opened and on display. The honey dropping from her petal is really lewd.

「Lululie!」5

Unable to resist, I put my tip, and thrust in my penis.

「Naaaa! Ren-san's penis, inside me again!」

「Haha, aren't you drenched till the inside? You really wanted this so much?」

I barely touched Lululie yet she's already wet to the depths. My penis is held with quite good resistance and it tightens moderately.

「ah...because...this, feels really good. I'm just glad that there's someone like me can accept love, Ahn~!」

As usual Lululie is saying something masochistic, I gave her a piston.

The folds twining every time I move feels good. The handjob from a while ago seems to be far away.

「Are you still saying that. You are, without a doubt a beautiful and a good woman. This breast, pussy, all of it are mine so don't say 'Someone Like me」

I fiddled with Lululie's small breast and clitoris from the back while speaking.

As I massage hold her small breast, when I crushed the foreskin on her bean, her vagina shut tightly.

「AUaa...ah, ah, that's too strong! My voice will leak out, nnnn!!」

Lululie is gasping hard from feeling good but since there are two children sleeping on the second floor, she can't let out her voice.

I won't be troubled at all even if they wake up but it would be unpleasant to Lululie. She desperately holds her voice.

「Sorry, I won't go easy. It's your fault for having such a good body」

「Nah...that's...but...」

「No buts. You tempted me. I'm going to violate you until you become sloppy like yesterday」

「Ah...yes...I'm glad」

Gyuuu, her vagina tightens around my penis. The hot folds holding my penis and my waist that's about to melt feels really good.

Lululie had an enchanted face and she happily shake her waist. Lululie's inclined to be an M too.

I understood from the various stuff we did yesterday, Lululie prefers to be done a bit forcibly. It's said that she's wishing for it to be stronger.

That's why I nailed my waist according to my desires.

Bangbang, the sound of meat banging each other.

「Ah...un...ah, ah...nu...」

Matching the wave of the small ass, lovely voice leaks out from Lululie's mouth.

Her vagina twitches, it's rejoicing from the stimulation.

My penis is on the verge of exploding. I accelerated my waist further to finish it.

「Haahaa, Lululie, I'm about to cum. I'm going to release it inside your vagina」

「Ah, ah, ah, ah, ah! ...inside, nuu, please!」

Lululie pleads while feeling good as her vagina is being stirred up. It's telling my penis that it's about to cum.

We might as well cum together.

Thinking that, I peeled her clitoris and rubbed it with my finger.

With just that, Lululie's body jumped greatly and bubbles clinging on her body scattered.

「Aaaaaaaaaaaaa!! you can't do that! I'm cumming!  
Cummingcummmiiiiing!」

「Uoooooooo, it's tightening!!」

Her vagina constricts my penis, it's sucking strongly. The swelling folds

follow my sensitive glans and stroked it.

「Kuuu, no good! Cumming!」

Receiving such a sudden violent stimulation, my penis rages. Then, the tip overflowed with semen.

The unexpected accidental discharge didn't stop. While striking my waist, I poured semen inside her vagina.

「Fuaaaa!! Something hot, is coming out, inside my stromach, ah, Aaaaaaa!!」

Lululie climaxed at the same time. Her body convulsed violently as she shake her waist.

Was it from the surprise attack on the clitoris? Her eyes opened wide in surprise.

Finally when I strongly poked and inserted, after Lululie's body leaping out, her body lost strength.

When I thought I overdid it, warm liquid poured down over my hand when I fiddled with her clitoris. Looking at it, golden water had been leaking out from Lululie's crotch.

「Ah...I-I'm sorry. I...can't stop...no...embarrassing... Uuuu」

Lululie who noticed herself peeing covered her face with both hands and began to weep

Lululie that cries while peeing looks good too...

「If it felt good then it's normal for it to leak out. I overdid it. This is a bathroom so don't worry about it」

「But...I...might be hated for doing this...」

Lululie looks so innocent. Showing me that face makes me want to torment you more.

「I won't hate you with this so don't worry. Apart from that, let's continue」

「Eh...Ah...」

It seems that Lululie has noticed that my son that remain connected at her got hard again.

I renewed my piston while her pussy is being muddied by semen and pee.

「Ahn, Nn...again, the penis is, nah!」

Lululie's pussy made a lewd sound again.

Lululie who just came screamed as she's sensitive.

「P-please wait, naaah! At least let me wash it with water!」

「Not needed. Get used to it already because this thing will enter you」

「That's my ass!」

Playing with her anus makes her pussy tight. It seems that exploiting this would be fun.



Getting caught up with the moment as I piston, Lululie already got drowned in pleasure.



「Sorry about earlier. I overdid it」

「Ah...no, it's fine. It felt good for me too」

I soaked in the bathtub while hugging Lululie from the back. My penis is inserted and her small chest is being played with.

I came inside Lululie three times until I was satisfied just like yesterday, after we washed each other's body again we used the bathtub. But, my penis reacts by all means when there's a woman body close. Then, Lululie who noticed my penis hitting her ass, she inserted it by herself.

Then, she slowly moved her waist and we immersed ourselves in pleasure.

「Really, it's not my duty to say it but you're really erotic」

「N...do you hate lewd women?」

「I love it so don't worry. I'm going to massage this chest everyday and pour enough semen in your womb too. You won't have time to think about masturbating」

「Yes. It's a promise」

「Yeah, I promise you」

When I make a perverted promise with this lewd elf, Lululie faced my way.

「I'm sorry about yesterday. I lost consciousness...ahn~」

「No no, I'm reflecting as it was my bad for doing it forcefully. Lululie doesn't have to worry about it」

「But it wasn't enough didn't it? After that you played with the princess」

Oh my. She knows.

「T-that was, you see, how should I say it, it's my revenge on this curse. Also for me to do nothing as she sleeps defenselessly is...」

As I mumble my excuse, Lululie smiled.

「It's not that I'm angry. I just thought that the princess is really better than me」

「No, that's not true. The correct answer is I love you both. There's no way Lululie is inferior to Seria」

「Fufu, thank you very much」

Saying that, Lululie laughs masochistically. Her face doesn't believe that she can win against Seria.

「You don't believe me. Your minus is your masochistic tendencies. It's good that you're modest but don't become a masochist. Have some confidence in yourself」

「You saying that doesn't make it convincing but...that's true. I must have confidence as a woman」

Saying that, Lululie strokes her stomach adorably. I really don't get it.

「I asked you yesterday but what's so good about me? I deceived and threatened you. You don't feel grudge against me?」

「I don't feel any grudge. I want you to not lay down your hands on the princess but I don't have complains on the other things. Having sex with me makes me happy」

Saying that, Lululie really had a joyous face. I instinctively faltered.

「I-I see. Yup, got it」

Seriously, Lululie is strange.

- 
1. Kyaaaaa, Luluie is so devoted ←
  2. Then why did you ask? ←
  3. 「あのお姫様は自由過ぎて大変だろ」←
  4. 洗ってたらお湯かけてきたりしてきましたよ。←
  5. LULUIE! ←
  5. MEGUMIN! ←

## Chapter 65: Seria's punishment #

Midnight, I came to Seria's room as usual.

The norm today is to make her cum 10 times with her breast. In addition, I'm not just going to exploit Seria's sensitive breast but I will remind her of my terror.

...That was the plan.

「Hey, Seria! What's with this barrier!」

「Fufuun, how's it? I did my best learning it so I won't be attacked by you. Isn't it amazing?」

Seria sticks out her chest.

Even though her breasts shakes in front of me, I can't touch it as the unseen wall is stopping me. This is just torture!

「Hey what's your plan! Do you think I'd forgive you for doing this?」

「Who's the unforgivable here!? Attacking a sleeping person, there's a limit for irrationality. I was really surprised when I woke up!」

「It's your fault for having such a defenseless and slutty face while sleeping! It's a problem if I don't attack you」

「I don't have a slutty face!」

She did, then Seria ignored me and lied down on the bed. Then, she let out half of her face and said.

「Anyway, you're forbidden to approach me. If you want to, then sign

this pledge1」

Saying that, Seria pointed to the written pledge that I can't do sexual mischief. Don't joke with me.

「Who the hell would sign that thing! Hurry up and remove this barrier! Or you're going to experience worse」

「If you can then do it. I'm not scared at you who's cursed. Then, good night」

Leaving that, Seria turned her back and slept.

No matter how I struggle the barrier won't be torn off, I can enter with teleportation but it still needs a day recovery.

I literally wasn't able to do anything.

「Dammit, how should I...That's right!」

I came up with a nice idea. If I can't tear it off then I should just bring those who can.

Thinking that, I moved to Matifa's room.

「Hey, why are you spreading out your barrier!?!」

「.....」

Surprisingly, Matifa is also sleeping with a barrier on.

It seems that the slave doesn't want to accept the order of her master. Just how far will you defy me?

「Remember this! You'll definitely regret this!」

In the end, I break away without being able to do anything.



Then, the next day, I sneaked inside Seria's room for revenge.

The me today is different. I'm on stealth mode with my invisible gentleman tie.

Of course, I'm wearing nothing but the necktie. It's a wonderful sense of freedom.

...But, there was a preceding visitor today.

「Seria, we should stop Radom nii-san's violence! It's unforgivable to instigate coup d'état!」

It's the second prince Desire speaking in front of Seria that's studying in her desk. Though he's saying something reasonable, it's just wrong for the person who instigate itself is speaking.

Naturally, Seria doesn't yield to the invitation.

「Nii-sama, please don't tell me that but father. Also, if you gathered hard evidence properly then a proper action would be done. At least, I don't have a problem with my elder brother. Also, you're hindering my study. Please leave」

Seria refuses Desire's proposal with a resolute manner.

Does she not want to hear it from her foolish brother, it's rare for Seria to ooze out an angry voice.

But, it didn't seem to reach Desire and he continued his childish appeal. He's really a clown.

That farce is a trivial thing for me so I approached Seria from behind.

Seria is desperate to drive away the hindrance, she won't notice me who's creeping up to her.

Usually, I restrain myself when there's a visitor but I won't allow it today. I'll never allow it.

Then, I grabbed her breast from behind mercilessly.

「Nii-sama should hurry up and get oUUt!」

Seria jumped and looked around. But she can't find me today.

I massage and stroke her soft breast without mercy.

Guessing what's going on with Seria, She squat and hid her breast so Desire won't see it.

「What's wrong, Seria? Does your stomach hurt?」

「Y-yes. I don't feel good for a moment. That's why nii-sama should hurry up and go backyaaa」

「Uun, it can't be helped then. Though you're my sister, I must be kind to a lady. I'll come back again. Think about what I told you earlier」

If it was me, I would've tormented her mercilessly but it seems that Desire doesn't have such hobby. He went out quickly.

Though he has good points on some places he's just a foolish man.

Seria silently sent off desire and then she made an uproar energetically.

「This is Ren-san! Even I don't see you I know from the dirty way you're using your hand! What are you doing with people in here? Stop it , hyaaaaa!!」

Seria grabbed my unseen hand but when I pinched her nipples, she lost power in her hands.

She's really a breast weak princess.

「You did well finding me out Seria. I came here to punish you today. I'll do this until you remove the curse so prepare yourself!」

「Ah, hau, hii! Wait, stop this! don't pull my breasts!」

I embraced her from the rear and locked Seria's body. The nice aroma from her loosely wavy hair drifts.

Seria wriggles to struggle for a while then it gradually weakened. A sweet sigh leaks from her mouth and I entrusted her to a chair as she's tired.

「Hey, Hey! How's it Seria? I guess it feels good since your nipples are standing?」

「N, there's no way. ah, I'm feeling good. That's the truth!」

「Then it's alright for me to be even more violent」

「Wai, noo, fuaaaaaaaaa!!」

Seriously tormenting her for a moment, Seria raised her jaw as she



began to feel it. If it comes to this, it's my win.

「What's wrong? You won't resist?」

「Hyaa, it's no-ahn~! No, stop this!」

「What should I do?~」

「Please stop this! I'm going to get angrrrrrrrrrry!」

「What? I didn't hear it well」

I thrust my hand on the dress and massaged her breasts. I pulled out her nipples and Seria can't speak anymore. Her body just kept on twitching.

「Hey, hey! it's just your breast and you're going to cum already?」

「Hauu, not my nipples. Cumming! I'm cumming!」

Seria's saying no yet you don't resist in particular. As she rubs her thighs, my hand reached out there. She's a complete prisoner of pleasure.

「Seria, it's about time you'd want a penis right? If you remove the curse it would feel even better~」

「No way. If I remove that, ah, you'd attack another woman I don't know don't you? uun, I decided to leave your hand from Lululie or other women. That's why it's absolutely no good」

I already did though.

「I see. Then, I'm going to massage you all day long until yo desire for a

penis. I can insert it anytime. 』

「Ich...! Wai, noo, you can't do that, aaaaaaa!」

「Oh, you already came once?」

Seria's body trembled finely. It seems that she came lightly. It's an attraction when you see it in here.<sup>2</sup>

「Hauu...I'll never allow you anymore! I'll curse you for the rest of your life...hyowa, wait, wait before you massage my cheeeest!」

「No way」

I ignored Seria's plea and I continued massaging her breast afterwards.



「Haa, haa...Aghn, Hahii, uu...na!」

「Hey, you should just give up and have a penis insert inside you. 』

Seria has already climaxed 9 times.

She's intoxicated in pleasure that she can't resist anymore. In contrary, she thrust in her hand on her skirt and she's making a lewd sound as a result.

I thought that she should just obediently accept me rather than doing it by herself but she stubbornly refused my penis.

Seria's a foolish child that spoiled when climax approaches. That's why I thought of doing it during the confusion but it wasn't that easy.

I tried it several times but the hindrance of the curse is strong.

Just what kind of play you do by masturbating and making me endure by just watching? I'm not fond of being teased.

I was thinking of how to vent out the raging of my lower half, the door of the room was knocked.

「Princess, It's Lululie. Excuse me」

「Hahii! Wai, wait a minute!」

Seria stopped her hand from masturbating and corrected her disordered clothes in panic. She brushed off my hand and her exposed breast has been stored in her dress.

「You, you can resist normally. As expected, the refusing is just from your mouth?」

「You should shut up. Lululie would notice」3

Seria suppressed me without denying or objecting my question.

At the same time, the room of the door opened and Lululie carrying cleaning supply went in.

「Oh my? Princess, your face is red. Are you feeling feverish?」

「W-welcome, Lululie. It's nothing. It's just that the room is a bit hot」

「Is that so? Certainly, it's warm today...」

「Also, recently the movement of my body has become dull」

「Haa」

Lululie inclined her head but she can't be too idle. She began to work like she was told.

Seria thought that she deceived her well, she breathed out and pretended to study.

But, I won't allow it. Rather, I'm a man who gets excited when seen. I began to massage Seria's breasts again.

「Ahn~!」

「Is there something wrong?」

Lululie turned back when she heard a sweet voice leak out from Seria's mouth. But what's there is Seria looking down with her body trembling.

Seria gripped my hand hard and spoke.

「I-It's nothing. Please don't worry about me」

「Is that so? ...Understood」

Though Lululie resumed her work silently, her elf ears moves searching around. Even if she's told not to worry, she still curious as expected.

I continued massaging her breast without minding and Seria began to speak with a low voice.

「Stop this already. You'll be exposed」4

「At that time, your foolishness will too. If you want to cum in front of the whole country, then try it」

「There's no way—Hyaa! Hauun, nnnn!!」

「There's no way what? Look, Lululie is looking this way. Do you want to

cum in front of your close friend?」

Seria trembles on her desk as with her unseen face.

She's excreting effort to not let out her voice to not be noticed by Lululie but it was futile effort.

Lululie noticed the voice and her expression turned complex.

「Princess, if you're not feeling well then please take a rest on the bed. Since it's bad to raise dust, I'll postpone today's cleaning」

「T-That's right. I should do it—」

Then, Seria stopped speaking.

She's worried about the place around her ass.

Thinking what's wrong, she noticed that there's a huge stain on her dress even she's still sitting. With this, she can't get up anymore.

「Princess?」

Lululie felt suspicious from the sudden silence.

Seria forcibly smiled and answered.

「I-I'm okay, I'm okay so! It's notghiiinng! Itsh nyothing!」

I rolled her nipples in high-speed, matching her speech, she fumbled interestingly.

Her cheeks twitched and it's transmitted that she's quite angry.

Still, Seria doesn't move as she's being seen by Lululie.

In short, I can do all I want right now.

I'll make her cum.

I'm going to make Lululie see Seria's cumming face by all means. Let's do that, that's good.

I stopped playing with Seria and seriously caressed her tits.

My hand felt the usual sweaty skin and the softness of her breast meat. I moved my finger and her body trembled.

If I get serious Seria would cum immediately, she'd expose her embarrassing cumming face.

But, that's not enough.

There's a spectator today. I must do my best to make the best disordered show.

I concentrated my nerves on the tip of my finger. 5

If it's the usual, I'll ignore this trivial information but I gathered it without anything to spare.

The disturbance in her breathing and blood flow, muscle contraction and movement of the magical power.

I perceive and analyze them all, comprehend, and exposed the hidden pleasure nerve in her ripe bust.

「Na! What!? Hyaa! Aaah!」

There's an illusion of the hand and the breast becoming one together.

How should I move my finger? How strong should I do it? Those came up to my head naturally.

I moved my hand according to it.

Stirring up Seria's sensitivity, lewdly, obscenely, I massaged Seria's chest.

「Hyaaaau! Ah, fua, hyaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Even though she's being seen by Lululie, Seria raised her voice and goes mad.

She can't endure it no matter what.

Caressing her nerve directly sends pleasure without a pause so it can't be helped.

「Nooo~, Don't look! Hau! I don't want to be seen!」

She shook her head but her expression is only enchanted and there's no hate seen.

As I massage and scoop out her breast, the sensation is sharpened and it carved pleasure deeper and deeper.

Seria's body gradually convulsed. The numbness of pleasure is transmitted through my finger.

Lululie looked at Seria with an astonished expression.

It's her first time seeing Seria in agony I guess. Seria having a completely in heat expression is fucking lewd.

Swallowing saliva, she watched intently. As if Seria's lust is contagious, she began to touch her own chest.

「Princess...that's amazing...」

「Noo~ Aaaa! fuwaaaaaaa!!」

Seria lewdly opened her mouth and released a lovely voice in huge volume.

Seria's body is being done as my finger please. Having her cum, satisfying herself just like that, I can do that. 6

「Seria, this is the last. Cum loudly while Lululie is looking at you」

「Fuua, Hyaa! Ah, Ah, Aaaaaaa!」

Seria seems to be unable to understand speech. She's being played around with the surging pleasure, she doesn't even know what's happening to herself.

As I pick up her nipples, I grasped her breast with my finger deeply.

Condensing the erogenous zone of her breast, to finish it I pinched her nipples hard.

「Aaaaa, cumiiiiiiiiiiiiinggg!! Fuaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Seria reached climax with her body twitching and her jaw raising up.

Because she moved intensely, her breast had fallen from my hand and spilled out her dress. Without noticing that Lululuie saw her pink colored nipples sticking out, Seria's charmed face trembles in pleasure.

It's one of the best cum I've seen so far.

It seems that I've ascended the stairs. If this continues then aiming to be a breast master isn't that bad.

「Ah...un...」



Lululie who saw everything played with her feverish body.

Massaging her breast on top of her maid clothes, rubbing the broom handle that she brought against her groin.

It seems that watching the disordered Seria's appearance flipped her switch. Was the stimulation of Seria's climaxing show too strong for our masturbation lover elf maid?

But, I'm not satisfied yet.

Because I haven't ejaculated even once yet.

Also, it's against my principle to cherish only one. I must make Lululie feel good.

Even so, the real thing has just began. I don't want to reveal to Seria my relationship with Lululie yet.

Worrying what to do, Lululie came to her senses earlier than Seria.

「...Ha! I-I'm sorry princess. Since you don't feel well, I'll cancel today's cleaning」

Putting away her cleaning tools, Lululie starts to run away in order to get out of the room.

Then, she stopped before the door is opened and she spoke to someone.

「...Also, please do your pranks in moderation. If you want something just tell me anytime. I'm always ready for it」

It's probably a message for me. Even if she doesn't see me, she knows

that I'm the cause of Seria's disorder.

My feelings has decided after hearing those words.

Rushing to the Lululie that's about to go out, I whispered in her ear so Seria won't hear.

「I'm going to meet you after this business ends」

「Okay...nu...」

I sent off Lululie with a kiss.

Lululie left the room and Seria's body is trembling as she entrust herself to the desk. It seems that she's being attacked by the lingering of climax.

「Seria, Lululie went out already. You should get up already」

「.....That's the worst. Lululie saw me...uu...」

Seria muttered as I approach her.

「Isn't that fine? Don't mind that you're seen cumming. Even you saw Matifa and Misha cum and they saw you too」

「That's no good! Lululie doesn't know that you're here!? She'll definitely think of me as a perverted woman! I'm sure that she'd think of me a lewd slutty woman! I'm sure that Lululie doesn't want to meet me anymore! That's your fault! Fuwaaaaaan!!」

Seria puts her face down the desk and cries magnificently.

She thought she'd be hated by Lululie. Even though Luluie won't hate

Seria with just that.

But, Seria won't listen to whatever I say.

In the end, I gave up calming down the crying Seria and I made her cum lightly again so she can talk.

---

1. Yeah, sign a pledge on my patreon! ↔
2. この調子でどこまで持つのか見ものである。↔
3. That sounds like an NTR line! Seria stop stealing Lululie's boyfriend!  
Hahaha ↔
4. Because Seria cares ↔
5. The art of massaging breasts ↔
5. イカせることも、このままよがらせることも、どうだってできる。↔

